

NEW TESTAMENT

Revised Edition

E E CUNNINGTON

1935

Wipf and Stock Publishers

Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #61

THE NEW TESTAMENT (OR COVENANT)
OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST

Translated By: E E CUNNINGTON

1935 Original Publisher, **MARSHALL, MORGAN & SCOTT,LTD, London**

550 Pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers
1396 E. Washington Blvd.
Pasadena, CA, 91104
1-626-7 97-4756

Printer: James Baden
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-410-X

Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leeser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leeser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, “ ‘Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.’ ” “Therefore blessed be they,” the preface continues, “and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God’s book unto God’s people in a tongue which they understand?” And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge “that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance.”

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. *

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell
(Charter Member #12)

*additional versions supplied by:
Bill Chamberlain

Biographical Sketch of E. E. Cunningham

Edward Ernest Cunningham received his B. A. degree from Cambridge University in 1879 and his M. A. in 1883. He was ordained a deacon in the Anglican Church at Chester in 1879 and a priest at Liverpool (England) in 1880. He then served as minister in a number of English churches; (Everton, 1879-1881; Hants, 1881-1883; North Cadbury, 1883-1885; Dorset, 1886-1889; Tuckhill, 1890-1892; Much Wenlock, 1893-1898; and Llangarron, Herefordshire, 1898-1900). He served as Vicar at Llangarron from 1900 to 1921. He was listed in Crockford's Clerical Directory as recently as the 1948 edition, but not thereafter.

It appears that Cunningham was somewhat of a chess enthusiast also. He wrote several books on the subject, *Modern Chess Primer* (which went through at least thirteen editions), and *Chess Traps and Stratagems*.

Cunningham produced no fewer than five editions of his translation, each slightly revised over the previous. The first was a pocket-sized book (4 X 6 inches) titled *The New Covenant, Commonly called the New Testament of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. A Revision of the Version of A.D. 1611* (London, 1914). The cover and spine say *Cunningham's New Testament*. His aim, as stated in the Introduction, was "to give the contents of the sacred volume in such wording as, to the best of one's judgement, the writers might have used, had they written in the English of our own day."

A "Second Edition: Revised," larger than the first, is titled *The New Testament, Otherwise Called: the New Covenant of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ . . .* (London, 1919). The cover is stamped with the words *The Adelphi New Testament*, possibly because of the location of the publisher, which was at "Adelphi Terrace."

A third edition, bearing almost the same words on the title page, also contains the words *The Western New Testament* on the dust jacket and spine (London, 1926). In his Introduction Cunningham explains its aim: "This work is an attempt to give the English reader a version of the New Testament free from the irritating blunders in the English that disfigure the Revised Version of 1881; to translate rather than baldly to construe; and to make the contents more agreeable and intelligible reading than they have been; but neither paraphrasing, nor lowering the dignity of the original; in a word, to get smooth, clear, correct English." By this time Cunningham was living in Willsbridge, Bristol (England).

The Greek text used by Cunningham for his translations was Nestle's Resultant Greek Text. He was urged to undertake his translation by another translator, Samuel Lloyd (*Corrected English New Testament*). In fact, Lloyd credits Cunningham with taking a leading part in his own translation, "reading the whole work through with Dr. Nestle's Greek Text, and being consulted with regard to

every suggested emendation of the English . . .” He further notes that Cunningham had “a special aptitude for accurate expression in English.”

Another edition, with the same title but containing some revised readings, appeared in 1930.

Still another “Revised Edition,” with the same title, was issued in 1935, containing a sixteen-page section of “Selected ‘Western’ Readings” (Hence, his use of the alternate title *The Western New Testament*). The aim of this edition is stated at the close of the Introduction as “to produce without bias of any kind, in the interests of the general reader, a book which, while giving accurately and intelligently the meaning of the original, may be read not merely from a sense of duty but with the pleasure that good doctrine set out to correct English may be expected to give.” Stanley Nash compiled two pages of changes between the last two editions.

Cunningham’s remarks throughout his introductions show the disdain he felt for the translation efforts of those producing both the Authorized and the Revised Versions.

William E. Paul, Editor
Bible Editions & Versions

THE NEW TESTAMENT

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
(OR COVENANT)
OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR
JESUS CHRIST

TRANSLATED
BY THE
REV. E. E. CUNNINGTON, M.A.

REVISED EDITION

MARSHALL, MORGAN & SCOTT, LTD.
LONDON AND EDINBURGH
1933

(All rights reserved)

MADE AND PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY PURNELL AND SONS
FAULTON (SOMERSET) AND LONDON

INTRODUCTION

REASONS FOR THIS WORK

THE following version of the New Testament aims to supply the general reader with a rendering which, while faithful to its original and abreast with the knowledge of the day, shall present the words of evangelists and apostles in English as correct and clear as may be attained. No one acquainted with the subject will dispute that the Authorised Version can no longer be accepted as an adequate rendering. Had there been no actual defects, changes in the English language and our improved knowledge of the Greek text would render a corrected version desirable. To meet this want the Revised Version of 1881 was undertaken. Of that work¹ it is little to say that it has not closed the door upon other attempts. In these days books will not be read unless they are attractive and intelligible. There seems to be no good reason why the New Testament should not be, apart from the value of its contents, as readable a book as any other; the writers did not aim at what we call 'style,' but their language was correct and of a higher order than might be judged from the R.V. It would be difficult to name a finer piece of stately prose than the Epistle to the Hebrews.

ARRANGEMENT OF CONTENTS

The order of the books of the New Testament has been changed. St. Mark's Gospel, as the main source of the two that follow in this version, is placed first, its introductory words coming in most appropriately. St. Paul's epistles are arranged in the chronological order of the groups into which they fall. Shifting forward the epistle of St. Jude connects it with its natural companion, 2 St. Peter, allowing St. John's epistles to come into contact with the Revelation attributed to him.

¹ A very bad translation—ruthlessly perverts the English language [Dr. Rendel Harris, 'Sidelights on N.T. Research.'].

INTRODUCTION

GENERAL REMARKS

It is regrettable that 'Testament' has come into use instead of 'Covenant' as the title of this collection of writings, the former suggesting a legacy from one who has passed away, the latter an enduring relation with one who is still alive (S.P.C.K. Commentary).

Two instances follow in which the A.V. is now inadequate, one important, the other not: (a) St. Matthew 6³⁴, 'Take no thought for the morrow.' If we could and did carry this out our lives would be short; (b) St. Mark 6²⁵, 'Give me by and by the head of John the Baptist,' the damsel was in a hurry, wanted it at once; not at Herod's leisure, any time he liked.

Two instances of errors in the R.V. (a) Acts 19⁸, 'Paul entered into the synagogue, and spoke boldly for the space of three months,' that is, he went into a building, and then and there spoke continuously for three months! (b) St. John 19⁸, 'When Pilate therefore heard this saying.' What was the cause of Pilate hearing it? the only possible answer is that the Jews had spoken it. This is an adequate explanation, but scarcely needing to be put into words; the same error in 2²², etc.

Long usage blinds us to errors; here are two instances. (a) St. James 1¹⁴, 'Each is tempted, when he is drawn away . . . and enticed.' This merely tells us that we are tempted when we are tempted. Delete 'when he is.' (b) 1 Thessalonians 3¹⁰, 'Perfect what is lacking in your faith.' In 2 Corinthians 7¹ we read of 'perfecting holiness.' To perfect a virtue, and to perfect a lack of it cannot give the same result. To perfect a hole in a roof, if it has any meaning, would be to remove the roof. The verb in the first passage is not happily rendered.

It is important to observe the right order of words. Two instances of failure: (a) St. Matthew 28¹⁸ should not be arranged as in R.V. 'All authority has been given to me in heaven, etc.'; a formal presentation made there, but, as the original, 'There has been given to me all authority in heaven, etc.' (b) Hebrews 3¹⁰, 'they could not enter in because of unbelief'; this suggests that they might have got in on some other title. Put the last three words at the beginning. Treat similarly

INTRODUCTION

St. Luke 1 ²⁰, 1 Timothy 1 ²⁰. R.V. strangely gives (St. John 1 ⁶) an English relative for a Greek personal pronoun.

Differences in manners and customs cause some difficulty; for instance, meals. In those days men reclined on couches at meals; but need we in translating insist upon this posture? Then there are the names of meals. There were two set meals in the day. The first, taken about noon (*ariston*), is conveniently rendered 'breakfast' (or 'dinner'); The second, coming after the day's work was done (*deipnon*) we may call 'dinner' (or 'supper'). As among ourselves there was some elasticity in the use of such terms. Looking to the context, 'dinner,' in St. Luke 14 ¹⁶, seems better than 'supper.'

With money it is impossible to escape some incongruity. Thus in St. Luke 20 ²⁴, to be quite exact we must give 'show me a denarius.' (Here the American Revisers translate by 'shilling'—much better than 'penny.') To avoid this obscurity, we have to speak of a Roman Emperor's image upon an English coin. But the meaning of our Lord's words does not suffer.

Dress consisted mainly in two garments; a long one (*chiton*) worn next the skin, with or without sleeves, fastened by a girdle. This garment is generally rendered 'coat,' though 'tunic' gives a better notion of the article. Two tunics were generally worn (St. Mark 14 ⁶³, 'rent his tunics') the other garment (*himation*) is fairly translated 'cloak,' used like a shawl. (The plural of the word means usually garments in general, as in St. Matthew 26 ⁶⁵.) In English there would be no real gain in substituting 'tunic' for 'coat.'

Why were the tax-gatherers (St. Matthew 18 ¹⁷) so detested? The Romans having subdued the country farmed out the customs; that is, for a fixed payment they made over to companies the right of collecting such dues. The actual collectors were mostly Jews. To begin with, they were regarded as traitors in being agents for the alien conquerors; they were guilty of much fraud and extortion; some of their work (customs) necessitated infringement of the sabbath law.

The Greek word rendered 'servant' means, what the etymology of our own word proclaims, 'serf,' 'slave,' 'bondman.' Free labourers in those days (St. Luke 15 ¹⁷) were few in comparison with the number

INTRODUCTION

of slaves. In some passages the choice of rendering is not of importance, but Philemon's runaway slave, should not be termed 'servant.' Whatever the legal standing might be, the duty of giving good service rested alike on slave or hired person. Christianity, as taught by our Lord and St. Paul, did not aim, violently, to uproot the social evils amid which it sprang up.

In translating, allowance must be made for the paucity of inflexions in English—otherwise difficulties arise. An instance is found in the first verse of Galatians (A.V. and R.V.). You cannot read this aloud without stating that St. Paul's companions had been raised from the dead! The inflexion of 'all the brethren' shows plainly that it is connected with 'Paul,' not with 'him' (Jesus Christ). As the English words taken naturally convey the opposite impression, steps should be taken to make the English as free from ambiguity as is the Greek.

It is a self-evident principle that the same Greek word should be rendered by the same English word unless there is good reason to the contrary. In the preface to St. John's Gospel we have in verse 3 (A.V.), 'by him all things were made,' and in 14, 'the Word was made flesh' (altered in 1881 to 'became'). The alteration may be made in 3, 'became' being nearer to the Greek, a more comprehensive term, not committing us to any particular theory about the work of Creation. Compare Acts 15²⁸ with 16⁴. The rendering of St. Luke 18³¹ and Acts 13²⁸ should be made uniform with St. John 19³⁰; the Vulgate is consistent. In St. John 20²⁰ read 'rejoiced,' to conform with the promise of 16²²; and in St. Luke 15 there is no reason for varying at verse 32 from the 'rejoice' of verses 6 and 9. And 'entrusted' (1 Timothy 1¹¹) calls for 'trustworthy' in the next verse.

The auxiliary verb 'will' has been substituted in many places for 'shall.' There may be a debatable margin in the use of these words; but such a rendering as 'God shall smite thee' (Acts 23⁹), or 'thou shalt deny me' (St. Matthew 26³⁴), is quite indefensible in modern English. See also St. John 7³⁴; 8²⁴; 2 Timothy 4⁸. We certainly do not 'hope that there shall be' (Acts 24¹⁵). In St. John 5⁴⁰ 'ye will not come unto me' is insufficient. It may mean that, as a matter of fact, they never would come. The unwillingness should

INTRODUCTION

be made clear. In the next chapter, verse 29, 'this is the work of God, that ye believe . . . ' might be taken to assert that God had actually brought the hearers to believe ; which certainly is not what the Lord meant.

To continue the use of the word 'publicans' for collectors of public revenue can serve no other purpose than that of filling up the time of teachers in explaining to children that it does not mean what it seems to mean. Of the word 'reins' (kidneys) the American Revisers remark (Preface to O.T.) that in favour of its continued use 'one can only urge the poor reason that most readers attach to it no meaning whatever'; with curious inconsistency their version retains it in Revelation 2²³. 'Forbid' is, in most of the N.T. passages, an inadequate rendering of the word in the original, which cannot be limited to verbal communications. In 1 Corinthians 16²² (A.V.) 'anathema maranatha' is printed as if it were a compound curse ; and it is sometimes read so.

We have not followed the Americans in their literal rendering 'teacher' as applied to our Lord. In English this word does not represent the feeling with which assuredly our Lord was regarded (St. Mark 4²⁸; St. John 11²⁸). His disciples thought of him as the great instructor and leader, full of sacred authority and dignity. 'Master,' connected as it is with 'magister' (schoolmaster), better represents the Greek word, except where (as St. John 3¹⁰) the actual work of instruction needs to be brought out.

A note on St. Matthew 5²⁸. One Greek word serves for our two words 'wife' and 'woman,' the context deciding which of the two should be adopted. Further, the word rendered 'lust after' is the one found in the LXX of the tenth commandment. It is fairly clear that 'wife' here gives the better sense,¹ bringing the Lord's words into close connexion with the seventh and tenth commandments. Otherwise they would seem almost to put a veto upon marriage.

With weights, measures and moneys (often a difficult subject) we have done our best to be intelligible and correct. Fortunately, with few if any exceptions, nothing turns upon securing exact modern equivalents. It is strange that in Revelation 6⁶ the R.V. should keep

¹This has the high authority of the late Professor J. H. Moulton (*The Vocabulary of the Greek Testament*, page 134a).

INTRODUCTION

a rendering that, whereas the original implies famine prices, 'conveys to the English reader the idea of enormous plenty' (Bp. Lightfoot, *On a Fresh Revision of the N.T.*, p. 185).

It is not wise to insist on one English word as the invariable rendering of one Greek word; words take shades of meaning from their contexts. Sometimes the A.V. conceals differences in the Greek. Take St. Matthew 27⁴⁸ and St. Mark 15³⁶; the English 'filled' does duty for two Greek words. In St. Luke 6⁴⁴ 'gather' translates two Greek words. Such variations are interesting for reasons that cannot be dwelt on here, and should be retained where it can be done conveniently. Something is lost by the use of 'servants' for two Greek nouns in St. Matthew 22⁸ and 13. 'Obedience' (Philemon 24) spoils the courtesy of St. Paul's request. 'Favoured,' St. Luke 1²⁸, becomes a theological term 'graced' in Ephesians 1⁷. It is hardly satisfactory that the same phrase, 'lay hands upon' should be used for actions so different as arresting for crime and ordaining to the ministry. The Greek is not identical, nor the Vulgate with '*injicio, impono, manus.*' The word used by the risen Lord in St. Matthew 28⁹, recalling St. John 16²⁸, may be kept at the high level of its original meaning, a more conventional term being used in such passages as St. Matthew 27³⁰ and Acts 23³⁶; compare our own 'God be with you,' and 'Good bye.'

In Acts some technical terms were not brought out clearly. The followers of George Fox may point to Acts 27³ to justify the title they assumed. And others may claim that the term 'Brethren' (28¹⁵) was coming in as a name for the Christian community. It must seem strange to many a reader (13⁵⁰) that the Jews were able to incite 'devout women' to take part in a riot. The difficulty disappears in a more precise rendering (Lightfoot, *On a Fresh Revision*, p. 161). 'Libertines' should not be merely transliterated; it might be taken to mean loose-livers (Acts 6⁹).

Little has been done to alter the paragraphing, except in the Epistle of St. Jude, which has been arranged in what appears to be the natural order. In the Second Epistle of St. Peter there is apparently no grave reason for abolishing the normal short introduction, and connecting verse 2 of chap. 1 with what follows. Dividing

INTRODUCTION

1 John 2¹²⁻¹⁴ into two sections makes for clarity. At the end of St. Luke 23 the division made in A.V. seems more natural than that of the R.V. Verse 56 tells us that the women, having early on Saturday made preparations, rested on the sabbath (that of verse 54); then a new paragraph begins with a new week. In Revelation 8 there should be a break between verses 1 and 2; and in Acts 28 after verse 14.

There is a small particle connecting statements with contrast. This contrast may be so slight that English cannot reproduce it without exaggeration; but sometimes it has been overlooked. Thus Acts 10¹⁰ 'and [but] he became hungry.' Looking at the Gospel narrative of the apostles told to watch, yet falling asleep, it seems better to bring out the contrast between the apostle's intention to pray (the eager spirit) and the hunger that came upon him (the weak flesh). See also Romans 9¹⁰; 11⁷; 12⁵; 14³. In St. Luke 5⁴ it brings out what seemed to defeat the promise of a catch.

In Greek the pronoun in the nominative case is generally embodied in the verb, being expressed separately where emphasis is to be marked. One way of distinguishing this difference of use is by giving 'ye' in the former case, 'you' in the latter (Acts 19¹⁸). This accounts for many instances; there are other ways. Thus, for an instance, the A.V. was justified in inserting 'but' in St. John 2¹⁰; 'but thou hast kept.' Sometimes the difference can only be brought out by a stress laid upon the pronoun in reading aloud; instances in St. Matthew 11²⁸; St. John 16²². Where a relative might easily be misapplied to its nearest antecedent, some slight change should be made to avoid confusion; instances in Hebrews 5^{7, 11} (beginning of verses). Some with justice object to the wording, 'Our Father which art,' 'which' in modern English being restricted to inanimate objects and the inferior animals. Cobbett (*English Grammar*, 1833) noted that the American Liturgy had corrected this; cf. Addison's *Spectator*, No. 78.

The distinction between the English relatives 'who' and 'that' is often not observed. Romans 9¹⁴ is a case in point; here 'him that willeth' is correct, the relative clause serving to define a person otherwise not known to us; but as 'God' needs not to be identified, 'who hath mercy' should be read, the clause giving additional

INTRODUCTION

information about him. In 1 Kings 18 ²⁴ 'the God that answereth' is right, as one of many supposed deities was to be thus selected.

In the original it is sometimes uncertain whether a sentence is a statement or a question. Thus the beginning of 2 Corinthians 10 ⁷ may be a statement or a command or a question. You have to decide which better fits the case. St. Mark 16 ⁸ is an example. That the angel should tell the women what they were doing seems prosaic and needless, and does not harmonise with the question in St. Luke 24 ⁵; St. Matthew 28 ⁸ is turned differently. See also St. Matthew 26 ⁴⁸. In St. Luke 7 ²⁴ it is better (for reading aloud) to make clearer that the words 'reeds . . . ' are a question, not the answer to the preceding question. St. Matthew 8 ⁹ is more natural if the preceding verse is taken as a question.

It may be questioned whether, or how far, it is admissible to amend an author's awkward or incorrect construction. An instance occurs in Romans t5 ¹⁷⁻¹⁹, where the R.V., as may be seen by comparing margin with text, alters forcibly the author's wording for the sake of clearness. If St. Paul wrote or dictated hurriedly at times, why should we seek to conceal the fact? Instances of anacolutha (as broken sentences are called) may be found at Romans 5 ¹²; 15 ³²⁻⁵; 1 Corinthians 9 ¹⁶; Galatians 2 ⁴⁹⁶; Ephesians 3 ¹; 1 Timothy 1 ⁴. Their existence is a token of genuineness; the author's thought struggling to get free. The long involved sentences in the first part of Ephesians seem to come out correctly in their ends. There is a curious repetition of a phrase in 2 Corinthians 12 ⁷, natural enough in dictated matter; or it may be a copyist's error.

The rendering of the participle is sometimes a difficult matter. If you resolve it into a subordinate clause, you may find yourself interpreting as well as translating. Take Hebrews 6 ⁶, literally, 'to renew them unto repentance, crucifying to themselves . . . ' If you turn this, as the A.V. does, into ' . . . seeing that they crucify,' you are giving a reason for the impossibility described, and it might be said that you go out of the way to close

* Here it is impossible to say whether St. Paul broke off in dictating, or whether words have been lost. The Vulgate, with its usual honesty, shows faithfully the break.

INTRODUCTION

the door of hope. It is quite as correct to turn it 'while (as long as) they crucify.' Perhaps it is best, anyhow it is safest, to follow the Vulgate in retaining the participle, and to leave commentators to give any explanation thought necessary. In St. John 2⁸ the participle better brings out the notion of the unexpected accidental failure of supplies (not 'the wine'). R.V. treats it as the usual incident. Acts 18¹² reads as if the Jews had waited for a change of governor.

In the Lord's Prayer (St. Matthew 6¹³) a Greek expression may be rendered grammatically either 'the evil one' (masculine) or 'evil' (neuter). In some passages where the same expression occurs (e.g. Ephesians 6¹⁶) the context demands 'the evil one.' But here neither rendering is ruled out. Bp. Lightfoot in a Dissertation of 54 pp. advocated 'the evil one.' It is still an open question. In translating you cannot combine the two in one phrase; the English Church Catechism happily gives both in its paraphrase. There is the same ambiguity in 2¹ Thessalonians 3³.

Some expressions cannot well be made clearer than a literal rendering allows. Take 1 John 5¹³, 'he that hath the Son.' The whole meaning cannot be set out in a few words; but common usage presents the like difficulties. What does a hard-beset woman mean when, pointing to her husband, she says, 'At any rate I have him'? She knows well enough what she means and feels, but would be sorely puzzled to define clearly her verb. A diffuse paraphrase would be no improvement. 'Whom have I in heaven but thee?' asks the Psalmist; and no one questions his phraseology.

The word translated 'Blessed' in the Beatitudes and elsewhere would be better rendered 'Happy,' giving us the useful lesson that right conduct brings to us in itself even now our highest good; see Acts 20²⁵. It is used of God in 1 Timothy 1¹¹; 6¹⁶ (as Homer uses it of his gods who live at ease), indicating that God has in himself, irrespective of any worship given him, the fullness of bliss; but here it is safer to adhere to the A.V. The 'Blessed' is a legacy from the Vulgate which even in 1 Corinthians 7⁴⁰ has 'Beatior.'

In St. Matthew 5²² our rendering is based upon an article in Hastings' *Dictionary of the Bible*. Some re-arrangement is needed, as A.V. and R.V. give no clear consistent sense. No human court takes cognisance of

INTRODUCTION

angry feelings ; nor was our Lord concerned with the working of such courts. Nor can we suppose that the two terms of abuse quoted (the first is 'Raca' in the Greek) involve different degrees of guilt. We must remember also that the use of quotation marks was unknown in those days (see St. Matthew 23¹⁸, which, like¹⁸, must be put into the mouths of the blind guides, though only the context shows this).

St. Paul's epistles have never been easy reading. This was found to be the case in his own day (2 Peter 3¹⁰). It is told of an eminent divine that, asked why he never preached from the epistle to the Romans, he said it was because he did not himself understand that work. Apparently these letters were written, or dictated, hurriedly, perhaps never revised. Speaking generally, they met the needs of the moment (something like a modern bishop's charges), answering questions, and dealing with controversies that arose in the infant churches (the collection for the Christians of Jerusalem, the eating of meats offered in heathen sacrifices, the passing of the Mosaic Legislation, the controversies about Faith and Works or Election, and others, which have largely lost their interest and importance for ourselves). And in this lies one great difficulty ; that they deal at times with matters about which we are greatly in the dark (the speaking in tongues ; Anti-christ ; baptism for the dead). Sometimes it is not easy, in absence of quotation marks, to judge how far the apostle may be quoting the views of others. Then there are difficulties inherent in the subject matter, as in the treatment of predestination (Romans 9). The abrupt transitions (going off at a tangent) make it hard to know whether we are correctly following the author's thought. And the text seems to have suffered occasionally from accidental dislocation (notes to 1 Corinthians 14²⁰ ; 2 Corinthians 7¹ ; 1 Timothy 3¹¹).

One reason doubtless why the Bible is not more read is that so much of it in the received versions conveys little or no meaning to the reader. Take St. John 1¹⁵ in the R.V., 'he . . . is become before me, for he was before me.' It may safely be said that this has no meaning at all, unless we 'read into' the two 'before me's' different senses (the Greek is not the same). But should the ordinary reader, or the hearer, when it is read at public worship, be expected to do this? The

INTRODUCTION

verse is no doubt difficult. Dr. Plummer paraphrased it thus, 'he who is coming after me (in his ministry and in his birth), has become superior to me; for he was in existence in all eternity before me.' The A.V. with 'is preferred before me' gives an intelligible rendering. The original for 'he that doeth good is of God' (3 John ¹¹), found in a profane author, would be translated, what should we make of 'he is of John Brown.' Or take St. Matthew 26 ⁶⁴, purporting to give words of our Lord. The high priest had appealed to him to answer a simple question whether he was the expected Messiah. In reply, he is made to say, 'Thou hast said.' If one of us made this answer to a plain question from another, would it be thought a sensible reply? Surely not. Somewhat similar is the expression (2 Corinthians 6 ¹¹) 'Our mouth is open unto you, O Corinthians,' where the dictionary suggests 'speaking freely.' Take the expression, Galatians 5 ⁵, 'the hope of righteousness.' This is literal from the Greek. What do most readers make of the words? Probably, thinking of 'in hope of eternal life,' they take them to mean 'the hope of acquiring righteousness.' But commentators explain them as 'the hope that a present right relation to God carries with it'; and the English should make this plain. The expression 'answered and said' does not always (e.g. St. Matthew 11 ²⁸) make sense to the English reader, who naturally asks, Answered whom? and such explanations as have been attempted are not satisfying to ordinary minds. Such expressions as 'he added and spake' (St. Luke 19 ¹⁰); 'call his name John' (St. Luke 1 ¹³); 'masters according to the flesh' (Colossians 3 ²²) are English words, not English language. In 1 Peter 2 ², R.V. gives 'the milk which has no guile' (to keep up connection with verse 1). Had they given something like 'untouched by guile' the ordinary reader would have been better considered.

To preserve the emphasis of the original, give in St. Luke 15 ²¹, 'thou art always with me, and all that is mine'; and, 2 Corinthians 9 ⁸, keep the keynote 'all' throughout the verse; and, 8 ²², 'much confidence,' on the same ground. See also Revelation 9 ⁷. In 2 Thessalonians 3 ¹¹ is a play on words easily retained. 2 Corinthians 4 ⁸ is another instance, not quite so adaptable; see also 2 Corinthians 10 ¹². Sometimes, as might

INTRODUCTION

be expected, the subtlety of the original cannot be reproduced ; 2 Corinthians 3² ; Hebrews 5⁸.

A few short notes have been given here and there in the hope that they may remove difficulties for readers who have but few books at command. For details of history, geography, questions as to date and authorship of the various books, and other matters needing elucidation, the reader may be safely recommended to Hastings' one volume *Dictionary of the Bible* (T. and T. Clark, Edinburgh). Acknowledgment is made of indebtedness to Moulton and Milligan's monumental work, *The Vocabulary of the Greek Testament*.

THE GREEK TEXT USED

This work follows generally the Greek Testament prepared by Professor E. Nestle, of Maulbronn University. We have used the edition brought out in England by the British and Foreign Bible Society.

To discuss matters relating to the formation of the Greek text out of the various ancient authorities (Greek manuscripts, versions into ancient languages, quotations by early writers) was foreign to our purpose. This text has come down to us in much the same way as other Greek texts ; but the variations that from various causes have crept into the text are comparatively of slight importance. Here and there we cannot be absolutely sure as to a word or even a sentence ; but we possess every needed assurance that we have with us, to all intents and purposes, the mind and will of God, as he by his Holy Spirit inspired apostles and evangelists to set them forth for our guidance and comfort. We have given in the footnotes renderings of such variations as seemed likely to be of instruction or interest to our readers. Anything like a complete apparatus of such matters was outside the aim of this work. See also the list of ' Western ' readings.

CONCLUSION

The aim of the version that follows has been to produce without bias of any kind, in the interests of the general reader, a book which, while giving accurately and intelligibly the meaning of the original, may be read not merely from a sense of duty but with the pleasure that good doctrine set out in correct English may be expected to give.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	v
MARK	1
MATTHEW	40
LUKE	103
JOHN	170
ACTS	219
JAMES	285
1 THESSALONIANS	292
2 THESSALONIANS	298
GALATIANS	301
1 CORINTHIANS	310
2 CORINTHIANS	335
ROMANS	352
COLOSSIANS	379
PHILEMON	385
EPHESIANS	387
PHILIPPIANS	396
1 TIMOTHY	402
2 TIMOTHY	409
TITUS	414
HEBREWS	417
1 PETER	438
2 PETER	445
JUDAS	450
1 JOHN	453
2 JOHN	460
3 JOHN	461
REVELATION	462
SELECTED 'WESTERN' READINGS	494
APPENDICES	511

Blessed Lord, who hast caused all holy Scriptures to be written for our learning ; grant that we may in such wise hear them, read, mark, learn, and inwardly digest them, that, by patience and comfort of thy holy Word, we may embrace and ever hold fast the blessed hope of everlasting life, which thou hast given us in our Saviour Jesus Christ.

THE GOSPEL:—¹

ACCORDING TO MARK

- 1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, Son
of God.²
- 2 Even as it is written in Isaiah the prophet,³
'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
And he shall prepare thy way ;
- 3 A voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make ready the way of the Lord,
Make his paths straight,'
- 4 there came John, the Baptizer, in the wilderness,
preaching a baptism of repentance⁴ unto forgiveness
5 of sins. And there went out unto him all the
country of Judæa, and all the men of Jerusalem, and
were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing
6 their sins. And John was clothed in camels' hair,
with a leathern girdle about his loins ; and he ate
7 locusts and wild honey. And he preached, saying,
'There cometh after me he that is mightier than I, the
thong of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down
8 and untie. I baptized you with water ; but he will
baptize you with the Holy Spirit.
- 9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus went
from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized in the
10 Jordan by John. And straightway coming up out
of the water he saw the heavens being rent asunder,
and the Spirit, as a dove, descending unto him.
- 11 And a voice came out of the heavens, 'Thou art my
Son, the beloved ; in thee I am well pleased.'⁵
- 12 And straightway the Spirit sendeth him out into
13 the wilderness. And he was in the wilderness forty

¹ The words 'The Gospel' are not found in the earliest titles of the gospels. ² Some MSS. omit the last three words. ³ Some MSS. have, 'in the prophets' (actually from Malachi 3¹, and Isaiah 40³). ⁴ Strictly, a change of mind and outlook. ⁵ Psalm 2⁷; Isaiah 42¹.

MARK 1

days, tempted by Satan,¹ and was with the wild beasts ; and the angels ministered unto him.

And after John had been imprisoned, Jesus went into Galilee, preaching the gospel of God, and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom² of God is at hand ; repent, and believe in the gospel.

And as he was passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew the brother of Simon, casting a net in the sea ; for they were fishermen. And Jesus said to them, Come after me, and I will make you into fishers for men.—And straightway they left their nets, and followed him. And going on a little farther, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother ; they also were in their boat, mending their nets. And straightway he called them ; and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired men, and went away after him.

And they enter Capernaum ; and straightway on the sabbath he went into the synagogue, and began to teach. And they were astonished at his teaching ; for he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. And straightway there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit ; and it cried out, saying, What hast thou to do with us, thou Jesus of Nazareth? didst thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.— And Jesus rebuked it, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.—And the unclean spirit, convulsing him and crying with a loud voice, came out of him. And they were all amazed, so that they disputed one with another, saying, What is this? a new teaching, with authority ! He commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they obey him.—And the report of him went forth straightway everywhere into all the region of Galilee round about.

And straightway as they³ came out of the synagogue, they,⁴ with James and John, went into the house of Simon and Andrew. Now Simon's mother-in-law was keeping her bed, sick with a fever ; and straightway they tell him about her. And he went up to her, and took her by the hand, and raised her up ; and the fever left her, and she began to serve them.

¹ The word means the Adversary. ² Or 'sovereignty (rule),' and elsewhere. ³ Some MSS., 'he.'

MARK 1, 2

32 Now at even, when the sun had set, they brought
33 unto him all that were sick, and such as were
34 possessed by demons; and the whole city had
gathered together at the door. And he cured many
that were sick with divers diseases, and cast out many
demons. And, because they knew him,¹ he would
not allow the demons to speak.

35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before
day, he went out and departed into a desert place;
36 and there he prayed. And Simon and they that
37 were with him followed him up; and they found
him, and say to him, They are all seeking thee.—
38 And he saith to them, Let us go elsewhere, into the
neighbouring country towns, that there also I may
39 preach; for this is why I came forth.—And he went
preaching in their synagogues throughout all Galilee,
and casting out demons.

40 And there cometh unto him a leper, beseeching
him, and kneeling, saying to him, If thou willest,
41 thou canst make me clean.—And moved with com-
passion he stretched out his hand and laid hold of
him, and saith to him, I will; be thou made clean.—
42 And straightway the leprosy departed from him, and
43 he was made clean. And Jesus spoke sternly to him,
44 and straightway sent him out, and saith to him,
See thou say nothing to any one; but go, show thy-
self to the priest, and offer for thy purification the
things that Moses commanded, for witness unto
45 them.—But he went out, and began to publish at
length and to spread the matter, so that Jesus could
no longer openly enter a city, but stayed outside in
lonely places; and they kept coming to him from
every quarter.

2 And some days afterwards he again entered
Capernaum, and it was heard say that he was at
2 home. And many gathered together so that no longer
was there room, no, not even about the door; and
3 he spoke the word to them. And they come, bringing
4 unto him a man, paralysed, carried by four. And
when, for the multitude, they could not bring him
to him, they stripped off the roof² where he was; and
when they had broken it open, they let down the

¹ Some MSS. add, 'to be Christ.' ² The housetop (or roof) was flat, surrounded for safety by a parapet, and reached from courtyard by outside stairs.

MARK 2

pallet whereon the paralysed man was lying. And 5
 Jesus seeing their faith saith to the paralysed man, 6
 Child, thy sins are forgiven.—Now some of the 6
 scribes were sitting there, and arguing in their 7
 hearts, Why doth this man speak thus? he blas- 7
 phemeth; who can forgive sins but God only?— 8
 And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit that 8
 they so argued within themselves, saith to them, 9
 Why argue ye these things in your hearts? Which 9
 is easier? to say to the paralysed man, 'Thy sins 10
 are forgiven'; or to say, 'Arise, and take up thy 10
 pallet, and walk'? But that you may know that 10
 the Son of man hath authority on earth to forgive 11
 sins (he saith to the paralysed man), I say to thee, 11
 Arise, take up thy pallet, and go to thy house.—And 12
 he arose and straightway took up the pallet, and went 12
 forth before them all; so that they were all amazed 13
 and glorified God, saying, Never did we see the like.

And he went forth again by the seaside; and all 13
 the multitude kept coming to him, and he taught 14
 them. And, as he was passing along, he saw Levi, 14
 the son of Alphæus, sitting at the toll-house, and 15
 he saith to him, Follow me.—And he rose up and 16
 followed him.

And it cometh to pass that he was sitting¹ at table 15
 in Levi's house, and many tax-gatherers and out- 16
 casts were sitting down with Jesus and his disciples; 17
 for there were many, and they followed him. And 18
 the scribes of the Pharisees' party,² seeing that he 19
 was eating with the outcasts and tax-gatherers, said 20
 to his disciples, Why eateth he with tax-gatherers 21
 and sinners?—And Jesus heard it, and saith to 22
 them, It is not the strong that need a physician, but 23
 they that are sick. I came not to call righteous men, 24
 but sinners.

And John's disciples and the Pharisees were 18
 fasting. And they come and say to Jesus, Why do 19
 John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees 20
 fast, whereas thy disciples fast not?—And Jesus said 21
 to them, Can the friends of the bridegroom³ fast, 22
 while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they 23
 have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.

¹ Or reclining. ² Some MSS., 'scribes and the Pharisees.' ³ Lit. sons of the bride-chamber.

MARK 2, 3

20 But days will come when the bridegroom will be
taken from them ; and then they will fast in that
21 day. No one seweth a piece of undressed cloth upon
an old garment ; else what is filled in to it teareth
from it, the new from the old ; and a worse rent is
22 made. And no one putteth new wine into old wine-
skins ; else the wine will burst the skins, and the
wine and the skins perish ; but they put new wine
into fresh skins.

23 And it came to pass, that he was going through
the corn-fields on the sabbath ; and his disciples
began, as they went along, to pluck the ears of corn.
24 And the Pharisees said to him, Behold, why do they
25 on the sabbath that which is not lawful?—And he
saith to them, Did ye never read what David did,
when he and they that were with him came to need,
26 and hungered? how he went in to the house of God,
when Abiathar was high priest, and ate the loaves
that were set forth, which it is not lawful to eat
except for the priests, and gave also to them that
27 were with him?—And he said to them, The sabbath
was made for man, and not man for the sabbath ;¹
28 wherefore the Son of man is also lord of the sabbath.

3 And again he went to synagogue ; and a man was
2 there, with a withered hand. And they were watch-
ing Jesus, whether he would cure him on the sabbath ;
3 that they might accuse him. And he saith to the
4 man with the withered hand, Stand forth.—And he
saith to them, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good,
or to do evil? to save life, or to kill?—But they
5 held their peace. And looking round on them with
anger, being grieved at the blindness of their hearts,
he saith to the man, Stretch forth thy hand !—And
he stretched it forth ; and his hand was restored.
6 And the Pharisees went out, and straightway took
counsel with the Herodians against Jesus, how they
might destroy him.

7 And Jesus with his disciples withdrew to the sea ;
and a great multitude from Galilee followed ; and
8 from Judæa, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa,
and beyond the Jordan, and about Tyre and Sidon,
a great multitude, hearing all that he was doing,

¹The Lord did not choose the nation for the place's sake, but the
place for the nation's sake (2 Maccabees 5¹³).

came unto him. And he told his disciples to have a little boat waiting on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him ; for he had cured many, insomuch that as many as had ailments were falling upon him, that they might lay hold of him. And the unclean spirits, whenever they saw him, fell down before him, and cried out, saying, Thou art the Son of God.—And he charged them strictly not to make him known.

And he goeth up into the mountain, and calleth to him those that he would ; and they went unto him. And he appointed twelve,¹ that they might be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, and to have authority to cast out demons. And he appointed the twelve ; and Simon he surnamed Peter ; and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder) ; and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew and Thomas, and James the son of Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Simon the Cananæan,² and Judas Iscariot,³ who betrayed him.

And he goeth indoors ; and the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as take their food.⁴ But when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold of him ; for they said, He is beside himself. And the scribes that came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub,⁵ and, By the prince of the demons he casteth out the demons.—And he called them to him, and said to them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan ? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand ; and if a family be divided against itself, that family will not be able to stand. And if Satan hath risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but is at an end. But no one can enter the strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless he first bind the strong man ; and then he will plunder his house. Verily, I say to you, all things shall be forgiven to the sons of men, their sins and their blasphemies, wherewith soever they may blaspheme ;

¹ Some MSS. add, 'whom he also named apostles.' ² Or Zealot. ³ I. e., man of Kerioth, a town in S. of Judæa. ⁴ Lit. eat bread. ⁵ Meaning, probably, Lord of the mansion (the nether world).

MARK 3, 4

- 29 but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit is never forgiven, but is guilty of an eternal sin. (Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.)
- 30
- 31 And there come his mother and his brothers ; and standing outside they sent unto him, calling him.
- 32 And a multitude were sitting about him ; and they say to him, Behold, thy mother and thy brothers and thy sisters¹ are outside, seeking thee. And answering them he saith, Who are my mother and
- 34 my brothers?—And looking round on them that sat round about him, he saith, Behold my mother and
- 35 my brothers ! Whosoever shall do the will of God, he is brother to me, and sister, and mother.
- 4 And again he began to teach by the seaside ; and there gathereth unto him a very great multitude, so that he got into a boat on the sea, and sat down ; and all the multitude were facing the sea, on the land.
- 2 And he taught them many things in parables ; and
- 3 he said to them in his teaching, Hearken,
- 4 Behold, a sower went out to sow ; and it came to pass, as he sowed, some seed fell by the wayside, and
- 5 the birds came and devoured it. And other seed fell on rocky ground, where it had not much earth ; and straightway it sprang up, because it had no depth
- 6 of earth ; and when the sun rose, it was scorched ;
- 7 and because it had no root, it withered away. And other seed fell among thorns ; and the thorns
- 8 came up and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other seeds fell into good ground, and coming up and increasing were yielding fruit, and bearing, up to
- 9 thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.²—And he said, Whoso hath ears to hear, let him hear.
- 10 And when he was in private, they that were in his company with the twelve asked him about the
- 11 parables. And he said to them, To you hath been given the secret of the kingdom of God ; but to them that are outside it all comes in parables ; that
- 12 ' Seeing they may see, and not perceive ;
And hearing they may hear, and not understand ;
Lest at any time they should turn back, and be forgiven.'
- 13 And he saith to them, Know ye not this parable ?

¹ Some MSS. omit, ' and thy sisters.' ² Genesis 26 ¹².

MARK 4

How then will ye understand all the parables? The sower soweth the word. Now these are the seeds¹ by the wayside, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan, and taketh away the word that hath been sown in them. And these, likewise, are the seeds sown on the rocky parts; they that, when they have heard the word, straightway accept it with joy; and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; afterwards, when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble. And others are the seeds sown among the thorns; these are they that heard the word; and the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires about the other things, come in and choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. And those that were sown on the good ground are such as hear the word, and receive it, and bear fruit, one thirtyfold, and one sixtyfold, and one a hundredfold.

And he said to them, Is a lamp brought to be put under the bushel, or under the couch? and not to be put on the lamp-stand? For there is not anything hidden, except that it may be brought to light; nor yet was anything made secret, but that it might come into light. If any one hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And he said to them, Take heed what ye hear; with what measure ye measure, it shall be measured to you; and more shall be given you. For he that hath, to him shall be given; and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

And he said, Thus is the kingdom of God; like as a man may cast his seed on the ground, and go on sleeping and rising night and day, and the seed sprouts and grows, he knoweth not how. Of itself² the ground bears the crop; first the blade, then the ear, then comes the full wheat in the ear. But when the crop admits, straightway he sendeth forth the sickle, because the harvest has come.

And he said, How are we to liken the kingdom of God? or in what parable are we to set it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown on

¹ The bearers are identified with the seed, not with the soil. The seed becomes the plant, and bears or fails to bear its proper fruit; it represents therefore, when sown, the individuals to whom the discourse refers.

² *Lit.* automatically.

MARK 4, 5

32 the ground, though it is the least of the seeds that
are on the ground, yet when it is sown, grows up,
and becomes the greatest of all the herbs, and puts
out great branches ; so that the birds of the air can
roost beneath its shade.

33 And with many such parables he spoke the word
34 to them, even as they were able to hear it. But
without a parable he spoke not to them ; but
privately to his own disciples he interpreted all
things.

35 And on that day, when evening had come, he
saith to them, Let us pass over to the other side.—

36 And leaving the multitude, they take him with them
in the boat, as he was ; and there were with him

37 other boats. And there ariseth a great storm of
wind, and the waves were beating into the boat, so

38 that the boat was now filling. And he was in
the stern, on the cushion, asleep ; and they awake

39 him, and say to him, Master, carest thou not that
we perish?—And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,

40 and said to the sea, Peace ! be still.—And the wind
fell, and there was a great calm. And he said to

41 them, Why are ye so cowardly? how is it ye have
no faith?¹—And they feared with a great fear, and

said one to another, Who then is this, that even the
wind and the sea obey him?

5 And they came to the other side of the sea, into
2 the country of the Gerasenes. And when he had got

3 out of the boat, straightway there met him out of
the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, who had

4 his dwelling in the tombs ; and no one could any
longer bind him, no, not with a chain ; for he had

often been bound with fetters and chains, and the
chains had been rent asunder by him and the fetters

5 broken to pieces ; and no one was able to tame
him. And constantly night and day, in the tombs

6 and on the mountains, he was crying out and gashing
himself with stones. And seeing Jesus from afar,

7 he ran and worshipped him ; and crying out with
a loud voice he saith, What hast thou to do with me,

8 Jesus, Son of the Most High God ! I adjure thee by
God, torment me not.—For he said to him, Come

9 forth out of the man, thou unclean spirit ! And he

¹ Some MSS., ' why are ye cowardly ? have ye not yet faith ? '

MARK 5

asked him, What is thy name?—And he saith to him,
 My name is Legion; because we are many.—And he besought him earnestly that he would not send them away out of the country. Now a great herd of swine was there, on the mountain, feeding. And they besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may go into them.—And he gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out and went into the swine; and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea, in number about two thousand; and they were drowned in the sea. And they that fed them fled and reported it in the city and in the hamlets. And they came to see what it was that had happened. And they come to Jesus, and behold the man possessed by demons, sitting, clothed, and in his right mind, him that had had the legion; and they were afraid. And they that saw it declared to them how it happened to the man possessed by demons, and concerning the swine. And they began to beseech him to depart from their district. And as he was getting into the boat, the man that had been possessed by demons besought him that he might be with him. And he allowed him not, but saith to him, Go to thy house, and to thy friends, and take them word of what great things the Lord hath done for thee, and how he had mercy on thee.—And the man departed, and began to publish in Decapolis¹ what great things Jesus had done for him; and all marvelled.

And when Jesus had crossed over in the boat back to the other side, a great multitude gathered together unto him; and he was by the sea. And there cometh one of the wardens of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and seeing Jesus, he falleth at his feet, and beseecheth him much, saying, My little daughter is at the point of death; come, and lay thy hands on her, that she may be saved and live.—And Jesus went away with him; and a great multitude was following him, and they thronged him.

And a woman with a discharge of blood for twelve years, who had suffered many things from many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and found no benefit, but rather grew worse, hearing the news

¹ The district of the 'Ten Cities.'

MARK 5, 6

about Jesus, came in the multitude behind and laid
 28 hold of his cloak. For she said, If I may lay hold even
 29 of his garments, I shall be saved. And straightway the
 fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in
 30 her body that she was healed of her plague. And Jesus,
 straightway perceiving in himself that his power had
 gone forth,¹ turned round in the multitude, and said,
 31 Who laid hold of my garments?—And his disciples
 said to him, Thou seest the multitude thronging
 32 thee, and sayest thou, Who laid hold of me?—
 33 And he was looking round to see her that had done
 this thing. But the woman, fearing and trembling,
 knowing what had happened to her, came and fell
 34 down before him and told him the whole truth. But
 he said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath saved thee ;
 depart in peace,² be safe and sound from thy plague.
 35 While he was yet speaking, there come from the
 warden's house some who say, Thy daughter is dead ;
 36 why troublest thou the Master further?—But Jesus,
 not heeding³ what they were saying, saith to the
 warden of the synagogue, Fear not, only have faith.
 37 —And he allowed no one to accompany him, except
 Peter and James, and John the brother of James.
 38 And they come to the warden's house ; and he be-
 holdeth a tumult, and some weeping and wailing
 39 greatly ; and going in he saith to them, Why make ye
 a tumult and weep ? the child is not dead, but asleep.
 40 —And they laughed him to scorn. But he, putting
 them all out, taketh with him the child's father and
 mother, and them that were with him, and goeth in
 41 where the child is. And taking the child by the
 hand, he saith to her, Talitha cumi ! (which, is, being
 42 translated, Damsel, I say to thee, Arise.) And
 straightway the damsel rose up, and began to walk ;
 for she was twelve years of age. And straightway
 43 they were amazed with great amazement. And he
 charged them strictly that no one should know this,
 and ordered that something be given her to eat.
 6 And he set out thence, and goeth unto his own
 2 country ; and his disciples follow him. And when
 the sabbath had come, he began to teach in the

¹ *Lit.* his power when it went forth ; cf. St. Luke 8⁴⁶. The perception and the outflow were simultaneous. ² *Lit.* into peace. ³ *Or* overhearing ; but see St. Matthew 18¹⁷.

MARK 6

synagogue ; and most of them, as they heard, were astonished, saying, Whence did this man get these things? and what is the wisdom that is given him? and what mean such mighty works wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James and Joses and Judas and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us?—And they took offence about him. And Jesus said to them, A prophet is not without honour, except in his own country, and among his own kinsfolk, and in his own house.—And he could do no mighty work there, except that he laid his hands upon a few sick persons, and cured¹ them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. 3 4 5 6

And he made a circuit of the villages, teaching.

And he calleth to him the twelve, and began to send them forth, two by two ; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits, and charged them to take nothing for journeying, but a staff only ; no bread, no wallet, no money for the girdle ; but to be shod with sandals ; and put not on two coats.² And he said to them, Wherever ye enter a house, there abide till ye depart from that place. And whatsoever place shall not welcome you, and they hearken not to you, shake off, as ye go forth thence, the dust that is under your feet, for a witness unto them.—And they went out, and preached that men should repent. And they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many sick persons, and cured them. 7 8 9 10 11 12 13

And king Herod heard thereof ; for his name had become well known, and men³ said, John the Baptizer hath risen from the dead, and therefore these powers are working in him—But others said, It is Elijah ;—while others said, It is a prophet, like one of the prophets.—But Herod, when he heard, said, John, whom I beheaded, the same hath risen.—For Herod himself had sent and taken John, and bound him in prison, on account of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife ; because he had married her. For John said to Herod, It is not lawful for thee 14 15 16 17 18

¹ The Greek word (here and elsewhere) might be rendered 'treated, tended'; as we speak of 'cure of souls,' 'water-cure,' meaning 'treatment.' From it we got our word 'therapeutics.' ² Or tunics (and elsewhere). ³ Some MSS., 'he.'

MARK 6

19. to have thy brother's wife.—But Herodias bore a
 grudge against him, and wanted to kill him ; and
 20 she could not, for Herod feared John, knowing that
 he was a righteous and holy man ; and he kept him
 safe. And when he heard him, he was much per-
 21 plexed ;¹ yet he heard him gladly. And a
 convenient day having come, when Herod on his
 birthday gave a dinner for his nobles and the com-
 22 mandants and the chief men of Galilee ; and
 Herodias's own daughter² having come in and
 danced, she pleased Herod and them that sat at
 table with him. And the king said to the damsel,
 23 Ask of me whatever thou wilt, and I will give it
 thee. And he swore unto her, Whatsoever thou
 shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of
 24 my kingdom.—And she went out, and said to her
 mother, What shall I ask?—But she said, The head
 25 of John the Baptizer.—And she came in straightway
 with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will
 that thou give me forthwith on a dish the head of
 26 John the Baptist.—And the king was exceedingly
 sorry ; yet because of his oaths, and for the sake of
 27 them that sat at table, he would not refuse her. And
 straightway the king sent one of his guard, and
 commanded to bring his head ; and he went and
 28 beheaded him in the prison, and brought his head
 on a dish, and gave it to the damsel ; and the damsel
 29 gave it to her mother. And his disciples, hearing of
 it, came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.
 30 And the apostles gather together unto Jesus ; and
 they reported unto him all things whatsoever they
 31 had done, and whatsoever they had taught. And he
 saith to them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert
 place, and rest a while.—For there were many
 coming and going ; and they had no leisure even to
 32 eat. And they went away in the boat unto a desert
 33 place apart. And many saw them going, and
 recognised them ; and they ran together thither by
 34 land from all the cities, and outwent them. And,
 when he landed, he saw a great multitude, and had
 compassion on them, because they were like sheep
 without a shepherd ; and he began to teach them

¹ Some MSS., 'he did many things.' ² Some MSS., 'and his daughter Herodias.'

MARK 6

many things. And when the day was far spent, his 35
 disciples went up to him, and said, This is a desert 36
 place, and the day is far spent ; send them away,
 that they may go to the hamlets and villages round 37
 about, and buy themselves something to eat.—But he
 answered and said to them, Give you them to eat.—
 And they say to him, Are we to go and buy two hun-
 dred shillings¹ worth of loaves, and give them to eat ?
 —And he saith to them, How many loaves have ye ? 38
 go and see.—And when they knew, they say, Five,
 and two fishes.—And he commanded them that all 39
 should sit down in companies upon the green grass.
 And they sat down in groups, by hundreds and by 40
 fifties. And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,
 and looking up into heaven he blessed God,² and 41
 broke the loaves into pieces, and gave to the disciples³
 to set before them ; and the two fishes he divided
 among them all. And they all ate and were satisfied. 42
 And they picked up broken pieces, twelve frails full, 43
 and pieces of the fishes. And they that ate the loaves 44
 were five thousand men.

And straightway he urged his disciples to get into 45
 the boat, and to go in advance to the other side,
 towards Bethsaida, while he himself sendeth away
 the multitude. And having bidden them farewell, 46
 he went away to the mountain to pray. And when 47
 evening had come, the boat was in the midst of the
 sea, and he was alone on the land. And seeing them 48
 distressing themselves in rowing (for the wind was
 contrary to them), about the fourth watch of the
 night, he goeth unto them, walking on the sea ; and
 he would have passed by them. But they, seeing 49
 him walking on the sea, thought it was a ghost, and
 cried out ; for they all saw him and were troubled. 50
 But he straightway spoke with them, and saith to
 them, Be of good cheer ; it is I, be not afraid.—And 51
 he went up unto them into the boat, and the wind fell.
 And they were exceedingly amazed in themselves ;
 for even after the loaves they understood not, but 52
 their hearts were blinded.

And crossing over to the land, they came unto 53

¹ The original for 'shilling' is 'denarius' (St. Matthew 18²⁸).
² 'Blessed art thou, O Lord our God, who bringest forth bread out of
 the earth' was a common grace at meals. ³ Cf. 14²².

- 54 Genesareth, and moored the boat. And when they
 55 had come out of the boat, straightway the inhabitants
 56 recognised him, and ran through all that country, and
 began to carry about on their pallets such as were
 sick, where they heard he was. And wherever he
 entered, into villages, or into cities, or into hamlets,
 they laid the sick in the public places, and besought
 him that they might lay hold even of the fringe of his
 cloak ; and as many as laid hold of him were saved.
- 7 And the Pharisees and some of the scribes, having
 come from Jerusalem, gather together unto him.
- 2 And when they saw that some of his disciples were
 eating their food with ' unclean ' (that is, unwashed)
 3 hands ; (for the Pharisees and all the Jews, unless
 they wash their hands thoroughly,¹ eat not, holding
 4 the tradition of the ancients ; and coming from mar-
 ket, unless they sprinkle themselves,² they eat not ;
 and there are many other things that they have
 received to hold, washings of cups and pots and
 5 copper vessels) ; and the Pharisees and the scribes
 ask him, Why do not thy disciples observe the
 tradition of the ancients, but eat their food with
 6 unclean hands ?—But he said to them, Rightly Isaiah
 prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,
 ' This people honour me with their lips ;
 But their hearts are far away from me.
 7 But in vain they worship me,
 Teaching as their lessons precepts of men.'
- 8 Leaving the commandment of God, ye hold the
 9 tradition of men.—And he said to them, Finely ye
 disregard the commandment of God, that ye may
 10 keep your own tradition ! For Moses said, ' Honour
 thy father and thy mother ' ; and, ' He that speaketh
 11 evil of father or mother, let him die the death ' ; but
 you say, ' If a man shall say to his father or his
 mother, Anything wherewith I might have helped
 thee is Corban '³ (that is to say, ' Given to God ') ;
 12 ye no longer allow him to do anything for his father
 13 or his mother ; annulling the word of God by your
 tradition which ye have handed down ; and many
 14 such like things ye do.—And he called the multitude
 to him again, and said to them, Harken unto me,

¹ *Lit.* with the fist (rubbing each hand over the other). ² Some MSS., ' wash (*lit.* baptize) themselves ' ; ' bathe themselves ' (American Standard Version). ³ See St. Matthew 27¹.

MARK 7

every one, and understand ; there is nothing outside 15
 a man, that going into him can defile him ; but
 the things that proceed out of a man are what defile
 the man.¹—And when he had gone indoors away 17
 from the multitude, his disciples began to ask him
 about the parable. And he saith to them, What, are 18
 you also without understanding? Perceive ye not
 that whatsoever from outside goeth into a man,
 it cannot defile him, because it goeth not into his 19
 heart, but into the stomach, and goeth out into the
 drain.—(This he said, making all foods clean.)² And 20
 he said, That which proceedeth out of a man, that
 defileth the man. For from within, out of the hearts 21
 of men, their evil thoughts proceed, fornications,
 thefts, murders, adulteries, covetings, wicked ways, 22
 deceit, wantonness, envy,³ slander, pride, folly ; all 23
 these evil things proceed from within, and defile a
 man.

Now he arose and went away thence into the 24
 district of Tyre.⁴ And he entered a house, and
 would have no one know it ; and he could not be hid.
 But straightway a woman whose little daughter had 25
 an unclean spirit, hearing of him, came and fell down
 at his feet. Now the woman was a Gentile,⁵ a Syro- 26
 phœnician by race ; and she kept asking him to cast
 forth the demon out of her daughter. And he said 27
 to her, First allow the children to be satisfied ; for
 it is not seemly to take the children's bread, and to
 throw it to the dogs.⁶—But she answered and saith 28
 to him, Yea, Lord ; and the dogs⁶ under the table
 eat of the children's crumbs.—And he said to her, 29
 For this saying go thy way ; the demon hath gone
 forth out of thy daughter.—And she went away to 30
 her house, and found the child lying upon the bed,
 and the demon gone forth.

And coming back out of the district of Tyre, he 31
 went through Sidon to the sea of Galilee, through

¹ Some MSS. add verse 16: 'If any one hath ears to hear, let him hear.' ² The words 'This he said' are not in the Greek ; but the words 'making,' etc., are connected (as the Greek shows) not with 'it goeth out,' etc., but with 'And he saith to them.' In English it is necessary to insert words, to show the construction. Possibly 'making . . . clean' is a marginal note, afterwards brought into the text. ³ Lit. an evil eye. ⁴ Some MSS. add, 'and Sidon.' ⁵ Mulier gentilis, Syrophœnissa genere (Vulg.), lit. a Greek. See note to St. John 7²². ⁶ Lit. puppies.

32 the midst of the district of Decapolis. And they
 bring to him one that was deaf and stammered ;
 33 and they beseech him to lay his hand upon him. And
 he took him aside from the multitude in private, and
 put his fingers into his ears ; and he spat, and
 34 touched his tongue ; and looking up into heaven he
 groaned, and saith to him, Ephphatha ! (that is, Be
 35 opened).—And his ears were opened, and straight-
 way the bond of his tongue was loosed, and he began
 36 to speak plainly. And Jesus charged them to tell
 no one ; but the more he charged them, so much
 37 the more abundantly they published it. And they
 were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath
 done all things well ; he maketh both the deaf to
 hear, and dumb men to speak.

8 In those days, when again there was a great
 multitude, and they had nothing to eat, he called to
 2 him the disciples, and saith to them, I have com-
 passion on the multitude, because they have now
 been with me three days, and have nothing to eat ;
 3 and if I send them away to their homes fasting, they
 will faint on the way ; and some of them are from a
 4 distance.—And his disciples answered him, Whence
 will any one be able to satisfy these with bread, here
 5 in a desert?—And he asked them, How many loaves
 6 have ye?—And they said, Seven.—And he bids the
 multitude to sit down on the ground ; and he took
 the seven loaves, and gave thanks and broke, and
 gave to his disciples to set before them ; and they
 7 set them before the multitude. And they had a
 few small fishes ; and he blessed them, and gave
 8 orders to set these also before them. And they ate,
 and were satisfied ; and they picked up of broken
 9 pieces that were left, seven baskets. Now there
 were about four thousand ; and he sent them away.

10 And straightway getting into the boat with his
 disciples, he went to the region of Dalmanutha.
 11 And the Pharisees came forth, and, testing him,
 began to dispute with him, seeking from him a sign
 12 from the heaven. And he groaned deeply in his
 spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek a
 sign? Verily, I say to you, there shall no sign be
 13 given to this generation.—And he left them, and
 getting back into the boat departed to the other side.
 14 And they forgot to take bread, and they had not

MARK 8

more than one loaf with them in the boat. And he 15
 began to charge them, saying, Take heed, beware of
 the leaven of the Pharisees, and the leaven of 16
 Herod.—And they were arguing one with another, 16
 because they had no bread. And, getting to know 17
 it, he saith to them, Why argue ye, because ye have
 no bread? perceive ye not yet, do ye not under- 18
 stand? have ye your hearts blinded? Having eyes, 18
 see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and
 remember ye not, when I broke the five loaves 19
 among the five thousand, how many frails full of
 broken pieces ye picked up?—They say to him, 20
 Twelve.—When the seven among the four thousand,
 how many basketfuls of broken pieces picked ye up?
 —And they say, Seven.—And he said to them, Do 21
 ye not yet understand?

And they come to Bethsaida ; and some¹ bring to 22
 him a blind man, and they beseech him to lay hold
 of him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and 23
 led him forth outside the village ; and, spitting into
 his eyes, he laid his hands upon him, and asked him,
 Seest thou any thing?—And he looked up, and said, 24
 I see men ; for I perceive them as trees, walking.—
 Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes ; and he 25
 saw clearly, and was restored, and could see all
 things at a distance. And he sent him away to his 26
 home, saying, Go not even into the village.

And Jesus and his disciples went out into the 27
 villages of Cæsarea Philippi ; and on the way he
 asked his disciples, saying to them, Who say men
 that I am?—And they told him, saying, John the 28
 Baptist ; and others say, Elijah ; but others, that
 thou art one of the prophets.—And he asked them, 29
 But who say you that I am?—Peter answering saith
 to him, Thou art the Christ.—And he charged them 30
 to tell no one of him.

And he began to teach them, that the Son of man 31
 must suffer many things, and be rejected by the
 elders and the high priests and the scribes, and be
 killed, and after three days² rise. And what he 32
 said he spoke openly. And Peter took him aside,

¹ They (A.V.). One of the instances where English misses so convenient a pronoun as the French 'on' (on lui amena). ² As the parallel passages (St. Matthew 16³¹, etc.) show, this = 'On the third day.' The writers used the two expressions interchangeably.

MARK 8, 9

33 and began to rebuke him. But he, turning round, and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter, and saith, Get thee behind me, Satan! for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.

34 And he called the multitude to him with his disciples, and said to them, If any one wisheth to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up
35 his cross, and follow me. For whosoever wisheth to save his life will lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's shall save it.

36 For what doth it profit a man to gain the whole
37 world, and to forfeit his life? For what may a man
38 give in exchange for his life? For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him will the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father

9 with the holy angels.—And he said to them, Verily, I say to you, there are some here of those standing by, who will in no wise taste death, till they have seen the kingdom of God already come with power.

2 And six days afterwards Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up a high mountain apart by themselves; and he was

3 transfigured¹ before them. And his garments became glistening, exceedingly white, as no fuller

4 on earth can whiten. And there appeared unto them Elijah, with Moses; and they were talking

5 with Jesus. And Peter speaks and saith to Jesus, Rabbi,² it is well that we are here; and let us set up

6 three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah;—for he knew not what to speak; for

7 they were seized with great fear. And there came a cloud, overshadowing them; and out of the cloud there came a voice, This is my Son, the beloved,

8 hearken to him.—And suddenly looking round, they no longer saw any one, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them to tell no one what things they had seen, except when the Son of man should

10 have risen from the dead. And they held fast that saying, disputing among themselves what the

11 rising from the dead should mean. And they began

¹ Or transformed. *Lit.* metamorphosed. ² i. e., Master.

MARK 9

to ask him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elijah
 must first come?—And he saith to them, Elijah 12
 indeed cometh first and restoreth all things; and
 how comes it written of the Son of man that he
 should suffer many things and be despitefully
 treated? But I say to you, that Elijah hath come, 13
 and they did to him whatsoever they would, even
 as it is written of him.

And coming unto the disciples they saw a great 14
 multitude about them, and some scribes disputing
 with them. And straightway all the multitude, when 15
 they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running
 up began to salute him. And he asked them, What 16
 are ye disputing about with them?—And one of the 17
 multitude answered him, Master, I brought unto
 thee my son, who hath a dumb spirit; and wherever 18
 it seizeth him, it dasheth him down; and he foameth
 and grindeth his teeth, and pineth away; and I spoke
 to thy disciples that they should cast it out; and
 they were not able.—But he answereth them and 19
 saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be
 with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring
 him unto me.—And they brought him unto him; 20
 and the spirit, when he saw him, straightway con-
 vulsed the boy; and he fell on the ground and
 wallowed, foaming. And he asked his father, How 21
 long time is it since this hath come upon him?—And
 he said, From childhood; and often it hath thrown 22
 him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy
 him. But if thou canst do anything, have com-
 passion on us and help us.—But Jesus said to him, 23
 'If thou canst!' All things can be done by him
 that believeth.—Straightway the father of the lad 24
 cried out and said, I believe, help thou my unbelief.
 —But Jesus, seeing that a multitude came running 25
 together, rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to him,
 Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I command thee, come
 out of him, and enter him no more.—And he cried 26
 out, and convulsed him much, and came out; and
 he became like one dead, so that most of them said,
 He is dead. But Jesus took him by the hand, and 27
 raised him; and he stood up. And when he had 28
 gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately.

¹ Some MSS. add 'with tears.'

MARK 9.

- 29 Why could not we cast it out?—And he said to them, This kind can come forth in no way except by prayer.¹
- 30 And they departed thence, and were passing through Galilee ; and he did not wish that any one should know it. For he was teaching his disciples, and saying to them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they will kill him ; and having been killed, after three days he will rise.
- 32 —But they understood not the saying, and were afraid to ask him.
- 33 And they came to Capernaum ; and when he had gone indoors, he asked them, What were ye arguing about on the way?—But they held their peace ; for on the way they had disputed one with another about which was the greatest. And sitting down, he called the twelve, and saith to them, If any one wisheth to be first, he shall be last of all, and servant of all.—And he took a little child, and set him in the midst of them, and taking him into his arms, he said to them, Whosoever shall welcome one of such little children in my name welcomes me ; and whosoever welcomes me, welcomes not me, but him that sent me.
- 38 John said to him, Master, we saw some one, who followeth not us, casting out demons in thy name ; and we would have hindered him, because he was not our follower.—But Jesus said, Hinder him not ; for there is no one who shall do a mighty work in my name, and can forthwith speak evil of me ;
- 40 for he that is not against us is for us. For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, by reason that ye are Christ's, verily, I say to you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. And whosoever shall cause to stumble² one of these little ones who believe,³ it were better for him if a big millstone were hanging about his neck, and he had been cast into
- 43 the sea. And if thy hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off ; it is well for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two hands to go away into
- 45 hell,⁴ into the fire unquenchable.⁵ And if thy foot

¹ Some MSS. add, 'and fasting.' ² The Greek verb is, letter for letter, the same as our 'scandalise.' Or shall ensnare. ³ Some MSS. add, 'on me.' ⁴ *Lit.* Gehenna. ⁵ The words of 44 and 46 will be found in 48, the only place in which the best MSS. have them.

MARK 9, 10

causeth thee to stumble, cut it off; it is well for thee to enter into life halt, rather than having thy two feet to be cast into hell. And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out; it is well for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell; where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire.¹ Good is the salt; but if the salt lose its saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

And he arose and goeth thence into the district of Judæa and beyond the Jordan, and multitudes come together unto him again; and again, as he was wont, he began to teach them.

And some Pharisees coming up began to ask him, Is it lawful for a man to put away² his wife?—testing him. But he answered and said to them, What did Moses command you?—And they said, Moses gave permission to write a notice of divorce, and to put her away.—But Jesus said to them, Looking to your hardness of heart he wrote you this commandment. But, from the beginning of creation, God made them, 'a male and a female.' For this cause a man shall leave his father and mother,³ and the two shall become one flesh; so then they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God joined together, let not man put asunder.—And when they were indoors his disciples began to ask him further about this matter. And he saith to them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her; and if she shall put away her husband, and marry another, she committeth adultery.

And they were bringing to him little children, that he might touch them; but the disciples rebuked them.⁴ But when Jesus saw it, he was indignant, and said to the disciples, Suffer the little children to come unto me; hinder them not, for to such belongeth the kingdom of God. Verily, I say to you,

¹ Some MSS. add, 'and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.'
² Or dismiss, divorce; it was done privately (Deuteronomy 24¹⁻⁴), not through a court formed for the purpose. ³ Some MSS. add, 'and shall cleave to his wife.'
⁴ The words 'those that brought them' (A.V.) are not in the best MSS.

- whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God
 16 as a little child, he will in no wise enter therein.—And
 he took them into his arms, and blessed them, laying
 his hands upon them.
- 17 And as he was going forth journeying, some one
 ran up, and knelt to him, and asked him, Good
 Master, what shall I do, that I may gain eternal
 18 life?—But Jesus said to him, Why callest thou me
 good? there is none good but God only. Thou
 19 knowest the commandments, 'Murder not,' 'Com-
 mit not adultery,' 'Steal not,' 'Bear not false
 witness,' 'Defraud not,' 'Honour thy father and
 20 mother.'—And he said to him, Master, all these
 21 things I have observed from my youth.—But Jesus
 looking upon him loved him, and said to him, One
 thing thou lackest; go thy way, sell whatsoever
 thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have
 22 treasure in heaven; and come, follow me.—But at
 that saying he looked gloomy, and went away
 sorrowful; for he had great possessions. And
 23 Jesus looking round saith to his disciples, With
 what difficulty will they that have riches enter into
 24 the kingdom of God!—But the disciples were
 amazed at his words. But Jesus speaks to them
 again, and saith, Children, how difficult it is¹ to
 25 enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a
 camel to pass through the eye of a needle, than for
 26 a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.—But
 they were exceedingly astonished, saying among
 27 themselves,² Who then can be saved?—Jesus look-
 ing upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but
 not with God; for with God all things are possible.
 28 —Peter began to say to him, Lo, we left all things,
 29 and have followed thee.—Jesus said, Verily, I say
 to you, there is no one that left house, or brothers,
 or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands,
 30 for my sake, and for the gospel's sake, and shall not
 receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and
 brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and
 lands, with persecutions; and in the age to come,
 31 eternal life. But many first will be last, and the
 last first.

¹ Some MSS. add, 'for them that trust in riches.' ² Some MSS.,
 'saying unto him.'

MARK 10

Now they were on the way, going up to Jerusalem, 32
 and Jesus was going on in front of them ; and they
 were amazed ; but they that followed were afraid.
 And again he took the twelve aside, and began to
 tell them what things would happen to him, saying, 33
 Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem ; and the Son
 of man will be delivered to the high priests and the
 scribes ; and they will condemn him to death, and
 will deliver him to the Gentiles ; and they will 34
 mock him and spit upon him, and scourge him and
 kill him ; and after three days he will rise.

And there come near to him James and John, the 35
 sons of Zebedee, saying to him, Master, we would
 that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall ask of
 thee.—And he said to them, What would ye that I 36
 should do for you?—And they said to him, Grant to 37
 us that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and one
 at the left hand, in thy glory.—But Jesus said to 38
 them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to
 drink the cup that I drink? or to be baptized with
 the baptism that I am baptized with?—And they 39
 said to him, We are able.—But Jesus said to them,
 The cup that I drink, ye shall drink ; and with the
 baptism that I am baptized with, ye shall be bap- 40
 tized ; but to sit at my right hand, or at the left
 hand, is not mine to give, but it belongs to those for
 whom it hath been prepared.—And when the ten 41
 heard it, they began to feel indignation about James
 and John. And Jesus called them to him, and saith 42
 to them, Ye know that they that are regarded as
 rulers over the Gentiles lord it over them, and their
 great ones exercise authority over them. But 43
 among you it is not so ; but whosoever wisheth to
 become great among you shall be your servant ; and 44
 whosoever wisheth to be first among you shall be
 bondman of all. For the Son of man also came not 45
 to be served, but to serve, and to give his life a
 ransom for many.

And they come to Jericho. And as he was going 46
 out of Jericho with his disciples and a great multi-
 tude, a blind beggar, Bartimæus (the son of Timæus),
 was sitting by the wayside. And hearing that it 47
 was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out and
 say, Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me.—And 48

many rebuked him, that he should hold his peace ;
 but he cried out much the more, Son of David,
 49 have mercy on me.—And Jesus stopped, and said,
 Call him.—And they call the blind man, saying to
 him, Be of good cheer, rise ; he calleth thee.—
 50 And, throwing off his cloak, he sprang up and went
 51 unto Jesus. And Jesus spoke and said to him,
 What wouldst thou that I should do for thee?—
 And the blind man said to him, Master,¹ that
 52 I may recover my sight.—And Jesus said to him, Go
 thy way ; thy faith hath saved thee.—And straight-
 way he recovered his sight, and followed him on
 the way.

11 And when they are drawing near to Jerusalem, to
 Bethphage and Bethany, towards the Mount of the
 2 Olive Trees, he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith
 to them, Go your way into the village opposite you,
 and straightway as ye enter it, ye will find a colt
 tied up, on which no man ever yet sat ; loose it, and
 3 bring it. And if any one say to you, ' Why are ye
 doing this ? ' say, ' The Lord hath need of it, and
 4 straightway is sending it back hither.'²—And they
 went their way, and found a colt tied up at a door, out-
 5 side on the highway ; and they loose it. And some
 of the bystanders said to them, What are ye doing,
 6 loosing the colt?—And they said to them even as
 7 Jesus had said ; and they let them go. And they
 bring the colt unto Jesus, and throw their cloaks
 8 over it ; and he took his seat upon it. And many
 spread their cloaks on the way ; and others boughs,
 9 cutting them out of the fields. And they that went
 in front, and they that followed, kept crying,

Hosanna !

Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the
 Lord ;

10 Blessed is the kingdom that cometh, the
 kingdom of our father David ;

Hosanna in the highest !

11 And he went into Jerusalem, into the temple ;
 and when he had looked round upon all things, and
 now it was eventide, he went out to Bethany with
 the twelve.

¹ *Lit.* Rabbuni (St. John 20¹⁶). ² ' . . . of it ' ; and straightway he
 (the owner) will send him back hither (R.V.).

And on the morrow, when they had come out from 12
Bethany, he hungered. And seeing at a distance a 13
fig tree with leaves, he went, if haply he might find
anything thereon ; and when he came up to it, he
found nothing but leaves ; for it was not the season
for figs. And he spoke and said to it, No one eat 14
fruit from thee henceforward for ever !—And his
disciples were listening.

And they come to Jerusalem ; and he went into 15
the temple, and began to drive out them that sold
and them that bought in the temple ; and he over-
turned the tables of the money-changers and the
seats of them that sold the doves, and would not 16
allow any one to carry a vessel through the temple.
And he began to teach, and to say to them, Is it not 17
written, ' My house shall be called a house of prayer
for all the nations ' ? but you have made it a robbers'
den.—And the high priests and the scribes heard 18
it, and sought how they might destroy him ; for
they were afraid of him ; for all the multitude were
astonished at his teaching.

And when evening had come they¹ went forth out 19
of the city.

And as they passed by in the morning, they saw 20
the fig tree, withered from the roots. And Peter, 21
remembering, saith to him, Rabbi, behold, the fig
tree that thou cursedst is withered away.—And 22
Jesus answering saith to them, Have faith in God.
Verily, I say to you, whosoever shall say to this 23
mountain, ' Be taken up and cast into the sea,' and
shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that
what he saith is coming to pass ; he shall have it.
Therefore I say to you, all things whatsoever, for 24
which ye pray and ask, believe that ye received
them,² and ye shall have them. And when ye 25
stand praying, forgive, if ye have anything against
any one ; that your Father also who is in heaven
may forgive you your trespasses.³

And they come back to Jerusalem ; and as he was 27
walking in the temple, the high priests and the
scribes and the elders come unto him ; and they 28

¹ Some MSS., ' he.' ² Granted at moment of asking. ³ Some MSS.
add verse 26 : ' But if ye forgive not, neither will your Father who
is in heaven forgive your trespasses.'

said to him, By what authority doest thou these things? or who gave thee this authority to do them?—But Jesus said to them, I will ask you a question, and answer ye me ; and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. John's baptism, was it from heaven, or from men? answer me.— And they began to argue among themselves, saying, If we shall say, ' From heaven,' he will say, ' Then why did ye not believe him?' but shall we say, ' From men '?—they feared the multitude ; for as to John, all verily held that he was a prophet. And they answer and say to Jesus, We know not.—And Jesus saith to them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

12 And he began to speak to them in parables :—

A man planted a vineyard, and set a fence about it, and dug a pit for the winepress, and built a watch-tower,¹ and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country. And at the season he sent unto the husbandmen a servant,² that he might receive from the husbandmen a part of the produce of the vineyard. And they took him and beat him, and sent him away empty-handed. And, again, he sent unto them another servant ; and him they wounded in the head, and shamefully treated. And he sent another ; and him they killed, and many others ; beating some, and killing some. One yet he had, a beloved son ; he sent him last unto them, saying, ' They will reverence my son.' But those husbandmen said among themselves, ' This is the heir ! come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours.' And they took him and killed him, and threw him out of the vineyard. What will the owner of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will let the vineyard to others. Did ye never read even this scripture,

' A stone which the builders rejected,
The same became the corner-stone ;
From the Lord came this corner-stone,³
And it is marvellous in our eyes ' ?

12 And they were seeking to take him, and they feared the multitude ; for they perceived that he had

¹ Isaiah 54. ² *Lit.* bondman (and in context). ³ This is the Lord's doing (A.V.) Psalm 118²².

MARK 12

spoken the parable about themselves. And they left him, and went away.

And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees 13
and of the Herodians, that they may entrap him by 14
talk. And they come and say to him, Master, we
know that thou art true, and carest not for any one ;
for thou regardest not the person of men, but
teachest the way of God in truth ; Is it lawful to
pay taxes to Cæsar, or not? should we pay, or 15
should we not pay?—But he, knowing their hypo-
crisy, said to them, Why test ye me? Bring me a
shilling, that I may see it.—And they brought one.
And he saith to them, Whose are this image and the 16
superscription?—And they said to him, Cæsar's.—
And Jesus said to them, Render to Cæsar the things 17
that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are
God's.—And they marvelled greatly at him.

And there come unto him some Sadducees (men 18
who say that there is no resurrection), and they
began to ask him, saying, Master, Moses wrote for 19
us, that if any one's brother die, and leave a wife
behind him, and leave no child, his brother should
take the widow, and raise up issue unto his brother.
There were seven brothers ; and the first took a wife, 20
and dying left no issue. And the second took her, 21
and died, without leaving issue behind him ; and
the third likewise. And the seven left no issue ; 22
last of all, the woman also died. In the resurrection, 23
when they rise, of which of them will she be wife?
for the seven had her for wife.—Jesus said to them, 24
Is not this why ye err, that ye know not the scrip- 25
tures, nor the power of God? For when they rise
from the dead, they neither marry nor are given 26
in marriage, but are as angels in heaven. Now
as touching the dead, that they rise, did ye never
read in the book of Moses (at the place about the
Bush¹), how God spoke to him, saying, ' I am the
God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the
God of Jacob '? He is God, not of dead men, but 27
of living ; ye greatly err.

And one of the scribes came near, and hearing 28
them disputing together, and knowing that he had
answered them well, asked him, Which commandment

¹ In that part of the Book of Exodus.

29 is the first of all?—Jesus answered, The first is,
 'Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord;
 30 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all
 thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy
 31 mind, and with all thy strength.' The second is this,
 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.' There
 32 is no commandment greater than these.—And the
 scribe said to him, Right, Master; thou saidst
 truly that he is one, and there is none besides him;
 33 and to love him with all the heart, and with all the
 understanding, and with all the strength, and to love
 34 one's neighbour as oneself, is far more than all the
 whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.—And Jesus,
 seeing that he answered discreetly, said to him, Thou
 art not far from the kingdom of God.—And no one
 after that durst ask him any more questions.

35 And Jesus spoke and said, while he was teaching
 in the temple, How say the scribes that the Christ
 36 is David's son? David himself said in the Holy
 Spirit,

'The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right
 hand,

Until I put thine enemies beneath thy feet.'

37 David himself speaks of him as Lord; how then is
 he his son?

38 And the common people¹ heard him gladly. And
 in his teaching he said, Beware of the scribes, who
 like to walk about in long robes, and to be saluted
 39 in the market-places, and front seats in the syna-
 40 gogues, and first places at feasts; those that devour
 widows' houses, and for a pretence make long
 prayers; they will receive a heavier sentence.

41 And he sat down opposite the treasury, and ob-
 served how the multitude were putting money into
 the treasury; and many that were rich put in much.
 42 And there came a poor widow, and she put in two
 43 mites (which make a farthing). And he called to
 him his disciples, and said to them, Verily, I say to
 you, this widow, poor as she is, put in more than all
 44 they that are putting into the treasury. For they
 all out of their abundance put in; but she out of
 her want put in all that she had, even all her
 substance.

¹ Lit. the great multitude, 'the masses.'

MARK 13

And as he was going out of the temple, one of his 13
disciples saith to him, Master, see, what wonderful
stones, and what wonderful buildings !—And Jesus 2
said to him, Art thou looking at these great build-
ings? there will not be left stone upon stone, that
will not be thrown down.

And as he was sitting on the Mount of the Olive 3
Trees, opposite the temple, Peter and James and
John and Andrew asked him privately, Tell us, when 4
will these things be? and what will be the sign when
these things shall all be accomplished?—But Jesus 5
began to say to them, Take heed that no one deceive
you. Many will come in my name, saying, 'I am 6
he'; and they will deceive many. But when ye shall 7
hear of wars and rumours of wars, be not troubled;
they must come to pass; but the end is not yet.
For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom 8
against kingdom; there will be earthquakes in
divers places; there will be famines. These things
are the beginning of birth-panga.

But take you heed to yourselves; they will deliver 9
you up to councils and to synagogues; ye will be
beaten; and before governors and kings ye will
stand for my sake, for a witness unto them. (And 10
the gospel must first be preached unto all the
nations.) And when they deliver you up, and lead 11
you away, be not anxious beforehand what ye shall
speak; but whatsoever shall be given you in that
hour, that speak ye; for it is not you that speak,
but the Spirit, the Holy Spirit. And brother will 12
deliver up brother to death, and the father his child;
and children will rise up against parents, and will
put them to death. And ye will be hated by all men 13
for my name's sake. But he that endureth to the
end, the same shall be saved.

But when ye see the abomination of desolation 14
standing where he ought not—he that readeth, let
him consider—then let such as are in Judæa flee
to the mountains; he that is on the roof, let him 15
not go down, neither enter, to take anything out of
his house; and he that is out in the field let him 16
not turn back to take his cloak.

But alas for them that are with child, and for 17
them that give suck, in those days! And pray 18
that it come not in winter. For those days will be 19

tribulation, such as there hath not come the like, from the beginning of the creation which God created, until now ; and never again will come. And unless the Lord had shortened the days, not one person would have been saved ; but for the sake of the chosen, whom he chose, he shortened the days.

21 And if any one shall then say to you, ' Behold ! here is the Christ ! ' ' Behold ! there he is ! ' 22 believe it not. But there will arise false christs and false prophets, and they will work signs and wonders, 23 in order to lead astray, if it be possible, the chosen. But take you heed ; I have told you all things beforehand.

24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give her 25 light, and the stars will be falling out of the heaven, and the powers¹ that are in the heavens will be 26 shaken. And then they shall see the Son of man 27 coming in clouds with great power and glory. And then he will send forth the angels, and will gather together his chosen from the four winds, from end of the earth to end of the heaven.

28 Now from the fig tree learn its parable ; when its branch hath now become tender, and is putting forth 29 its leaves, ye know that summer is nigh ; so also you, when ye see these things coming to pass, know 30 ye that he² is nigh, at the doors. Verily, I say to you, this generation will not pass away till all these 31 things have come to pass. The heaven and the earth 32 will pass away ; but my words will not pass away. But of that day or that hour no one knoweth but the Father, not even the angels in heaven, nor yet the Son.

33 Take heed, be wakeful ;³ for ye know not when 34 the time is. It is as a man gone abroad, having left his house and given his authority to his servants, to each his work ; and he commanded the door- 35 keeper to watch. Watch therefore ; for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, in the evening, or at midnight, or at cock-crowing, or in the 36 morning ; lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. 37 And what I say to you, I say to all, Watch !

14 Now it was two days before the Passover⁴ and the

¹ Or forces, energies (virtutes, Vulgate). ² Or it. ³ Some MSS. add 'and pray.' ⁴ Exodus 12.

MARK 14

Unleavened Bread ; and the high priests and the scribes were seeking how they might take him by subtlety, and kill him. For they said, Not during the festival, lest haply there be a tumult of the people. 2

And while he was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at table, there came a woman with an alabaster cruse of ointment of pure nard, very costly ; breaking the cruse, she poured the ointment over his head. But there were some who felt indignation among themselves ; 'To what purpose hath this waste of the ointment been made? for this ointment might have been sold for more than three hundred shillings, and given to the poor —And they spoke sternly to her. But Jesus said, Let her alone ; why trouble ye her? it was a gracious work she wrought on me. For the poor ye have always with you, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good ; but me ye have not always. She did what she could ; she was beforehand in anointing my body for the burying. And verily, I say to you, wheresoever the gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her. 3
4
5
6
7
8
9

And Judas Iscariot, the one of the twelve, went away unto the high priests, that he might deliver him to them. And they, when they heard it, were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently deliver him up. 10
11

And on the first day of the Unleavened Bread, when they used to sacrifice the passover lamb,¹ his disciples say to him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready that thou mayest eat the passover?² —And he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith to them, Go into the city, and there will meet you a man, carrying a pitcher of water ; follow him, and wherever he goeth in, say to the house-holder, 'The Master saith, Where is my guest-chamber, where I may eat the passover with my disciples?' And he will show you a large upper room ready furnished ; and there make ready for us.—And the 12
13
14
15
16

¹ Lit. slay the passover (and in St. Luke 22⁷ ; 1 Corinthians 5⁷).

² The passover supper, Exodus 12^{8, 11}.

disciples set out, and went into the city, and found even as he had said to them ; and they made ready the passover.

17 And when it was evening, he cometh with the
 18 twelve. And while they sat at table, and were eating, Jesus said, Verily, I say to you, one of you will betray me ; he that is eating with me.—
 19 They began to be sorrowful, and to say to him one
 20 by one, Can it be I?—But he said to them, It is one of the twelve ; he that is dipping with me in
 21 the bowl. For the Son of man goes his way, even as it is written of him ; but alas for that man through whom the Son of man is betrayed ! well were it for that man if he had not been born !

22 And while they were eating, he took a loaf ;¹ and having blessed God, he broke it, and gave to them,
 23 and said, Take ; this is my body.—And he took a cup ; and, having given thanks, he gave to them ;
 24 and they all drank from it. And he said to them, This is my blood of the² covenant, the blood that is
 25 poured out for many. Verily, I say to you, I shall no more drink of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it, a new fruit, in the kingdom of God.

26 And, after singing a hymn, they went out to the
 27 Mount of the Olive Trees. And Jesus saith to them, All ye will find a stumbling-block ; for it is written,
 28 ' I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered abroad.' Yet, after I have risen, I will
 29 go before you into Galilee.—But Peter said to him, Even if all shall find a stumbling-block, yet will not
 30 I.—And Jesus saith to him. Verily, I say to thee, to-day, this very night, before a cock crow twice,
 31 thou wilt disown me thrice.—But he went on speaking vehemently, If I must die with thee, I will
 not disown thee.—And in like manner said they all.

32 And they go to a plot named Gethsemane ; and he saith to his disciples, Sit down here, until I have
 33 prayed.—And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be greatly amazed and sore
 34 troubled ; and he saith to them, My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even unto death ; wait here, and
 35 watch.—And going forward a little, he fell on the ground, and began to pray that, if it was possible,

¹ Or bread. ² Some MSS. insert, ' new.'

MARK 14

the hour might pass away from him. And he said, 36
 Abba,¹ Father, all things are possible to thee ; turn
 aside this cup from me ; yet not what I will, but
 what thou willest.—And he cometh and findeth 37
 them sleeping, and saith to Peter, Simon, sleepest
 thou? wast thou not able to watch one hour? Watch 38
 and pray, that ye come not into temptation ; the
 spirit indeed is eager, but the flesh is weak.—And 39
 again he went away and prayed, saying the same
 words. And again he came, and found them sleep- 40
 ing, for their eyes were growing very heavy ; and
 they knew not what to answer him. And he cometh 41
 the third time, and saith to them, Do ye sleep on,
 then, and take your rest?² it is enough ; the hour
 hath come ; behold, the Son of man is betrayed
 into the hands of the sinners. Arise, let us be 42
 going ; behold, my betrayer is at hand.

And straightway, while he was yet speaking, 43
 Judas, one of the twelve, cometh up, and with him
 a multitude from the high priests—and the scribes
 and the elders, with swords and clubs. Now his 44
 betrayer had given them a token, saying, Whomeo-
 ever I shall kiss, that is he ; take him, and lead him
 away safely.—And when he came, straightway he 45
 went up to him, and saith, Rabbi !—and kissed
 him. And they set hands on him, and took him. 46
 But some one of the bystanders drew his sword,
 and smote the high priest's bondman, and struck 47
 off his ear. And Jesus spoke and said to them,
 As against a robber came ye out, with swords and 48
 clubs, to seize me? daily I was with you in the
 temple, teaching, and ye took me not ; but it is that 49
 the scriptures may be fulfilled.—And they all forsook 50
 him, and fled.

And a certain young man was following with him, 51
 having a linen sheet wrapped about him, over his
 naked body ; and they lay hold on him ; but leaving 52
 the linen sheet behind, he fled away naked.

And they led Jesus away unto the high priest ; 53
 and all the high priests and the elders and the scribes
 come together. And Peter followed him at a distance, 54
 even inside, into the court of the high priest ;

¹ The derivation of our word ' abba.' ² See note to St. Matthew 26 ⁴⁵.

and he was sitting with the officers, and warming himself at the blaze.

55 Now the high priests and the whole council were seeking witness against Jesus, to put him to death ;
 56 and they found none. For many bore false witness
 57 against him, and their witnesses agreed not. And some stood up and bore false witness against him,
 58 saying, We ourselves heard him say, ' I will destroy this sanctuary which was made by hands, and after three days I will build another, not made by hands.'
 59 —And not even so did their witness agree. And
 60 the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou not at all? what is it
 61 that these witness against thee?—But he held his peace, and made no answer. Again, the high priest began to ask him, and saith to him, Thou ! art thou
 62 the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?—And Jesus said, I am ; and ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming with the
 63 clouds of the heaven.—But the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What further need have we of
 64 witnesses? Ye have heard the blasphemy ; how seems it to you?—And they all condemned him as liable
 65 to death. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say to him, Prophecy !¹—And the officers smote² him with the palms of their hands.

66 And while Peter was below in the court, there cometh one of the maidservants of the high priest ;
 67 and seeing Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and saith, Thou also wast with the Nazarene, with Jesus.³ But he denied, saying, I neither know him, nor understand what thou sayest.—And he
 69 went forth outside into the outer court ;⁴ and the maid, seeing him, began again to say to the by-
 70 standers, This is one of them.—But again he kept on denying it. And again, a little later, the by-
 71 standers said to Peter, Surely thou art one of them ;
 72 for indeed thou art a Galilæan.—But he began to curse, and to swear, I know not this man of whom ye speak.—And straightway a second time a cock

¹ *i.e.*, speak by inspiration, not predict ; note to St. Matthew 7 ²¹.
² *l.it.* took. ³ *i.e.*, the man of Nazareth. ⁴ Some MSS. add, ' and a cock crew.'

crew. And Peter remembered the word, how Jesus had said to him, Before a cock crow twice, thou wilt disown me thrice.—And covering his head he wept.¹

And as soon as it was morning, the high priests 15
with the elders and scribes, and the whole council,
held a consultation, and bound Jesus, and took him
away, and delivered him up to Pilate. And Pilate 2
asked him, Art thou indeed the king of the Jews?—
And he answering saith to him, Thou speakest
truly.²—And the high priests accused him of many 3
things. And Pilate again asked him, saying, 4
Makest thou no answer? behold, of how many
things they accuse thee!—But Jesus made no 5
further answer; so that Pilate marvelled.

Now at festival-time he used to release unto them 6
any one prisoner, for whom they might intercede. 7
Now there was the man called Barabbas, lying bound
with the rioters, men who in the rioting had
committed murder. And the multitude went up, 8
and began to ask Pilate to do for them even as
he was wont. But Pilate answered them, saying, 9
Will ye that I release unto you the king of the
Jews?—for he began to see that for envy the high 10
priests had delivered him up. But the high priests 11
stirred up the multitude, that he should rather
release Barabbas unto them. But Pilate spoke 12
again and said to them, What shall I do then
with him whom ye call The king of the Jews?—But 13
they cried out again, Crucify him!—But Pilate said 14
to them, Why, what evil hath he done?—But they
cried out vehemently, Crucify him!—And Pilate, 15
wishing to satisfy the multitude, released unto them
Barabbas; and delivered Jesus, after scourging
him, to be crucified.

Now the soldiers led him away inside the court 16
(it was the palace); and they call together the whole
battalion.³ And they clothe him with purple; and 17
plattng a crown of thorns, they put it on him. And 18
they began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!—
And they were smiting him on the head with a reed, 19
and spitting upon him; and bowing their knees

¹ *Lit.* and putting upon he wept. R.V. has, And when he thought thereon he wept. Other renderings are, And casting dust upon his head he wept (Revelation 18³⁰), and the Vulgate, et cepit flere.

² See note to St. Matthew 26³². ³ See note to Acts 10¹.

MARK 15

- 20 they worshipped him. And when they had mocked him, they took the purple off him, and put on him his own garments. And they lead him out to crucify him.
- 21 And they impress a passer-by, coming from the country, Simon, a Cyrenian, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to take up his cross.
- 22 And they take¹ him to the place Golgotha (which
23 is, being translated, Place of a skull). And they offered him wine mingled with myrrh; but he
24 received it not. And they crucify him, and divide his garments among themselves, casting lots upon
25 them, what each should take. Now it was the
26 third hour;² and they crucified him. And above there was written the inscription of the charge against him,

THE KING OF THE JEWS.

- 27 And with him they crucify two robbers; one at his
28 right hand, and one at his left.³ And the passers-by were reviling him, shaking their heads, and saying, Ah! thou that destroyest the sanctuary and buildest
29 it in three days, come down from the cross, and
30 save thyself!—Likewise the high priests also, mocking among themselves, with the scribes, said,
31 He saved others; himself he cannot save. Let the Christ, the king of Israel, come down now from the cross, that we may see and believe.—And they that were crucified with him were reproaching him.
- 32 And when the sixth hour had come, darkness
33 came over the whole land until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?—which is, being translated, My God, my God, why hast thou
34 forsaken me? And some of the bystanders heard
35 it and said, Behold! he is calling Elijah.—But some one ran, charged a sponge with vinegar, put it on a reed, and offered him to drink, saying, Let he; let us
36 see whether Elijah is coming to take him down.—But
37 Jesus, uttering a loud cry, expired. And the veil of the sanctuary was rent into two from top to
38 bottom. Now when the centurion, who was standing by, facing him, saw that he thus expired,⁴ he said,

¹ Possibly 'carry.' ² i.e., 9 a.m. ³ The best MSS. omit verse 28: 'And the scripture was fulfilled that saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors.' ⁴ Some MSS., 'so cried out and expired.'

Truly this man was a son of God.—Now there were 40
 also women looking on from a distance ; among
 whom were Mary of Magdala, and Mary the
 mother of James the little and of Joses, and Salome ;
 who, when he was in Galilee, used to follow him and 41
 minister to him ; and many others, they that had
 come up with him to Jerusalem.

And when it was evening, because it was the 42
 Preparation (that is to say, the sabbath eve), there 43
 came Joseph of Arimathæa, a councillor of high
 rank, who himself also was looking for the kingdom
 of God ; and he took courage and went in unto
 Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. But Pilate 44
 wondered whether he was already dead ; and, calling
 for the centurion, he asked him whether he had been
 any while dead. And when he learnt it from the 45
 centurion, he granted the corpse to Joseph. And 46
 Joseph bought a linen sheet, and took him down, and
 wound him in the linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb
 which had been hewn out of rock ; and he rolled up
 a stone against the door of the tomb. But Mary of 47
 Magdala and Mary the mother of Joses were
 looking where he was laid.

And when the sabbath was past, Mary of Mag- 16
 dala, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome,
 bought spices, that they might go and anoint him.
 And very early on the first day of the week, when the 2
 sun had risen, they go to the tomb. And they were 3
 saying among themselves, Who will roll away for
 us the stone from the door of the tomb?—And 4
 looking up, they see that the stone had been rolled
 back ; for it was very large. And, going into the 5
 tomb, they saw a young man, sitting at the right
 side, arrayed in a white robe ; and they were
 amazed. But he saith to them, Be not amazed. 6
 Is it Jésus ye seek, the Nazarene, the crucified?
 He is risen, he is not here ; see the place where they
 laid him ! But go, tell his disciples, and Peter, ' He 7
 goeth before you into Galilee ; there ye shall see
 him, even as he told you.'—And they went out, and 8
 fled from the tomb, for trembling and amazement
 had hold of them ; and they said nothing to any
 one, for they feared. . . .

MARK 16

- 9 Now¹ when he had risen early on the first day
of the week, he appeared first to Mary of Magdala,
10 from whom he had cast out seven demons. She
went and took word to them that had been with
11 him, as they mourned and wept. And they, hearing
that he was alive and had been seen by her,
disbelieved.
- 12 But after these things he was manifested in a
different form to two of them, as they were walking,
13 on their way into the country. And they went
away, and took word to the rest ; neither believed
they them.
- 14 But afterwards he was manifested to the eleven
themselves, as they sat at table ; and he reproached
them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, in
that they believed not them that had seen him after
15 he had risen. And he said to them, Go into all the
world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation.
16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved ;
17 but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. And
these signs shall accompany them that believe ; in
my name they shall cast out demons, and shall
18 speak in new² tongues ; they shall take up serpents ;
and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt
them ; they shall lay hands on sick persons, and
they shall be well.
- 19 So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to
them, was taken up into heaven, and sat down at
20 the right hand of God. But as for them, they went
forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working
with them, and confirming the word by the signs
that followed it.³

¹ Verses 9-20 are missing in two of the oldest extant MSS., the Vatican and Sinaitic, but found in most of the others. ² Some MSS. omit 'new.' See Appendix VI. ³ Some authorities give (instead of verses 9-20) the following ending to this Gospel: 'But all things that had been commanded they reported briefly to Peter and his companions. But afterwards Jesus himself sent forth through them, from east even to west, the holy and incorruptible preaching of the eternal salvation.'

[It is almost certain that the original ending of this gospel has been lost (the Greek of verse 8 ending abruptly ['feared' implies an object, e.g., the people, as in St. Luke 22¹.]) as if a final page of the original MS. had been lost); and that verses 9 to 20, and what is given in the preceding note, were added, from different sources, to take its place in different MSS. The shorter ending seems to have been composed with a view to completing the narrative of verses 1-8; the longer appears to be part of an independent work (of which there were many; see St. Luke 1¹).]

THE GOSPEL:—

ACCORDING TO MATTHEW

The genealogy¹ of Jesus Christ, son of David, son of Abraham : 1

Abraham begat Isaac ; and Isaac begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Judah and his brothers ; and Judah begat Perez and Zerah from Tamar ; and Perez begat Hezrom ; and Hezrom begat Aram ; and Aram begat Aminadab ; and Aminadab begat Nashon ; and Nashon begat Salmon ; and Salmon begat Boaz from Rahab ; and Boaz begat Obed from Ruth ; and Obed begat Jesse ; and Jesse begat David the king ; 6

And David begat Solomon from the widow² of Uriah ; and Solomon begat Rehoboam ; and Rehoboam begat Abijah ; and Abijah begat Asa ; and Asa begat Jehoshaphat ; and Jehoshaphat begat Jehoram ; and Jehoram begat Uzziah ; and Uzziah begat Jotham ; and Jotham begat Ahaz ; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah ; and Hezekiah begat Manasseh ; and Manasseh begat Amon ; and Amon begat Josiah ; and Josiah begat³ Jeconiah and his brothers at the time of the carrying away to Babylon ; 11

And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jeconiah begat Salathiel ; and Salathiel begat Zerubabel ; and Zerubabel begat Abiud ; and Abiud begat Eliakim ; and Eliakim begat Azor ; and Azor begat Zadok ; and Zadok begat Achim ; and Achim begat Eliud ; and Eliud begat Eleazar ; and Eleazar begat Matthan ; and Matthan begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary ; and of her was born Jesus, who is called Christ.⁴ 16

So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations ; and from David unto 17

¹ *Lit.* book of genesis. ² This word is not expressed in the original. ³ A few MSS. add, ' Jehoiakim ; and Jehoiakim begat.' ⁴ *i. e.*, Anointed.

MATTHEW 1, 2

the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations ;
and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the
Christ fourteen generations.

18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ¹ was on this wise ;
When Mary his mother had been betrothed to Joseph,
she was found, before they came together, to be
19 with child by the Holy Spirit. But Joseph, her
husband, being a righteous man, and not wishing
to expose her to shame, was minded to put her
20 away privately. But when he thought on these
things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to
him in a dream, saying, Joseph, son of David, fear
not to take to thee Mary thy wife ; for that which
21 is begotten in her is by the Holy Spirit. She shall
bring forth a son, and thou shalt give him the
name Jesus ; for he shall save his people from their
22 sins.—Now all this hath come to pass that there may
be fulfilled what was spoken by the Lord through
the prophet, saying,

23 ' Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and
shall bring forth a son,
And they shall give him the name Immanuel ' ²
24 (which is, being translated, God with us). But
Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of
the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his
25 wife. And she remained a virgin till she had brought
forth a son³ ; and he gave him the name Jesus.

2 Now, when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judæa
in the days of Herod the king, behold, Wise-men⁴
2 from the east came to Jerusalem, saying, Where is
the king of the Jews that was born ? for we saw his
star at its rising,⁴ and we have come to worship
3 him.⁴—But when Herod the king heard it, he was
4 troubled, and so was all Jerusalem with him. And
gathering together all the high priests and scribes
of the people, he made inquiries of them where the
5 Christ should be born. But they said to him, In
Bethlehem of Judæa ; for thus it hath been written
through the prophet,

6 ' And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Judah,

¹ Some MSS., 'of the Christ.' ² Some MSS., 'her firstborn son'.
³ Greek, Magi (Wycliffe, astronomers). ⁴ Or in the East. ⁵ Or to
reverence him, pay him homage (and elsewhere).

MATTHEW 2

Art by no means least among the governors of
Judah ;

For out of thee shall come forth a governor,
Who shall be shepherd of my people Israel.'

Then Herod, privately calling the Wise-men, care- 7
fully ascertained from them at what time the star
appeared. And sending them to Bethlehem, he 8
said, Go, and make careful search concerning the
young child ; and when ye have found him, bring
me word, that I also may go and worship him.—
Now they, having heard the king, went their way ; 9
and, lo, the star that they saw at its rising¹ went
before them, until it came and stood over the place
where the child was ; but, when they saw the star, 10
they rejoiced with joy exceedingly great. And they 11
went into the house, and saw the child with Mary his
mother ; and they fell down and worshipped him,
and opening their treasures they offered him gifts,
gold and frankincense and myrrh. And, warned 12
in a dream not to return unto Herod, they went back
to their own country by another way.

But when they had gone back, behold, an angel 13
of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying,
Arise, and take the child and his mother, and flee
into Egypt, and stay there until I tell thee ; for
Herod will seek the child to destroy him.—And he 14
arose and took the child and his mother by night,
and withdrew into Egypt, and stayed there until the 15
death of Herod, that there might be fulfilled² what
was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,
' Out of Egypt I called my son.'

Then Herod, finding that he had been mocked by 16
the Wise-men, was exceedingly wroth, and sent, and
slew all the boys that were in Bethlehem, and in all
its districts, of two years of age and under, according
to the time that he had carefully ascertained from
the Wise-men. Then was fulfilled what was spoken 17
through Jeremiah the prophet, saying,

' In Ramah a voice was heard, 18
Weeping and much lamentation ;
Rachel weeping for her children ;
And she would not be comforted ; because
they are not.'

¹ Or in the East. ² Appendix V.

MATTHEW 2, 3

19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of
 the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,
 20 saying, Arise, and take the child and his mother,
 and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead
 21 that sought the child's life.—And he arose and took
 the child and his mother, and went into the land of
 22 Israel. But hearing that Archelaus was reigning
 over Judæa in place of his father Herod, he feared
 to go thither; but warned in a dream, he withdrew
 23 into the region of Galilee, and went and settled in a
 city¹ called Nazareth; that there might be fulfilled
 what was spoken through the prophets, 'He shall
 be called a Nazorean.'²

3 Now in those days there cometh John the Baptist,
 2 preaching in the wilderness of Judæa, saying,
 Repent; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.—
 3 For this is he that was spoken of through Isaiah
 the prophet, saying,

'A voice of one crying in the wilderness,
 Make ready the way of the Lord,
 Make his paths straight.'

4 Now John himself was wearing his garment of camels'
 hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his
 5 food was locusts and wild honey. Then there went
 out unto him Jerusalem and all Judæa and all the
 6 region round about the Jordan; and they were
 baptized³ by him in the river Jordan, confessing
 7 their sins. But seeing many of the Pharisees and
 Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them,
 Broods of vipers! who warned you to flee from the
 8 wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruit worthy
 9 of repentance; and think not to say within your-
 selves, 'We have Abraham for our father'; for
 I say to you, that God is able out of these stones
 10 to raise up children unto Abraham. But even now

¹ The word 'city' is used in the N.T. in a technical sense not affected by population, and often stands for what was really a mere village.

² The adjective 'Nazorean' is found in St. Matthew, St. Luke (18³⁷), St. John, and Acts. Some think it to be derived from the word meaning 'branch' in Isaiah 11¹, and thus = 'Messiah.' (The companion word 'Nazarene' (from Nazareth) is found in St. Mark and in St. Luke 4³⁴; 24¹⁰). The reference to the prophets is obscure; and any connection between Nazorean and Nazareth is doubtful. See note in Century Bible.

³ The word 'baptize' is used of sacred, ceremonial washing; by dipping, pouring, or sprinkling (see St. Luke 11³³).

the axe lieth at the root of the trees ; therefore every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. I indeed baptize you in¹ water unto repentance ; but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, and his shoes I am not worthy to take off. He will baptize you in the Holy Spirit and in fire ; his winnowing fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor, and will gather his wheat into the barn ; but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

Then goeth Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized by him. But John would have hindered him, saying, I need to be baptized by thee ; and comest thou to me?—But Jesus answered and said to him, Permit it now ; for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness.—Then he permitteth him. But Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straight-way from the water ; and, behold, the heavens were opened,² and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove, coming upon him ; and, behold, there came a voice out of the heavens, saying, This is my Son, the beloved, in whom I am well pleased.

Then Jesus was led up into the wilderness, by the Spirit, to be tempted³ by the devil.⁴ And having fasted forty days and forty nights, afterwards he hungered. And the tempter went up and said to him, If thou art God's Son, command that these stones become loaves of bread.—But he answered and said, It is written, ' Man shall not live on bread only, but on every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.'—Then the devil taketh him into the holy city ; and he set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and saith to him, If thou art God's Son, throw thyself down ; for it is written,

' He will give his angels charge concerning thee ' ;

And ' on their hands they shall bear thee up,
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Jesus said to him, It is written further, ' Thou shalt not make trial of the Lord thy God.'—Again, the

¹ Or with (and similar passages). ² Some MSS. add, ' to him.' ³ The root idea of ' tempt ' is to test, try, put to proof ; such testing may be an incitement to sin (a ' temptation '), or to anger (a provocation) ⁴ *Lit.* diabolos (slanderer) same word as in 1 Timothy 3²¹.

MATTHEW 4

- devil taketh him to a mountain exceedingly high, and showeth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them ; and he said to him, All these things I will give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.—Then saith Jesus to him, Get thee hence Satan ! for it is written, ‘ Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.’—
- 11 Then the devil leaveth him ; and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.
- 12 But, hearing that John had been imprisoned, he withdrew into Galilee ; and, leaving Nazareth, he went and settled in Capernaum, which is by the sea,¹ in the district of Zebulun and Naphtali ; that there might be fulfilled what was spoken through Isaiah, the prophet, saying,
- 15 ‘ Land of Zebulun, and land of Naphtali,
Towards the sea, beyond the Jordan,
Galilee of the Gentiles ;²
- 16 The people that dwelt in darkness
Saw a great light ;
And for them that dwelt in the region and shadow of death,
For them a light sprang up.’
- 17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent ; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
- 18 Now walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon (who is called Peter) and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea ; for they were fishermen. And he saith to them, Come after me, and I will make you fishers for men.—And they straightway left their nets, and followed him. And going on thence he saw two other brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in their boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets ;
- 22 and he called them. And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him.
- 23 And he was going about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues,³ and proclaiming the gospel⁴ of the kingdom, and curing every disease and every sickness among the people. And the report of him went forth into all Syria⁵ ; and they brought to

¹ *i.e.*, the sea (or lake) of Galilee. ² *Or* nations (and elsewhere).
³ Meeting-houses for worship. ⁴ *Or* good tidings. ⁵ *One MS.*, ‘all the region round about.’

MATTHEW 4, 5

him all that were sick, suffering from divers diseases and torments, possessed by demons, and epileptic,¹ and paralysed; and he cured them. And there 25 followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judæa, and from beyond the Jordan.

But seeing the multitudes, he went up into the 5 mountain; and when he had sat down, his disciples went up to him; and he opened his mouth, and 2 began to teach them, saying,

Happy² are the poor in spirit; for theirs is the 3 kingdom of heaven.

Happy are they that mourn; for they³ shall be 4 comforted.

Happy are the meek; for they shall inherit the 5 earth.⁴

Happy are they that hunger and thirst after 6 righteousness; for they shall be satisfied.

Happy are the merciful; for they shall obtain 7 mercy.

Happy are the pure in heart; for they shall see 8 God.

Happy are the peacemakers; for they shall be 9 called Sons of God.

Happy are they that have been persecuted for 10 righteousness' sake; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Happy are ye, when men shall reproach you and 11 persecute you, and, speaking falsely, say all manner of evil against you for my sake. Rejoice, and exult, 12 for your reward is great in heaven; for so they persecuted the prophets that were before you.

You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt lose 13 its flavour, with what shall it be salted? it is no longer of any use but to be thrown out and trodden under foot by men.

You are the light of the world. A city standing 14 upon a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a 15 lamp, and put it under the bushel; but they put it on the lamp-stand, and it shineth for all that are in the house. Even so let your light shine before 16

¹ Lunatic (A.V.). ² Blessed (A.V.); Proverbs 29¹⁸; Psalm 144¹⁸.
³ Or it is they that (and in next five verses); the pronoun being emphatic. ⁴ Psalm 37¹¹.

MATTHEW 5

men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.

- 17 Think not that I came to abolish the law, or the
 18 prophets. I came, not to abolish, but to fulfil. For,
 verily,¹ I say to you, until the heaven and the earth
 pass away, not one jot nor one tittle shall pass away
 19 from the law, until all things have come to pass.
 Therefore, whosoever shall do away with one of these
 least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall
 be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but who-
 soever shall carry them out and teach them, he shall
 20 be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say
 to you, that unless your righteousness shall exceed
 the righteousness of the scribes² and Pharisees, ye
 shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.
- 21 Ye have heard that it was said to those of old
 time, 'Thou shalt not murder,' and 'Whosoever
 shall murder shall be liable to the judgement,' and
 22 'Whosoever shall say to his brother, Empty-head!
 shall be liable to the council';³ but I say to you
 that every one who is angry with his brother⁴ shall
 be liable to God's judgement, and whosoever shall
 say, Thou fool! shall be liable to the hell⁵ of fire.
 23 Therefore, if thou art offering thy gift upon the
 altar,⁶ and there rememberest that thy brother hath
 24 anything against thee, leave there thy gift before
 the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to
 thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
- 25 Agree with thy opponent⁷ quickly, while thou art
 with him on the way; lest haply thy opponent⁷
 deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee
 26 to the officer, and thou be put into prison. Verily,
 I tell thee, thou wilt not come out thence, till thou
 hast paid the very last farthing.
- 27 Ye have heard that it was said, 'Thou shalt not
 28 commit adultery'; but I say to you, that every
 one who looketh on a married woman to covet her
 hath already committed adultery with her in his
 29 heart. But if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble,
 pluck it out, and cast it from thee; for it is expedient

¹ *Lit.* amen (and in other places). ² Not writers (as etymology might suggest) but scholars versed in the O.T. ³ The local court of discipline, meeting in the synagogue (10¹⁷). ⁴ Some MSS. add, 'without cause.' ⁵ Or Gehenna (and elsewhere), a valley in which the refuse of Jerusalem was burnt; practically, a 'destructor.' ⁶ Of the temple in Jerusalem. ⁷ Adversary (A.V.).

MATTHEW 5

for thee that one of thy members should perish,
 and not thy whole body be cast into hell. And if
 thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off,
 and cast it from thee ; for it is expedient for thee
 that one of thy members should perish, and not
 thy whole body go away into hell. Now it was
 said, ' Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him
 give her a notice of divorce ' ; but I say to you,
 that every one who putteth away his wife (except
 on account of fornication) causeth adultery to be
 committed with her ; and whosoever shall marry
 a woman that hath been put away committeth
 adultery.

Again, ye have heard that it was said to those of
 old time, ' Thou shalt not break thy oath, but shalt
 perform to the Lord thine oaths ' ; but I say to you,
 Swear not at all ; not by the heaven, for it is the
 throne of God ; nor by the earth, for it is the foot-
 stool under his feet ; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the
 city of the great King. Neither swear thou by thy
 head ; for thou canst not make one hair white or
 black. But let your words be ' Yea, yea ; Nay,
 nay ' ; and whatsoever is more than these comes
 from the evil one.¹

Ye have heard that it was said, ' An eye for an
 eye, and a tooth for a tooth ' ; but I say to you,
 Resist not an evil person ; but whosoever smiteth
 thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.
 And if any one would go to law with thee, and take
 thy coat, let him take thy cloak also. And whoso-
 ever shall impress thee for one mile, go with him two.
 To him that asketh of thee, give ; and from him
 that would borrow of thee, turn not away.

Ye have heard that it was said, ' Thou shalt love
 thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy ' ; but I say
 to you, Love your enemies, and pray for them
 that persecute you ; that ye may show yourselves
 children² of your Father who is in heaven ; for he
 maketh his sun to rise upon evil men and good, and
 sendeth rain upon righteous men and unrighteous.
 For if ye love them that love you, what reward
 have ye ? do not even the tax-gatherers³ the same ?

¹ Or cometh of what is evil. ² Lit. sons. ³ Publicans (A.V.) ; i.e., collectors of the Roman taxes.

MATTHEW 5, 6

47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye
more than others? do not even the heathen the
48 same? You therefore shall be perfect, as your
heavenly Father is perfect.

6 But take heed that ye perform not your righteous
deeds before men, to be seen by them ; otherwise
ye have no reward from your Father who is in
heaven.

2 Therefore, when thou givest alms, sound not a
trumpet¹ before thee, even as the hypocrites do in
the synagogues and in the streets, that they may be
honoured by men. Verily, I say to you, they have
3 received their reward. But thou, when thou givest
alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right
4 hand doeth,² that thine alms may be in secret ; and
thy Father, who seeth in secret, will recompense
thee.

5 And when ye pray, ye shall not be like the
hypocrites ; for they love to stand and pray in the
synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that
they may be seen by men. Verily, I say to you,
6 they have received their reward. But thou, when
thou prayest, enter thy inner chamber, and shut thy
door, and pray to thy Father who is in secret ; and
thy Father, who seeth in secret, will recompense thee.

7 But, in praying, use not vain repetitions, even as
the heathen do ;³ for they think that in their much
8 speaking they will be heard. Therefore be not like
them ; for⁴ your Father knoweth, before ye ask him,
9 what things ye need. Pray ye therefore after this
manner :—

Our Father, who art in heaven !
Hallowed be thy name,
10 Thy kingdom come,
Thy will be done,
As in heaven, so on earth ;
11 Give us this day our daily bread ;⁵
12 And forgive us our debts, as we also have
forgiven our debtors ;
13 And bring us not into temptation,⁶ but deliver
us from the evil one.⁷

¹ The pretended reason being to call the poor together to receive it (Wesley). ² A current proverb to express secrecy. ³ 1 Kings 18²⁶; Acts 19²⁴. ⁴ Some MSS. add, 'God.' ⁵ Or bread for the morrow. ⁶ Or trial. ⁷ Or from evil.

MATTHEW 6

For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly 14
 Father will also forgive you ;¹ but if ye do not forgive 15
 men, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

But when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites,² of a 16
 sad countenance ; for they disfigure their faces, that
 they may be seen by men to be fasting. Verily, I say 17
 to you, they have received their reward. But thou, 17
 when thou fastest, anoint thy head and wash thy face,
 that thou be not seen by men to be fasting, but by 18
 thy Father who is in secret ; and thy Father, who
 seeth in secret, will recompense thee.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, 19
 where moth and rust consume, and where thieves
 break in³ and steal ; but lay up for yourselves 20
 treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust
 consumes, and where thieves do not break in and
 steal ; for where thy treasure is, there thy heart also 21
 will be. The lamp of the body is the eye ; there- 22
 fore, if thine eye be sound, thy whole body will be
 full of light ; but if thine eye be diseased, thy whole 23
 body will be full of darkness. Therefore, if the light
 that is in thee is darkness, how great is the darkness !
 No one can serve⁴ two masters ; for either he will 24
 hate the one and love the other, or else he will cling
 to one and despise the other. Ye cannot serve⁴
 God and mammon.⁵ This is why I say to you, Be 25
 not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat or what
 ye shall drink ; nor yet for your bodies, what ye
 shall put on. Is not the life more than the food,
 and the body more than the raiment ? Look at 26
 the birds of the air ; they sow not ; they neither
 reap, nor gather into barns ; yet your heavenly
 Father feedeth them. Are not you of much more
 value than they ? But which of you, by being 27
 anxious, can lengthen his life by a span ?⁶ And as 28
 for raiment, why are ye anxious ? Observe the
 lilies of the field, how they grow ; they toil not,
 they spin not ; yet, I say to you, not even Solomon 29
 in all his glory was arrayed like one of them. But 30
 if God so clothes the grass of the field, which
 to-day is, and to-morrow is thrown into the oven,
 will he not much more clothe you, O men of little

¹ Ecclesiasticus 28⁴. ² Stage-players, actors. ³ *Lat.* dig through (the wall ; Job 24¹⁷). ⁴ *Or* be bondman to. ⁵ *i. e.*, riches, money. ⁶ *Or* add one cubit to his stature.

MATTHEW 6, 7

31 faith? Therefore be not anxious, saying, What
 32 shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Where-
 withal shall we be clothed? For after all these
 things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father
 33 knoweth that ye need all these things. But seek
 first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all
 34 these things shall be given you besides. Therefore
 be not anxious about to-morrow; for to-morrow
 will have its own anxieties. Sufficient for the day
 is its own trouble.

7 Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what
 2 judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged; and with
 what measure ye measure, it shall be measured to
 3 you. But why beholdest thou the mote¹ that is in
 thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that
 4 is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy
 brother, 'Let me pull the mote out of thine eye';
 5 when, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? Hypo-
 crite! first pull the beam out of thine own eye; and
 then thou wilt see clearly to pull the mote out of
 thy brother's eye.

6 Give not to dogs what is holy; neither throw your
 pearls before swine, lest haply they trample them
 under their feet, and turn and rend you.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall
 8 find;² knock, and it shall be opened to you. For
 every one that asks, receives; and he that seeks,
 finds; and to him that knocks, it shall be opened.
 9 Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall
 10 ask him for a loaf, will hand him a stone; or if he
 11 shall ask for a fish, will hand him a serpent? There-
 fore, if you, evil as ye are, know how to give good
 gifts to your children, how much more will your
 Father who is in heaven give good things to them
 12 that ask him! Therefore all things whatsoever ye
 would that men should do to you, even so do you
 also to them; for this is the law and the prophets.

13 Enter through the narrow gate; for wide is the
 gate and broad the way that leadeth to perdition,
 14 and they that enter thereby are many; for³ narrow

¹ Or speck. ² Console-toi; tu ne me chercherais pas, si tu ne m'avais trouvé.—PASCAL; Wisdom is found of them that seek her, Wisdom of Solomon, 6¹¹. ³ Some MSS., 'how.'

MATTHEW 7, 8

is the gate and straitened the way that leadeth to life, and they that find it are few.

Beware of false prophets, men who come unto you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves. From their fruits ye will know them. Do men gather grapes from thorns? or figs from thistles? Even so, every good tree bringeth forth good fruits; but the worthless tree bringeth forth bad fruits. A good tree cannot bear bad fruits, neither can a worthless tree bear good fruits. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is cut down, and is thrown into the fire. Therefore from their fruits ye will know them. Not every one who saith to me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me in that Day, 'Lord, Lord I did we not prophesy by thy name,¹ and by thy name cast out demons, and by thy name do many mighty works?' And then I will declare to them, I never knew you; depart from me, ye workers of iniquity.²

Therefore, whosoever heareth these my words, and doeth them, shall be likened to a prudent man, who built his house upon the rock; and the rain descended, and the streams came, and the winds blew, and they fell upon that house; and it fell not, for it was founded upon the rock. And every one who heareth these my words, and doeth them not, shall be likened to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand; and the rain descended, and the streams came, and the winds blew, and they smote upon that house; and it fell, and great was the fall thereof.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these words, the multitudes were astonished at his teaching; for he taught them as one having authority, and not as their scribes.

Now when he came down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, a leper came up and began to worship him, saying,

¹ To prophesy means primarily to tell forth the Divine will and purpose (the foretelling of future events is incidental, not essential). ² *Lit.* lawlessness.

MATTHEW 8

- Lord,¹ if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.—
- 3 And Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, saying, I will; be thou made clean.—And
- 4 straightway his leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus saith to him, See thou tell no one; but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for witness unto them.
- 5 Now when he entered Capernaum, there came up
- 6 to him a centurion,² beseeching him, and saying, Lord, my servant lieth in the house, paralysed,
- 7 grievously afflicted.—He saith to him, Shall I come
- 8 and cure him?—But the centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof; but simply say the word, and my
- 9 servant will be healed. For I also am a man under authority, having soldiers under myself; and I say to this one, 'Go,' and he goeth; and to another; 'Come,' and he cometh; and to my bondman, 'Do this,' and he doeth it.—Now when Jesus heard it,
- 10 he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily, I say to you, in no one in Israel have I
- 11 found so great a faith. But I say to you, that many will come from the east and from the west, and will sit down³ with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the
- 12 kingdom of heaven; but the sons of the kingdom will be cast out into the darkness outside; there the weeping will be, and the gnashing of teeth.—
- 13 And Jesus said to the centurion, Go thy way; as thou didst believe,⁴ so be it done unto thee.—And his servant was healed in that hour.
- 14 And when Jesus came into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-in-law lying in bed, and sick with a
- 15 fever. And he took her hand and the fever left her; and she arose, and began to serve him.
- 16 But when evening had come, they brought to him many possessed by demons, and he cast out the spirits with a word; and all them that were sick
- 17 he healed, that there might be fulfilled what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying, 'He himself took our infirmities, and bore our diseases.'

¹ The Greek, which is transliterated into 'Kyrie,' might be rendered, 'Sir,' or 'Master' (and elsewhere). ² A Roman officer in command of one hundred men; our 'captain.' ³ Or be guests, 22¹⁰. ⁴ Or hadst faith (and similarly elsewhere), the verb being formed from the noun rendered 'Faith.'

MATTHEW 8, 9

But Jesus seeing a multitude about him gave 18
 orders to depart to the other side. And a scribe 19
 came up and said to him, Master, I will follow thee
 whithersoever thou goest.—And Jesus saith to him, 20
 Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have roosts ;
 but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.—
 But another of the disciples said to him, Lord, suffer 21
 me first to go and bury my father.¹—But Jesus 22
 saith to him, Follow me ; and leave the dead to
 bury their own dead.

And when he had got into the boat, his disciples 23
 followed him. And, behold, a great tempest² arose 24
 on the sea, so that the boat was covered with the
 waves ; but he was asleep. And they went up and 25
 awoke him, saying, Save, Lord ; we perish !—And 26
 he saith to them, Why are ye cowardly, O men of
 little faith?—Then he arose, and rebuked the winds
 and the sea ; and there was a great calm. But men³ 27
 marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that
 even the winds and the sea obey him !

And when he had come to the other side, to the 28
 country of the Gadarenes,⁴ there met him two men
 possessed by demons, coming forth out of the tombs,
 exceedingly fierce, so that no one could pass that
 way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What 29
 hast thou to do with us, thou Son of God? hast
 thou come hither to torment us before the time?—
 Now a long way from them there was a herd of many 30
 swine, feeding. But the demons began to beseech 31
 him, saying, If thou cast us out, send us into the
 herd of swine. And he said to them, Go.—And 32
 they came out, and went away into the swine ; and,
 lo, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the
 sea, and they perished in the waters. But they that 33
 fed them fled, and went away into the city, and
 reported everything, and what had befallen the men
 possessed by demons. And, behold, all the city 34
 came out to meet Jesus ; and when they saw him, they
 besought him that he would go away from their district.

And getting into a boat he crossed over, and came 9
 to his own city. And, behold, they brought to him 2

¹ Meaning, wait till my father is dead and buried. ² Elsewhere rendered 'earthquake.' ³ The men (*i.e.*, the disciples), A.V. But see 16¹³ (same Greek). ⁴ Some MSS., 'Gergesenes.'

MATTHEW 9

a man, paralysed, lying on a bed. And Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the paralysed man, Child, be
3 of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven.—And, behold, some of the scribes said within themselves, This
4 man blasphemeth.—And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil things in
5 your hearts? Which indeed is easier? to say, 'Thy sins are forgiven'; or to say, 'Arise and walk'?
6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority on earth to forgive sins (then he saith to the paralysed man), Arise, take up thy bed, and go
7 to thy house.—And he arose and went away to his
8 house. But when the multitudes saw it, they were afraid, and glorified God, who had given such authority unto men.

9 But as Jesus was passing on thence, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting at the toll-house, and he saith to him, Follow me.—And he rose up and followed him.

10 And it came to pass, as Jesus was sitting¹ at table in the house, behold, many tax-gatherers and outcasts
11 came and sat down with him and his disciples. And the Pharisees seeing it said to his disciples, Why eateth your master with tax-gatherers and sinners?
12 —But he heard, and said, It is not the strong that
13 need a physician, but they that are sick. But go, and learn what this meaneth, 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice'; for I came not to call righteous men, but sinners.

14 Then there come to him John's disciples, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast, whereas thy
15 disciples fast not?—And Jesus said to them, Can the friends of the bridegroom² mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? But days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them, and
16 then they will fast. But no one putteth a piece of undressed cloth upon an old garment; for what is filled in to it teareth from the garment, and a worse
17 rent is made. Neither do men put new wine into old wine-skins; else the skins burst, and the wine is spilt, and the skins perish; but they put new wine into fresh skins, and both are preserved.

18 While he was speaking these things to them,

¹ Lit. reclining. ² Lit. sons of the bride-chamber.

MATTHEW 9

behold, a warden¹ came up, and began to worship him, saying, My daughter died just now ; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she will live.—And Jesus arose, and followed him ; and so did his disciples. 19

And, behold, a woman suffering from a discharge of blood for twelve years came up behind, and laid hold of the fringe of his cloak ; for she said within herself, If I may but lay hold of his cloak, I shall be saved.—But Jesus turning and seeing her said, Be of good cheer, daughter ; thy faith hath saved thee.—And the woman from that hour was saved. 20 21 22

And when Jesus went into the warden's house, and saw the flute-players, and the multitude making a tumult, he said, Withdraw ; for the damsel is not dead, but asleep.—And they laughed him to scorn. But when the multitude was put out, he went in and took her by the hand, and the damsel arose. And the report thereof went forth into all that land. 23 24 25 26

And as Jesus was passing on thence, two blind men followed, crying out and saying, Son of David, have mercy on us !—And when he had gone indoors, the blind men came to him ; and Jesus saith to them, Believe ye that I am able to do this ?—They say to him, Yea, Lord !—Then he touched their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you.—And their eyes were opened. And Jesus spoke sternly to them, saying, See that no one know it.—But they went out, and spread a report of him in all that land. 27 28 29 30 31

Now as they were going out, behold there was brought to him a dumb man possessed by a demon. And when the demon was cast out, the dumb spoke. And the multitudes marvelled, saying, Never was it so seen in Israel !—But the Pharisees said, By the prince of the demons he casteth out demons. 32 33 34

And Jesus was going about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, and proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom, and curing every disease and every sickness. But seeing the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were harassed, and prostrated, like 35 36

¹ Of a synagogue (see St. Mark 5²¹).

MATTHEW 9, 10

- 37 sheep without a shepherd. Then he saith to his disciples, The harvest indeed is plentiful, but the
- 38 labourers are few; pray therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he may send out labourers into his harvest.
- 10 And calling to him his twelve disciples, he gave them authority over demons, so as to cast them out, and to cure every disease and every sickness.
- 2 Now of the twelve apostles¹ the names are these; first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; and James the son of Zebedee, and John
- 3 his brother; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the tax-gatherer; James the son of
- 4 Alphæus, and Thaddæus; Simon the Cananæan,² and Judas the Iscariot,³ who betrayed him.⁴
- 5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, having charged them, saying, Into any way to the Gentiles set not out, and any city of the Samaritans enter not;
- 6 but go rather unto the lost sheep of the house of
- 7 Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom
- 8 of heaven is at hand.' Cure sick persons, raise dead ones, cleanse lepers, cast out demons; freely ye
- 9 received, freely give. Get no gold, nor silver, nor
- 10 copper, for your girdles, no wallet for journeying, nor two coats, nor shoes, nor staff; for the labourer
- 11 is worthy of his food.⁵ And whatsoever city or village ye enter, search out who in it is worthy; and
- 12 there abide, till ye depart. But as ye enter the house,
- 13 salute it; and if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it; but if it be not worthy let
- 14 your peace return unto you. And whosoever shall not welcome you, nor hearken to your words, shake
- 15 off, as ye depart out of that house or that city, the dust on your feet. Verily, I say to you, it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, than for that city.
- 16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves; show yourselves therefore wise as serpents,
- 17 and guileless as doves. But beware of men; for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their
- 18 synagogues they will scourge you;⁶ yea, and before

¹ The word 'apostles' (like 'emissaries,' 'missionaries') means men sent forth. ² i.e., the Zealot, one of a sect so called (St. Luke 6¹⁶). ³ i.e., the man of Kerioth (in Judah). ⁴ Or delivered him up (and elsewhere). ⁵ Or maintenance. ⁶ Acts 22¹⁹.

MATTHEW 10

governors and kings ye will be taken for my sake,
 for witness unto them and unto the Gentiles. But 19
 when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or
 what ye shall speak ; for there shall be given you
 in that hour what ye shall speak. For it is not 20
 you that speak ; but it is the Spirit of your Father
 that speaketh in you. But brother will deliver up 21
 brother to death, and the father his child ; and
 children will rise up against parents, and will put
 them to death. And ye will be hated by all men 22
 for my name's sake ; but he that endureth to the
 end, the same shall be saved. But when they 23
 persecute you in any city, flee to the next ; for verily,
 I say to you, ye will not have gone through the cities
 of Israel, before the Son of man hath come.

There is no disciple above his master, nor bond- 24
 man above his lord. It is enough for the disciple 25
 to become as his master, and the bondman as his
 lord. If they have called the master of the house
 Beelzebub,¹ how much more those of his household !
 Therefore fear them not ; for nothing hath been 26
 covered, that will not be uncovered ; and nothing
 hidden, that will not be made known. What I tell 27
 you in the darkness, speak it in the light ; and what
 ye hear spoken into the ear, proclaim it upon the
 house-tops. And be not afraid of them that kill the 28
 body, but are not able to kill the soul ; but rather
 fear him that is able to destroy both body and soul
 in hell.² Are not two sparrows sold for a penny ? 29
 and not one of them will fall to the ground without
 your Father's knowledge. But as for you, even the 30
 hairs of your heads have all been numbered. There- 31
 fore fear not ; you are of more value than many
 sparrows. Therefore, every one who shall acknow- 32
 ledge me before men, I will also acknowledge him
 before my Father who is in heaven ; but whosoever 33
 shall disown me before men, I will also disown him
 before my Father who is in heaven.

Think not that I came to send peace upon the 34
 earth ; I came to send, not peace, but a sword. For 35
 I came to set a man at variance with his father, and a
 daughter with her mother, and a daughter-in-law³

¹ Greek, Beezeboul, or Beelzeboul ; meaning, probably, Lord of the mansion (nether world). ² *Lit.* Gebenna. ³ Or bride.

36 with her mother-in-law ; and a man's enemies will
 37 be those of his own household. He that loveth
 father or mother more than me is not worthy of me ;
 and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is
 38 not worthy of me ; and he that doth not take his
 cross and follow after me is not worthy of me.
 39 He that has found his life will lose it ; and he that
 40 has lost his life for my sake shall find it. He that
 41 welcomes you welcomes me ; and he that welcomes
 me welcomes him that sent me. He that welcomes
 a prophet because he is a prophet¹ will receive a
 prophet's reward ; and he that welcomes a righteous
 man because he is a righteous man¹ will receive a
 42 righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give
 to drink to one of these little ones a cup of cold water
 only, because he is a disciple,¹ verily, I say to you,
 he shall in no wise lose his reward.
 11 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished giving
 directions to his twelve disciples, he went away
 thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 Now, when John heard in the jail of the works of
 3 the Christ, he sent by his disciples, and said to him,
 Art thou the Coming One? or are we to look for
 4 some other?—And Jesus answered and said to them,
 Go, and take word to John of what ye hear and see ;
 5 blind persons recover their sight, and lame walk,
 lepers are cleansed, and deaf hear, and dead persons
 are raised, and poor have good tidings preached to
 6 them ; and happy is he, whosoever shall find in me
 no cause of stumbling.

7 But as they were going, Jesus began to say to the
 multitudes concerning John, Why went ye out into
 the wilderness? was it to behold reeds shaken by
 8 the wind? But why went ye out? was it to see a
 man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that
 9 wear soft raiment are in kings' houses. But why
 went ye out? was it to see a prophet? Yea, I say
 10 to you, and much more than a prophet. (This is he
 of whom it is written,

' Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
 And he shall prepare thy way before thee.')

11 Verily, I say to you, among those born of women

¹ *Lit.* (relying) on the name of a prophet (righteous man, etc.).

MATTHEW 11

there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist ;
yet he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is
greater than he. But from the days of John the 12
Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven is taken by
force, and men using force seize upon it. For all 13
the prophets, and the law, prophesied until John.
And if ye are willing to receive it, he is Elijah that 14
was to come. He that hath ears, let him hear. 15
But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like 16
children sitting in the market-places, who call to
their fellows, and say, 17

We piped to you, and ye did not dance,

We sang lamentations, and ye did not wail.

For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they 18
say, ' He hath a demon.'¹ The Son of man came 19
eating and drinking, and they say, ' Behold, a man,
a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-
gatherers and sinners ! ' And Wisdom was pro-
nounced righteous by her works.²

Then, because they repented not, he began to 20
reproach the cities wherein his very many mighty
works had been done ; Alas for thee, Chorazin ! 21
alas for thee, Bethsaida ! for, if in Tyre and Sidon
had been done the mighty works that were done in
you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth
and ashes. But, I say to you, it will be more tolerable 22
for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement than for
you. And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted 23
unto heaven? unto Hades³ thou shalt go down ; for,
if in Sodom had been done the mighty works that
were done in thee, it would have remained until
this day. But I say to you, that it will be more 24
tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judge-
ment than for thee.

At that season Jesus spoke and said, I praise thee, 25
O Father, Lord of the heaven and of the earth, that
thou hast hidden these things from men wise and
understanding, and hast revealed them unto babes ;
yea, Father, that so it was well-pleasing in thy 26
sight. All things were delivered unto me by my 27
Father ; and no one knoweth the Son, except the
Father ; neither knoweth any one the Father, except

¹ Is possessed (is mad). ² Some MSS., ' by her children.' ³ *i.e.*, the
unseen place.

the Son, and him to whomsoever the Son willeth to
 28 reveal him. Come unto me, all ye that are weary
 29 and heavy-laden, and I¹ will refresh you.² Take
 my yoke upon you, and learn from me, seeing that
 I am meek and lowly in heart, and ye shall find rest
 30 for your souls ; for my yoke is easy, and my burden
 is light.

12 At that season Jesus went on the sabbath through
 the cornfields ; but his disciples hungered, and began
 2 to pluck ears of corn³ and to eat. But the Pharisees,
 seeing it, said to him, Behold, thy disciples are doing
 3 what it is not lawful to do on a sabbath.—But he
 said to them, Did ye never read what David did,
 when he and they that were with him hungered ;
 4 how he went into the house of God, and they ate
 the loaves that were set forth ;⁴ which it was not
 lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were
 5 with him, but only for the priests ? Or did ye never
 read in the Law, that on the sabbath the priests in
 the temple profane the sabbath and are guiltless ?
 6 But I say to you that something greater than the
 7 temple is here. But if ye had known what this
 meaneth, 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,' ye
 8 would not have condemned the guiltless. For the
 Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

9 And he went away thence, and went into their
 10 synagogue ; and, behold, a man with a withered
 hand. And they asked Jesus, saying, Is it lawful to
 cure on the sabbath?—that they might accuse him.
 11 But he said to them, What man of you will there be,
 that shall have a sheep, and, if it fall into a pit on
 the sabbath, will not lay hold of it, and lift it out ?
 12 Of how much more value then is a man than a sheep !
 Wherefore it is lawful on the sabbath to do well.—
 13 Then he saith to the man, Stretch forth thy hand.—
 And he stretched it forth, and it was restored,
 sound as the other.

14 But the Pharisees went out and consulted together
 15 against Jesus, that they might destroy him. But he,
 perceiving it, withdrew thence. And many followed
 16 him ; and he cured them all, and charged them not

¹ The pronoun is emphatic. ² For future service ; ego reficiam vos (Vulgate) ; I will give you rest (A.V.). ³ Or wheat. ⁴ The shew-bread (A.V.). See Leviticus 24⁵⁻⁹.

MATTHEW 12

to make him known ; that there might be fulfilled 17
 what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying,
 ' Behold, my servant whom I chose ; 18
 My beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased ;
 I will put my Spirit upon him,
 And he will declare judgement unto the
 Gentiles.
 He will not strive nor cry aloud ; 19
 Neither will any one hear his voice in the
 streets.
 A bruised reed he will not break, 20
 And smoking flax he will not quench,
 Till he send forth the judgement unto victory,
 And on his name Gentiles will set their hope.' 21
 Then was brought to him one possessed by a 22
 demon, blind and dumb ; and he cured him, so that
 the dumb man spoke and saw. And all the multi- 23
 tudes were amazed and said, Can this be the son of
 David?—But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, 24
 This man doth not cast out demons, except by
 Beelzebub, the prince of the demons.—But, knowing 25
 their thoughts, he said to them, Every kingdom
 divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and
 every city or family divided against itself will not
 stand. And if Satan casteth out Satan, he is 26
 divided against himself ; how then shall his kingdom
 stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, 27
 by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore
 they shall be your judges. But if by the Spirit of 28
 God I cast out demons, surely the kingdom of God
 hath come upon you. Or how can any one enter 29
 the strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless
 he first bind the strong man? and then he will
 plunder his house. He that is not with me is against 30
 me ; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.
 Therefore I say to you, Every sin and blasphemy 31
 shall be forgiven to men ; but the blasphemy against
 the Spirit will not be forgiven. And whosoever 32
 shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall
 be forgiven him ; but whosoever shall speak against
 the Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven him, neither 33
 in this age, nor in the age to come. Either call¹ the
 tree good and its fruit good ; or call the tree worthless

¹ Make (A.V.) ; our colloquial 'make out.' Cf. St. John 8¹².

MATTHEW 12

- and its fruit worthless ; for by its fruit the tree
 34 is known. Broods of vipers ! how can ye, evil
 as ye are, speak good things ? for out of the abund-
 35 ance of the heart the mouth speaketh. The good
 man out of his good treasure bringeth forth good
 things ; and the evil man out of his evil treasure
 36 bringeth forth evil things. But I say to you that
 every idle saying that men shall speak, they shall
 37 give account thereof in the day of judgement ; for
 by thy words thou wilt be pronounced righteous,
 and by thy words thou wilt be condemned.
- 38 Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees
 answered him, saying, Master, we would see a sign
 39 from thee.—But he answered and said to them, An
 evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign ;
 and no sign shall be given it, except the sign of Jonah
 40 the prophet ; for even as Jonah was three days and
 three nights inside the huge fish¹, so will the
 Son of man be three days and three nights² in the
 41 heart of the earth. Men of Nineveh will rise up in
 the judgement with this generation, and will con-
 demn it ; for they repented at the preaching of
 Jonah ; and, behold, something greater than Jonah
 42 is here. A queen of the south will rise in the judge-
 ment with this generation, and will condemn it ; for
 she came from the ends of the earth to hear the
 wisdom of Solomon ; and, behold, something
 greater than Solomon is here.³
- 43 When an unclean spirit hath gone out from a
 man, it passeth through waterless places, seeking
 44 rest, and findeth none. Then it saith, ' I will return
 to my house whence I came out ' ; and when it hath
 come, it findeth it unoccupied, and swept, and
 45 garnished. Then it goeth, and taketh with it seven
 other spirits more evil than itself ; and they go in,
 and settle there ; and the last state of that man
 becomes worse than the first. So shall it be to this
 evil generation also.
- 46 While he was yet speaking to the multitudes,

¹ Greek, *ketos* (one of the cetacea). ² By biblical usage, this may denote a whole period of ' a night and a day ' with contiguous portions of a preceding and a following day. Compare Esther 4¹⁶ with 5¹.

³ *Salamo erat sapiens, sed hic est Sapientia* (Bengel).

behold, his mother and his brothers¹ were standing
 outside, seeking to speak to him. And some one 47
 said to him, Behold thy mother and thy brothers
 are standing outside, seeking to speak to thee.—
 But he answered and said to him that told him, 48
 Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?—
 And stretching forth his hand towards his disciples 49
 he said, Behold my mother and my brothers ! for 50
 whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in
 heaven, he is brother to me, and sister, and mother.²

On that day Jesus went out of the house, and sat 13
 by the seaside, And there gathered together unto him 2
 great multitudes, so that he got into a boat, and sat ;
 and all the multitude were standing on the beach.
 And he spoke to them many things in parables, saying, 3
 Behold, a sower went out to sow ; and, as he 4
 sowed, some seeds fell by the wayside, and the birds
 came and devoured them. And others fell upon 5
 rocky places, where they had not much earth ; and
 straightway they sprang up, because they had no
 depth of earth ; but when the sun rose, they were 6
 scorched ; and, because they had no root, they
 withered away. And others fell upon thorns ; 7
 and the thorns came up and choked them. And 8
 others fell upon good ground, and yielded fruit,
 one a hundredfold, another sixty, another thirty,
 He that hath ears, let him hear. 9

And the disciples came up and said to him, Why 10
 speakest thou to them in parables?—And he 11
 answered and said, To you it hath been given to know
 the secrets of the kingdom of heaven, but to them
 it hath not been given. For whosoever hath,³ to him 12
 shall be given, and given in abundance ; but whoso-
 ever hath not,³ from him shall be taken away even
 that which he hath. The reason why I speak to them 13
 in parables is, that seeing they see not, and hearing
 they hear not, neither do they understand. And 14
 there is being fulfilled for them the prophecy of
 Isaiah, which saith,

¹ Brethren (A.V.). Whether these were children of Joseph by a former marriage, or were children of Joseph and Mary, is a matter of argument. But 'brothers' (as 'sisters' in 13⁴⁹) is the proper rendering. ² Cf. Homer, *Iliad*, 6⁴⁸⁹: But, Hector, thou to me art all in one, Sire, mother, brothers, thou, my wedded love. ³ Proverbial way of speaking of 'rich' or 'destitute' as to any matter in question.

MATTHEW 13

- ' By hearing ye will hear, and will not understand ;
 And seeing ye will see, and will not perceive ;
 15 For this people's hearts have waxed gross,
 And with their ears they have grown dull of hearing,
 And their eyes they have closed ;
 Lest at any time they should perceive with their eyes,
 And hear with their ears,
 And understand with their hearts, and turn back,
 And I should heal them.'
- 16 But as for you, happy are your eyes, for they see ;
 17 and your ears, for they hear. For verily, I say to you, many prophets and righteous men longed to see the things that ye see, and saw them not ; and to hear the things that ye hear, and heard them not.
- 18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower ;
 19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, the evil one cometh and snatcheth away that which hath been sown in his heart ; this man is the seed sown by the wayside.
- 20 But the seed sown upon the rocky places ; this is he that heareth the word and straightway with joy
 21 accepts it ; but he hath no root in himself, yet he endureth for a while ; but when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway
 22 he stumbleth. But the seed sown into the thorns ; this is he that heareth the word, and the care of the world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word,
 23 and he becometh unfruitful. But the seed sown upon the good ground ; this is he that heareth the word and understandeth it, who indeed beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, one a hundredfold, another sixty, another thirty.
- 24 Another parable he set before them, saying,
 The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man who
 25 sowed good seed in his field ; but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares¹ also among the
 26 wheat, and went his way. But when the blade sprouted, and formed fruit, then were seen the tares
 27 also. And the servants² of the householder came

¹ The darnel (*Lolium temulentum*). ² *Zt.* bondmen.

up and said to him, ' Master, didst not thou sow good
seed in thy field? how then came the tares?' And 28
he said to them ' An enemy did this.' But the
servants say to him, ' Willest thou then that we
go and gather them up?' But he saith, ' Nay; 29
lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root out
the wheat along with them. Leave both to grow to- 30
gether until the harvest; and at harvest time I will
say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind
them in bundles to burn them; but the wheat, get
it together into my barn.'

Another parable he set before them, saying, The 31
kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard seed,
which a man took and sowed in his field; which 32
indeed is the least of all the seeds; but when it hath
grown, it is the greatest of the herbs, and becomes
a tree, so that the birds of the air may come and
roost in its branches.

Another parable he spoke to them; The kingdom 33
of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and
covered up in three measures of meal, till it all was
leavened.¹

All these things Jesus spoke in parables to the 34
multitudes; and without a parable he used not to
speak anything to them; that there might be ful- 35
filled what was spoken through the prophet, saying,
' I will open my mouth in parables;

I will utter things that from the foundation²
have been kept hid.'

Then leaving the multitudes, he went indoors; and 36
his disciples came to him, saying, Explain to us the
parable of the tares of the field.—And he answered 37
and said, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of
man; the field is the world; the good seed, these 38
are the sons of the kingdom; the tares are the sons
of the evil one; the enemy that sowed them is the 39
devil; the harvest is the end of the world; the
reapers are angels. Therefore as the tares are 40
gathered up and are burnt with fire, so will it be in
the end of the world. The Son of man will send forth 41
his angels, and they will gather out of his kingdom all

¹ For the meal, cf. Genesis 18². The leaven was a piece of fermented dough from a previous baking. Apart from this passage and St. Luke 13²¹, leaven in the N.T. stands for an evil element or influence, a source of corruption. ² Some MSS. add, 'of the world.'

42 stumbling-blocks,¹ and them that work iniquity, and will cast them into the furnace of fire ; there the
43 weeping will be, and the gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which treasure a man, when he found it, hid ; and for joy thereof he goeth and selleth whatsoever he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant
46 seeking beautiful pearls ; but having found one pearl of great price, he went away and sold every thing that he had, and bought it.

47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a drag-net
48 cast into the sea and gathering of every kind ; which, when it was filled, they drew up on the beach ; and sitting down they gathered the good into buckets,
49 but the worthless they cast away. So it will be in the end of the world ; the angels will come forth and will separate the evil from among the righteous, and
50 will cast them into the furnace of fire ; there the weeping will be, and the gnashing of teeth.

51 Did ye understand all these things?—They say
52 to him, Yes.—And he said to them, This is why every scribe that hath become a disciple of the kingdom of heaven is like a man, a householder, one that bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these
54 parables, he departed thence. And coming into his own country, he began to teach them in their synagogue, so that they were astonished and said, Whence did this man get this wisdom, and his mighty works?²
55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and are not his brothers called James,
56 and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? and his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then did he
57 get all these things?—And they took offence about him. But Jesus said to them, A prophet is not without honour, except in his own country, and
58 in his own house.—And because of their unbelief he did not many mighty works there.

14 At that season Herod the tetrarch heard what was
2 reported of Jesus ; and he said to his attendants,

¹ Or snares. ² Or his powers.

MATTHEW 14

This is John the Baptist ; he is risen from the dead,
 and therefore these powers are working in him.—
 For Herod had taken John, and bound him, and had 3
 him put away into prison, on account of Herodias,
 his brother Philip's wife. For John said to him, It 4
 is not lawful for thee to have her.—And wishing to 5
 kill him, he feared the multitude, because they
 accounted him a prophet. But when Herod's 6
 birthday came, Herodias's daughter danced before
 them, and pleased Herod. Whereupon he promised 7
 with an oath to give her whatsoever she might ask.
 And she, urged on by her mother, saith, Give me 8
 here on a dish the head of John the Baptist.—And, 9
 grieved as he was, the king, for the sake of his oaths
 and of them that sat at table with him, commanded
 it to be given her. And he sent and beheaded John in 10
 the prison. And his head was brought on a dish and 11
 given to the damsel ; and she took it to her mother.
 And his disciples went, and took up the corpse, and 12
 buried him, and came and brought word to Jesus.
 But when Jesus heard of it, he withdrew thence in a 13
 boat, into a desert place apart. And the multitudes
 hearing of it followed him by land from the cities.
 And when he landed, he saw a great multitude, and 14
 had compassion on them, and cured their sick.

Now when evening had come, his disciples went up 15
 to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time
 is now past ; send away therefore the multitudes,
 that they may go off into the villages and buy
 themselves food.—But Jesus said to them, They 16
 need not go away ; give you them to eat.—But they 17
 say to him, We have here but five loaves and two
 fishes.—But he said, Bring them hither to me.— 18
 And he commanded the multitudes to sit down on
 the grass ; and he took the five loaves and the two
 fishes, and looking up into heaven he blessed God,
 and broke and gave the loaves to his disciples, but
 the disciples gave to the multitudes. And they all 20
 ate, and were satisfied ; and they picked up the
 broken pieces that remained over, twelve frails full.
 Now they that had eaten were about five thousand 21
 men, besides women and children.

And straightway he urged the disciples to get into 22
 the boat, and to go before him to the other side, while
 he should send the multitudes away. And when he 23

had sent them away, he went up into the mountain
 apart to pray; and when evening had come, he was
 24 there alone. But the boat was now many furlongs
 from the land,¹ in distress by the waves; for the
 25 wind was contrary. But in the fourth watch of the
 night he went unto them, walking over the sea.
 26 But the disciples seeing him walking on the sea were
 troubled, saying, It is a ghost!²—And they cried
 27 out for fear. But straightway Jesus spoke to them,
 28 saying, Be of good cheer, it is I; fear not.—But
 Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it is thou, bid
 me come to thee over the waters.—And he said,
 29 Come.—And Peter went down from the boat, and
 walked over the waters, and went³ unto Jesus.
 30 But seeing the wind, he feared; and beginning to
 31 sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me!—But
 straightway Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took
 hold of him, and saith to him, O man of little faith,
 32 wherefore didst thou doubt?—And when they had
 33 gone up into the boat, the wind fell. But they that
 were in the boat worshipped him, saying, Truly
 God's Son thou art!

34 And crossing over they came to the land, unto
 35 Gennesaret. And the men of that place recognised
 him, and sent into all that region, and brought to
 36 him all that were sick; and they besought him that
 they might but lay hold of the fringe of his cloak;
 and as many as laid hold were perfectly saved.

15 Then there come to Jesus from Jerusalem Phari-
 2 sees and scribes, saying, Why do thy disciples trans-
 gress the tradition of the ancients? for they wash
 3 not their hands when they take food.⁴—But he
 answered and said to them, Why do you also trans-
 gress the commandment of God for the sake of your
 4 tradition? For God said, 'Honour thy father and
 thy mother,' and, 'He that speaketh evil of father
 5 or mother, let him die the death'; whereas you say,
 'Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother,
 Anything wherewith I might have helped thee is
 6 "Given to God"; he shall not honour his father or
 his mother.' And ye have annulled the word⁵ of

¹ Some MSS., 'was now in the midst of the sea.' ² *Lit.* a phantasm
³ Some MSS., 'to go.' ⁴ *Lit.* eat bread. ⁵ Some MSS., 'the law.'

MATTHEW 15

God for the sake of your tradition. Hypocrites ! 7
 rightly Isaiah prophesied of you, saying,

‘This people honour me with their lips ; 8

But their hearts are far away from me.

But in vain they worship me, 9

Teaching as their lessons precepts of men.’

And calling to him the multitude he said to them, 10

Hear and understand. Not that which entereth the 11

mouth defileth, a man ; but that which proceedeth

out of the mouth, that defileth a man.

Then the disciples coming up say to him, Knowest 12

thou that the Pharisees were offended, when they

heard that saying?—But he answered and said, 13

Every plant that my heavenly Father planted not

will be rooted out. Let them alone ; blind guides 14

they are of blind men. But if a blind man guide a

blind man, both will fall into a pit.—But Peter 15

answered and said to him, Explain to us the parable.

—And he said, Are you also even yet without 16

understanding? Perceive ye not that whatsoever 17

goeth into the mouth passeth into the stomach, and

is cast out into the drain? But the things that 18

proceed out of the mouth, out of the heart they come

forth ; and it is they that defile a man. For out 19

of the heart come forth wicked thoughts, murders,

adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slan-

ders ; these are the things that defile a man ; but to 20

eat with unwashed hands defileth not a man.

And Jesus went out thence, and withdrew into the 21

region of Tyre and Sidon. And, behold, a woman, a 22

Canaanite, came out from that district, and cried,

saying, Have mercy on me, Lord, thou son of David !

my daughter is sorely beset by a demon.—But he 23

answered her not a word. And his disciples came

up, and began to ask him, saying, Send her away, for

she crieth after us.—But he answered and said, I was 24

not sent except to the lost sheep of the house of

Israel.—But she came and began to worship him, 25

saying, Lord, help me !—But he answered and said, 26

It is not seemly to take the children’s bread and to

throw it to the dogs.¹—But she said, Yea, Lord ; for 27

even the dogs¹ eat of the crumbs that fall from their

¹ *Lit. puppies.*

MATTHEW 15, 16

- 28 masters' table.—Then Jesus answered and said to her, O woman, great is thy faith; be it done unto thee even as thou willest.—And from that hour her daughter was healed.
- 29 And going away thence, Jesus went along the sea of Galilee, and he went up into the mountain, and sat there. And great multitudes came to him, having with them persons who were lame, maimed, blind, dumb, and many others; and they set them down at his feet, and he cured them; insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw dumb persons speaking, maimed restored, lame walking, and blind seeing; and they glorified the God of Israel.
- 32 But Jesus calling his disciples to him said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they have been with me now three days and have nothing to eat; and I am unwilling to send them away fasting, lest haply they faint on the way.—And the disciples say to him, Whence in a desert can we get loaves enough to satisfy so great a multitude?—And Jesus saith to them, How many loaves have ye?—And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes.—And he bade the multitude sit down on the ground; and he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and broke, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples gave to the multitudes. And they all ate and were satisfied; and they picked up the broken pieces that remained over, seven baskets full.
- 38 Now they that had eaten were four thousand men, besides women and children. And he sent away the multitudes, and got into the boat, and went unto the district of Magadan.¹
- 16 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and testing him asked him to show them a sign out of the
 2 heaven. But he answered and said to them,² When evening hath come, ye say, 'Fair weather! for the
 3 heaven is red'; and in the morning, 'Foul weather to-day! for the heaven is red and louring.' Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven; but
 4 the signs of the times ye cannot discern. An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and

¹ Some MSS., 'Magdala.' ² Some MSS. omit, 'When . . .' (end of verse 3).

MATTHEW 16

no sign shall be given it, except the sign of Jonah.—
And he left them and departed.

And the disciples, when they came to the other 5
side, forgot to take bread. But Jesus said to them, 6
Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees
and Sadducees.—But they began to argue among 7
themselves, saying, It is because we took no bread.
—But Jesus, getting to know it, said, O men of little 8
faith, why argue ye among yourselves, because ye
have no bread? perceive ye not yet, nor remember 9
the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many
frails ye took up? nor the seven loaves of the four 10
thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? How 11
is it ye do not perceive that I was not speaking to
you about bread? But beware of the leaven of 12
the Pharisees and Sadducees.—Then they under-
stood that he bade them beware, not of the leaven
of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and
Sadducees.

Now Jesus, having gone into the region of Caesarea 13
Philippi, began to ask his disciples, saying, Who say
men that the Son of man is?—And they said, Some 14
say, John the Baptist; but others, Elijah; and
others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.—He saith 15
to them, But who say you that I am?—And Simon 16
Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the
Son of the living God.—And Jesus answered and 17
said to him, Happy art thou, Simon Barjonah;¹
for flesh and blood hath not revealed it to thee,
but my Father who is in heaven. But I also say 18
to thee, that thou art Peter;² and upon this rock³
I will build my church;⁴ and the gates of Hades
shall not prevail against it.⁵ I will give to thee the 19
keys of the kingdom of heaven;⁶ and whatsoever
thou shalt forbid⁷ on earth will thereupon be for-
bidden⁷ in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt allow⁸
on earth will thereupon be allowed⁸ in heaven.—
Then he charged the disciples to tell no one that he 20
was the Christ.

¹ *i. e.*, son of Jonah (Bar=son, as in Bar-nabas, Bar-timæus; like our John-son, etc.). ² *i. e.*, a piece of rock (petros). ³ Greek, petra.
⁴ Or congregation, assembly (Greek, ecclesia=called out, summoned),
Appendix 18. ⁵ By detaining her Lord; Acts 2²⁴. ⁶ Cf. Isaiah 22²²;
Revelation 3⁷. ⁷ Or bind (bound). ⁸ Or loose (loosed).

MATTHEW 16, 17

- 21 From that time Jesus Christ¹ began to show his disciples that he must set out for Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders² and high priests and scribes, and be killed, and on the third day³
- 22 rise. And Peter took him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, God be merciful to thee, Lord! this shall never happen unto thee.—But he turned and
- 23 said to Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan! thou art a stumbling-block to me; for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.—Then said
- 24 Jesus unto his disciples, If any one wisheth to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever wisheth to save his
- 25 life will lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it. For, what will a man be
- 26 profited, if he shall gain the whole world, but forfeit his life? Or what will a man give in exchange for
- 27 his life? For the Son of man is to come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he will
- 28 render to each according to his conduct. Verily, I say to you, there are some of them that stand here, who will in no wise taste death till they have seen the Son of man coming in his kingdom.
- 17 And six days afterwards Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John his brother, and leadeth
- 2 them up into a high mountain apart; and he was transfigured before them, and his face shone as the sun; but his garments became white as the light.
- 3 And, behold, there appeared to them Moses and
- 4 Elijah, talking together with him. But Peter spoke and said to Jesus, Lord, it is well that we are here; if thou willest, I will set up three tents here, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.—
- 5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and, behold, a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my Son, the beloved, in whom
- 6 I am well pleased; hearken to him.—And the disciples hearing it fell on their faces, and were sore
- 7 afraid. And Jesus came near and touched them
- 8 and said, Rise, and be not afraid.—But lifting up their eyes, they saw no one except Jesus himself only.

¹ Some MSS. omit 'Christ.' ² The Greek word (*presbyteros*) means (a) an older man, (b) an 'elder' holding some rank or office (the idea of age being lost, as in our word Senator). ³ The next day but one, as is clearly shown by St. Luke 18²⁸, and Acts 27^{28, 29}.

MATTHEW 17

And as they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, Tell no one the vision, until the Son of man has risen from the dead.—And the disciples asked him, saying, Then why say the scribes that Elijah must first come?—But he answered and said, Elijah indeed cometh, and will restore all things ; but I say unto you, that Elijah hath come already, and they knew him not, but did with him whatsoever they would. Likewise also the Son of man is to suffer at their hands.—Then the disciples understood that he had spoken to them of John the Baptist.

And when they had come unto the multitude, there went up to him a man, kneeling to him, and saying, Lord, have mercy upon my son, for he is an epileptic¹ and in sad case ; for often he falleth into the fire, and often into the water. And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.—But Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him hither to me.—And Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out from him ; and from that hour the boy was cured. Then the disciples went up to Jesus privately, and said, Why could not we cast it out?—But he saith to them, Because of your little faith ; for verily, I say to you, if ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye will say to this mountain, ‘ Remove hence to yonder place,’ and it will remove ; and nothing will be impossible to you.²

Now while they were gathering together³ in Galilee, Jesus said to them, The Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men ; and they will kill him, and the third day he will rise.—And they were exceedingly sorry.

Now when they had come to Capernaum, the collectors of the temple-tax⁴ came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay temple-tax?—He saith, Yes.—And when he had come indoors, Jesus spoke first, saying to him, What thinkest thou, Simon? from whom do the kings of the earth collect customs or taxes? from their own sons? or from aliens?

¹ Lunatic (A.V.). ² Some MSS. add verse 21, ‘ But this kind goeth not out except by prayer and fasting.’ ³ Some MSS., ‘ while they abode.’ ⁴ Greek, the didrachma (about two shillings); see Exodus 30¹².

- 26 —And when he said, From aliens, Jesus said to
 27 him, Therefore the sons are free. Yet, lest we
 cause them to stumble, go to the sea, and cast a
 hook, and take the first fish that cometh up, and
 opening its mouth thou wilt find a shekel;¹ take
 that, and give it to them for me and for thee.
- 18 At that hour the disciples went up to Jesus,
 saying, Who then is greatest in the kingdom of
 2 heaven?—And calling a little child to him, he set
 3 him in the midst of them, and said, Verily, I say to
 you, unless ye turn,² and become like little children,
 ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.
 4 Therefore whosoever shall humble himself as this
 little child, he is the greatest in the kingdom of
 5 heaven. And whoso shall welcome one such little
 6 child in my name welcomes me; but whoso shall
 cause to stumble one of these little ones who believe
 on me, it were expedient for him that a big mill-
 stone should be hung about his neck, and that he
 7 should be sunk in the depth of the sea. Alas for
 the world, because of occasions of stumbling! for
 it must needs be that the occasions come; yet alas
 for the man through whom the occasion cometh!
 8 If thy hand or thy foot causeth thee to stumble,
 cut it off, and cast it from thee; it is well for thee
 to enter into life maimed or halt, rather than having
 two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal³
 9 fire. And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble,
 pluck it out, and cast it from thee; it is well for
 thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than
 having two eyes to be cast into the hell⁴ of fire.
 10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for
 I say to you, In heaven their angels continually
 behold the face of my Father who is in heaven.⁵
 12 What think ye? if any man hath a hundred sheep,
 and one of them go astray, will he not leave the
 ninety and nine upon the mountains, and doth he
 13 not go and seek the one that strayeth? And if so
 be that he find it, verily, I say to you, he rejoiceth
 more over it than over the ninety and nine that have
 14 not strayed. Even so it is not the will of your

¹ *Lit.* a stater, a silver coin = 4 Attic drachmas or 4 denarii (shillings).

² Be converted (A.V.). ³ *Lit.* age-long (æonian), and elsewhere. ⁴ *Lit.* Gehenna. ⁵ Some MSS. add verse 11, 'For the Son of man came to save that which was lost.'

MATTHEW 18

Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones
 should perish. But if thy brother do wrong,¹ go, 15
 show him his fault between thee and him alone ; if
 he hearken to thee, thou hast won thy brother. But 16
 if he hearken not, take with thee one or two more,
 that at the mouth of two witnesses or three every
 word may be confirmed. But if he heed them not, 17
 tell it to the congregation ; but if he heed not the
 congregation² also, let him be to thee as a heathen or
 a tax-gatherer. Verily, I say to you, whatsoever 18
 things ye shall forbid³ on earth will thereupon be
 forbidden³ in heaven ; and whatsoever things ye
 shall allow⁴ on earth will thereupon be allowed⁴ in
 heaven. Verily, I say to you further, if two of you 19
 shall agree on earth touching any matter whatsoever
 they shall ask, it shall come to pass for them from
 my Father who is in heaven. For where two or 20
 three are gathered together in my name, there am
 I in the midst of them.

Then Peter went up and said to him, Lord, how 21
 often shall my brother do me wrong, and I forgive
 him? until seven times?—Jesus saith to him, I say 22
 not to thee, Until seven times, but, Until seventy
 times seven.⁵ This is why the kingdom of heaven 23
 is likened unto a man, a king, who desired to settle
 accounts with his servants.⁶ Now when he began 24
 to settle, there was brought to him one that owed
 ten thousand talents.⁷ But as he could not pay, 25
 his lord commanded that he should be sold, and
 his wife, and his children, and all that he had,
 and payment be made. The servant therefore fell 26
 down, and began to worship him, saying, 'Have
 patience with me, and I will pay thee all.' And the 27
 lord of that servant, moved with compassion,
 released him, and forgave him the debt.⁸ But that 28
 servant, as he went out, met one of his fellow-
 servants, who owed him a hundred shillings ;⁹
 and he took him and held him by the throat, saying,
 'Pay whatever thou owest.' His fellow-servant 29

¹ Some MSS. add, 'against thee.' ² Our Lord's words, as in 5 ^{12, 14}, relate to the everyday life of the Jews in his own time. ³ Or blind (bound). ⁴ Or loose (loosed). ⁵ Perhaps, until seventy-seven times (see Genesis 4 ²⁵). ⁶ *Lt.* bondmen (and throughout.) ⁷ A talent—about £200. ⁸ *Lt.* loan. ⁹ *Lt.* denarii. The denarius was a Roman coin, of silver, about the size of our sixpence, the common daily wage of a labouring man in those times (20 ⁵).

therefore fell down, and began to beseech him, saying,
 'Have patience with me, and I will pay thee.'
 30 But he would not; but went away, and put him
 into prison, until he should pay what was due.
 31 His fellow-servants therefore, seeing what had
 happened, were exceedingly sorry, and went and
 32 informed their lord of all that had happened. Then
 his lord called him, and saith to him, 'Thou wicked
 servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou
 33 besoughtest me; shouldst not thou also have had
 mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy
 34 on thee?' And in his anger his lord delivered him
 to the torturers,¹ till he should pay all that was due
 35 to him. So my heavenly Father also will do to you,
 if ye from your hearts forgive not each his brother.

19 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these
 sayings, he departed from Galilee, and went into
 2 the district of Judæa beyond the Jordan; and great
 multitudes followed him, and he cured them there.
 3 And there came to him some Pharisees, testing
 him and saying, Is it lawful to put away one's wife
 4 for every cause?—And he answered and said, Did
 ye never read that the Creator made them from the
 5 beginning 'a male and a female,' and said, For
 this cause a man shall leave his father and mother,
 and shall cleave to his wife, and the two shall
 6 become one flesh? So then they are no longer
 two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God joined
 7 together, let not man put asunder.—They say to
 him, Then why did Moses command to give a written
 8 notice of divorce, and to put her away?—He saith
 to them, Moses, looking to your hardness of heart,
 permitted you to put away your wives, but it hath
 9 not been so from the beginning. But I say to you,
 Whosoever shall put away his wife (except for
 fornication) and shall marry another, committeth
 10 adultery.²—The disciples say to him, If the case of
 the man with his wife is so, it is not expedient to
 11 marry.—But he said to them, Not all men can receive
 this saying, but those only to whom it hath been
 12 given to do so. For there are eunuchs, who were
 eunuchs from birth; and there are eunuchs, who

¹ Or gaolers. ²Some MSS. add, 'and he that marries a woman that has been put away commits adultery.'

MATTHEW 19

were made eunuchs by men ; and there are eunuchs, who have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

Then were brought to him little children, that he should lay his hands on them, and pray ; but the disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer the little children, and hinder them not, to come unto me ; for to such belongeth¹ the kingdom of heaven.—And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

And, behold, one came up to him, and said, Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may obtain eternal life?—And he said to him, Why askest thou me about what is good? One there is, who is good ;² but, if thou wouldst enter into life, keep the commandments.—He saith to him, Which?—And Jesus said, This, ' Thou shalt not murder ' ; ' Thou shalt not commit adultery ' ; ' Thou shalt not steal ' ; ' Thou shalt not bear false witness ' ; ' Honour thy father and thy mother ' ; and, ' Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.'—The young man saith to him, All these things I have observed ; what lack I yet?—Jesus said to him, If thou wouldst be perfect, go thy way, sell what thou hast, and give to poor persons, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and come, follow me.—But when the young man heard the saying, he went away sorrowful ; for he was one that had great possessions.

But Jesus said to his disciples, Verily, I say to you, with difficulty will a rich man enter into the kingdom of heaven. And, further, I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.—But when the disciples heard it, they were exceedingly astonished, saying, Who, then, can be saved?—But Jesus looked upon them, and said, With men this is impossible ; but with God all things are possible.—Then Peter answered and said to him, Lo, we left all things, and followed thee ; what, then, shall we have?—And Jesus said to them, Verily, I say to you, in the regeneration³ when the

¹ For construction, see 5². A.V. reads, 'for of such is.' ² Some MSS., 'Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, even God.' ³ Or new birth.

Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, you who followed me shall yourselves also sit on twelve
 29 thrones, ruling¹ the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that left houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive manifold more,² and shall gain
 30 eternal life. But many first will be last, and last
 20 first. For the kingdom of heaven is like a man, a householder, who went out early in the morning
 2 to hire labourers to work in his vineyard. And having agreed with the labourers for a shilling³ a day, he
 3 sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the
 4 market-place, doing nothing; and to those he said, 'Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you.' And they went their way.
 5 And again he went out, about the sixth and the ninth
 6 hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing, and saith to them, 'Why are ye standing here all the
 7 day, doing nothing?' They say to him, 'Because no one hired us.' He saith to them, 'Go ye also into
 8 the vineyard.' But when evening had come, the owner of the vineyard said to his steward, 'Call the labourers, and pay their hire, beginning with the last
 9 even on to the first.' Now when they of the eleventh
 10 hour came, they received each a shilling. And when the first came, they thought that they would receive
 11 more; and they also received each his shilling. But when they received it, they began to murmur
 12 against the householder, saying, 'These last worked for one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us who bore the burden of the day and the scorching
 13 heat.' But he answered one of them and said, 'My friend, I do thee no wrong; didst not thou agree
 14 with me for a shilling? Take what is thine, and go thy way; nay, I choose to give to this last, even as
 15 to thee. May I not do what I will with mine own?
 16 Or art thou envious⁴ because I am kind?' So the last will be first, and the first last.⁵

¹ *Lit.* judging, as the Judges of the O.T. (see also 2 Kings 16⁴). The Son of man has left the judgement-seat. Cf. St. Luke 19¹¹. ² Some MSS., 'a hundredfold.' ³ Greek denarius; note to 18²⁴. ⁴ *Lit.* is thine eye evil (envious)? ⁵ Some MSS. add, 'for there are many called, but few chosen'; cf. Ecclesiastes 9¹¹.

MATTHEW 20

Now as Jesus was about to go up to Jerusalem, 17
 he took the twelve aside by themselves, and on the
 way he said to them, Behold, we are going up to 18
 Jerusalem ; and the Son of man will be delivered to
 the high priests and scribes ; and they will condemn
 him to death, and will deliver him to the Gentiles to 19
 mock, and to scourge, and to crucify ; and the third
 day he will rise.

Then there came to him the mother of Zebedee's 20
 sons, with her sons, worshipping him, and asking
 something from him. And he said to her, What 21
 willest thou?—She saith to him, Speak the word that
 these my two sons may sit, one at thy right hand,
 and one at thy left hand, in thy kingdom.—But 22
 Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask.
 Are ye able to drink the cup that I am to drink?—
 They say to him, We are able.—He saith to them, 23
 My cup indeed ye shall drink ; but to sit at my right
 hand and at the left hand, this is not mine to give ;
 but it belongs to those for whom it hath been pre- 24
 pared by my Father.—And when the ten heard it, 25
 they were indignant about the two brothers. But
 Jesus called them to him and said, Ye know that the
 rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their
 great ones exercise authority over them. Not so is it 26
 among you ; but whosoever wisheth to become
 great among you shall be your servant ; and whoso- 27
 ever wisheth to be first among you shall be your
 bondman ; even as the Son of man came not to be 28
 ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his
 life a ransom for¹ many.

And as they went out from Jericho, a great 29
 multitude followed him. And, behold, two blind 30
 men sitting by the wayside, when they heard that
 Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Lord, have
 mercy on us, thou son of David.—But the multitude 31
 rebuked them, that they should hold their peace ;
 but they cried out the louder, saying, Lord, have
 mercy on us, thou son of David.—And Jesus 32
 stopped, and called them, and said, What will ye
 that I should do for you?—They say to him, Lord, 33
 that our eyes be opened.—And Jesus, moved with 34

¹ Or in exchange for.

- compassion, touched their eyes ; and straightway they recovered their sight, and followed him.
- 21 And when they drew near to Jerusalem, and came to Bethphage, to the Mount of the Olive Trees, then
- 2 Jesus sent two disciples, saying to them, Go into the village opposite you, and straightway ye will find an ass tied up, and a colt with her ; loose her, and
- 3 bring her to me. And if any one say anything to you, ye shall say, ' The Lord hath need of them ' ;
- 4 and straightway he will send them.—Now this hath come to pass that there may be fulfilled what was spoken through the prophet, saying,
- 5 ' Tell ye the daughter of Zion,
Behold, thy King cometh to thee,
Meek, and seated upon an ass,
And upon a colt the foal of an ass.'¹
- 6 And the disciples went, and did even as Jesus had
- 7 directed them. And they brought the ass and the colt, and put over them their cloaks ; and he took his seat
- 8 upon them. But the very great multitude spread their cloaks in the way ; while others were cutting branches from the trees and spreading them in the
- 9 way. But the multitudes that went in front of him, and those that followed, kept crying, saying,
Hosanna² to the son of David ;
Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the Lord ;
Hosanna in the highest !
- 10 And when he entered Jerusalem, all the city was
- 11 stirred, saying, Who is this?—But the multitudes said, This is the prophet Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee.
- 12 And Jesus went into the temple,³ and drove out all them that sold and bought in the temple ; and he overturned the tables of the money-changers,
- 13 and the seats of them that sold the doves ; and he saith to them, It is written, ' My house shall be called a house of prayer ' ; but you are making it a
- 14 robbers' den.—And blind persons and lame came to
- 15 him in the temple, and he cured them. But when the high priests and the scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the boys who were crying out

¹ Lit. a yoke-bearer (the ass, the general beast of burden in the East).
² Save now ; but here used as = Glory. ³ Some MSS. add, ' of God.'

MATTHEW 21

in the temple, and saying, 'Hosanna to the son of David,' they were indignant, and said to him, 16
 Hearest thou what these say?—But Jesus saith to them, Yea ; did ye never read, ' Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou hast prepared praise ' ?—
 And he left them and went forth out of the city to 17
 Bethany, and passed the night there.

Now, in the morning, as he was going back to the 18
 city, he hungered. And seeing a fig tree on the 19
 wayside, he went up to it, and found nothing thereon, except leaves only. And he saith to it, No fruit shall come from thee henceforward for ever.¹ And immediately the fig tree withered away. And when 20
 the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How did the fig tree immediately wither away?—But Jesus 21
 answered and said to them, Verily, I say to you, if ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this of the fig tree, but even if ye shall say to this mountain, ' Be thou taken up and cast into the sea,' it shall come to pass. And all things whatsoever ye 22
 shall ask in your prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

And when he went into the temple, the high priests 23
 and the elders of the people came to him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?—
 But Jesus answered and said to them, I also will 24
 ask you a question, which if ye tell me, I will tell you by what authority I do these things. John's 25
 baptism, whence was it? from heaven, or from men?—But they began to argue among themselves, saying, If we say, ' From heaven,' he will say to us, ' Then why did ye not believe him? ' but if we say, 26
 ' From men,' we fear the multitude ; for they all hold John as a prophet.—And they answered Jesus 27
 and said, We know not.—And he said to them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. But what think ye? A man had two 28
 children ; he went to the first and said, ' Child, go work to-day in the vineyard.' And he answered and 29
 said, ' I go, sir ' ; and went not. And he went to 30
 the second, and said likewise. But he answered and said, ' I will not ' ; afterwards he regretted it, and went. Which of the two did the will of his father?— 31

¹ *Lit. for the age (and elsewhere).*

They say, The latter.—Jesus saith to them, Verily,
 32 I say to you, the tax-gatherers and the harlots are
 going into the kingdom of God before you. For
 John came to you in the way of righteousness, and
 ye believed him not; but the tax-gatherers and the
 harlots believed him; whereas you, when ye saw
 it, yet felt no after regret, that ye might believe him.

33 Hear another parable; There was a man, a house-
 holder, who planted a vineyard, and set a fence about
 it, and dug a winepress in it, and built a watch-tower,
 and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another
 34 country. But when the fruit season drew nigh, he
 sent his servants¹ unto the husbandmen, to receive
 35 his fruits. And the husbandmen took his servants,
 and they beat one, another they killed, another they
 36 stoned. Again, he sent other servants, more in
 number than the first; and they did to them like-
 37 wise. But afterwards he sent unto them his son,
 38 saying, 'They will reverence my son.' But when
 the husbandmen saw the son, they said among them-
 selves, 'This is the heir! come, let us kill him, and
 39 get his inheritance.' So they took him, and threw
 40 him out of the vineyard, and killed him. Therefore,
 when the owner of the vineyard cometh, what will he
 41 do to those husbandmen?—They say to him,
 Wretches! he will wretchedly destroy them, and will
 let out the vineyard to other husbandmen, men who
 will render him the fruits in their seasons.—Jesus
 42 saith to them, Did ye never read in the scriptures,

'A stone which the builders rejected;
 The same became the corner-stone;
 From the Lord came this corner-stone,
 And it is marvellous in our eyes?'

43 Therefore I say to you, The kingdom of God will be
 taken away from you and will be given to a nation
 44 bringing forth the fruits thereof. And he that falleth
 on this stone will be broken to pieces; but on whom-
 soever it shall fall, it will crush him to dust.²

45 And the high priests and the Pharisees heard his
 parables, and perceived that he was speaking about
 46 them. And, though seeking to lay hold on him,

¹ *Lit.* bondmen (and throughout the parable). ² Some MSS. omit
 verse 44.

they feared the multitudes, because they took him for a prophet.

And Jesus answered and spoke to them in parables 22 again, saying,

The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man, a 2
king, who made a wedding for his son, and sent out 3
his servants¹ to call them that had been invited to 4
the wedding; and they would not come. Again, 4
he sent out other servants, saying, 'Tell them that 5
have been invited, Behold, I have made ready my 5
breakfast; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and 6
everything is ready; come to the wedding.' But 5
they made light of it, and went off, one to his farm, 6
another to his business; but the rest took his 6
servants, and treated them shamefully, and killed 7
them. But the king was angered, and sent his 7
soldiers, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt 8
their city. Then he said to his servants, 'The 8
wedding indeed is ready, but they that have been 9
invited were not worthy; go therefore to the outlets 9
of the highways, and as many as ye shall find invite 10
to the wedding.' And those servants went out into 10
the highways, and gathered together all that they 11
found, both bad and good; and the bride-chamber 11
was filled with guests. But when the king went in 12
to view the guests, he saw there a man that had not 12
put on a wedding-garment; and he saith to him, 12
'My friend, how earnest thou in hither, without a 13
wedding-garment?' But he was speechless. Then 13
the king said to the attendants, 'Bind him feet and 13
hands, and cast him out into the darkness outside'; 14
there the weeping will be, and the gnashing of teeth. 14
For many are called, but few are chosen.

Then the Pharisees went and consulted together, 15
that they might ensnare him in talk. And they 16
send to him their disciples, with the Herodians, 16
saying, Master, we know that thou art true,² and 17
teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for 17
any one; for thou regardest not the person of men. 18
Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful 17
to pay taxes to Cæsar,³ or not?—But Jesus, perceiv- 18
ing their wickedness, said, Why test ye me, ye

¹ Lit. bondmen (and throughout the parable). ² True is more than Truthful, is Trustworthy; Genesis 42¹¹ (we are true men); St. John 3³³. ³ A title (=Czar or Kaiser) of the Roman emperor.

MATTHEW 22

19 hypocrites? Show me the tax money.—And they
 20 brought him a shilling. And he saith to them, Whose
 are this image and the superscription?—They say,
 21 Cæsar's.—Then he saith to them, Render therefore
 to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the
 22 things that are God's.—And when they heard, they
 marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 On that day there came to him some Sadducees,
 24 saying¹ that there is no resurrection; and they
 asked him, saying, Master, Moses said, 'If any one
 die, having no children, his brother shall marry his
 25 widow, and raise up issue unto his brother.' Now
 there were with us seven brothers; and the first
 married and died; and, having no issue, he left his
 26 wife to his brother; likewise the second also, and
 27 the third, unto the seventh. Last of all the woman
 28 died. In the resurrection, then, of which of the
 seven will she be wife? for they all had her.—
 29 But Jesus answered and said to them, Ye err, not
 30 knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For
 in the resurrection, they neither marry, nor are
 31 given in marriage, but are as angels² in heaven. But
 as touching the resurrection of the dead, did ye
 never read what was spoken to you by God, saying,
 32 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,
 and the God of Jacob?' He is the God, not of
 33 dead men, but of living.—And when the multitudes
 heard, they were astonished at his teaching.

34 But the Pharisees, hearing that he had put the
 35 Sadducees to silence, gathered together. And one
 of them, a law-student,³ asked a question, testing
 36 him, Master, which is the great commandment in the
 37 Law?—And he said to him, 'Thou shalt love the
 Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy
 38 soul, and with all thy mind'; this is the great and
 39 first commandment. There is a second, like it.
 40 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.' On
 these two commandments depend the whole law and
 the prophets.

41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together,
 42 Jesus asked them a question, saying, What think ye
 of the Christ? whose son is he?—They say to him,

¹Some MSS., 'who say.' ²Some MSS. add, 'of God.' ³Lawyer (A.V.).

The son of David.—He saith to them, Then how doth 43
David in the Spirit call him 'Lord,' saying,

'The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right 44
hand,

Until I put thine enemies beneath thy feet?'

Then, if David calls him 'Lord,' how is he his son? 45

—And no one could answer him a word; neither 46
durst any one from that day forth ask him any more
questions.

Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to his 23
disciples, saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit¹ 2
on Moses' seat; all things, therefore, whatsoever 3
they say to you, do and observe. But do not accord-
ing to their works; for they say, and do not. 4
Yea, they bind heavy burdens, and lay them on
men's shoulders; whereas they themselves will not 5
put a finger to move them. But all their works
they do to be seen by men; for they widen their 6
phylacteries,² and enlarge their fringes,³ and love the
first place at feasts, and the front seats in the syna- 7
gogues, and to be saluted in the market-places, and
to be called by men, 'Rabbi.'⁴ But you, be not ye 8
called, 'Rabbi'; for one is your master, but you
all are brethren. And call no one upon the earth 9
your father; for one is your Father, the heavenly
one. Neither be called leaders; for one is your 10
leader, even the Christ. But he that is greatest 11
of you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall 12
exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever
shall humble himself shall be exalted.

But alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypo- 13
crites! for ye shut the kingdom of heaven in men's
faces; for you yourselves enter not, and such as
are entering ye do not allow to enter.⁵

Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! 15
for ye traverse sea and land to make a single convert;⁶
and when he hath become one, ye make him twofold
more a son of hell⁷ than yourselves.

Alas for you, blind guides! who say, 'Whosoever 16

¹ *Lit.* sat down. ² *Or* amulets; small leather cases containing passages of scripture, worn during prayer on forehead and left arm. The Greek means literally, safe-guards, preservatives. ³ Numbers 15²⁸, ²⁹. ⁴ *i. e.*, teacher, master. ⁵ Some MSS. give 14: 'Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers, therefore ye will receive a heavier sentence.' ⁶ *Or* proselyte (new-comer). ⁷ *Lit.* Gehenna.

MATTHEW 23

shall swear by the sanctuary, it is nothing ; but
 17 whosoever shall swear by the gold of the sanctuary,
 he is bound ' ; fools and blind ! for which is greater,
 the gold, or the sanctuary which consecrated the
 18 gold? and, ' Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it
 is nothing ; but whosoever shall swear by the gift
 19 that is upon it, he is bound ' ; blind ones ! for which
 is greater, the gift, or the altar which consecrateth
 20 the gift? Therefore he that sweareth by the altar,
 sweareth by it and by all things that are thereon ;
 21 and he that sweareth by the sanctuary, sweareth by
 22 it and by him that dwelleth therein ; and he that
 sweareth by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God
 and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !
 for ye pay tithes of mint and anise and cummin ;
 and ye have left undone the weightier matters of the
 law—justice, and mercy, and faithfulness ; but
 these ye ought to have done, while not leaving the
 24 others undone. Blind guides ! who strain out the
 gnat, but drink down the camel.

25 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !
 for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter,
 but within they are filled through extortion and
 26 excess. Blind Pharisee ! cleanse first the contents
 of the cup, that its outside also may become clean.

27 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !
 for ye are like whited sepulchres, such as outwardly
 appear beautiful, but within are full of dead men's
 28 bones and all uncleanness. Even so you also out-
 wardly appear to men to be righteous, but within
 ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !
 for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and adorn
 30 the tombs of the righteous, and say, ' Had we lived
 in the days of our forefathers, we would not have
 been their accomplices in the blood of the prophets.'
 31 Wherefore ye bear witness to¹ yourselves that ye are
 32 sons of them that murdered the prophets. And you,
 33 fill ye up the measure of your forefathers ! Serpents,
 broods of vipers ! how are ye to escape from being
 34 sentenced to hell?² Therefore, behold, I send unto
 you prophets and wise men and scribes ; some of
 them ye will kill and crucify, and some of them ye

¹ Or against. ² *Lit.* Gehenna.

will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from
 city to city, that upon you may come all the righteous
 blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of
 Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zechariah
 (Barachiah's son),¹ whom ye murdered between the
 sanctuary and the altar. Verily, I say to you, all
 these things will come upon this generation.

Jerusalem, Jerusalem ! that killeth the prophets,
 and stoneth them that are sent unto her ! how often
 would I have gathered thy children together, even
 as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings ;
 and ye would not ! Behold, your house is left to
 you.² For I say to you, Ye shall not see me hence-
 forth, till ye shall say,

Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the
 Lord.

And Jesus went out from the temple and was going
 his way ; and his disciples came near to point out
 to him the buildings of the temple. But he answered
 and said to them, See ye not all these things ?
 Verily, I say to you, there will not be left here stone
 upon stone, that will not be thrown down.

Now as he was sitting upon the Mount of the
 Olive Trees, the disciples went up to him privately,
 saying, Tell us, when will these things be ? and
 what is the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the
 world ?—And Jesus answered and said to them,

Take heed that no one deceive you. For many
 will come in my name, saying, ' I am the Christ ' ;
 and they will deceive many. And ye will hear
 of wars and rumours of wars ; take heed, be not
 troubled ; for they must come to pass, but the end
 is not yet. For nation will rise against nation, and
 kingdom against kingdom ; and there will be
 famines and earthquakes in divers places. But all
 these things are the beginning of birth-pangs. Then
 they will deliver you up unto tribulation, and will
 kill you ; and ye will be hated by all the nations for
 my name's sake. And then many will stumble,
 and will deliver up one another, and will hate one
 another. And many false prophets will arise, and

¹ Really son of Jehoiada (2 Chronicles 24²⁰), but confused with the
 prophet Zechariah (Zechariah 1²). ² Some MSS. add, ' desolate.'

MATTHEW 24

- 12 will deceive many ; and by reason of lawlessness
being multiplied, the love of the many will grow
13 cold. But he that endureth to the end, the same
14 shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom
shall be proclaimed in the whole world for a witness
to all the nations ; and then will come the end.
- 15 Therefore, when ye see the abomination of desola-
tion, which was spoken of through Daniel the
prophet ; when ye see it standing in a holy place—
16 he that readeth, let him consider—then let such as
17 are in Judæa flee to the mountains ; he that is on the
roof, let him not go down to take his things out
18 of the house ; and he that is in the field, let him
19 not turn back to take his cloak. But alas for them
that are with child, and for them that give suck, in
20 those days ! But pray that your flight may not happen
21 in winter, nor yet on a sabbath ; for then there will be
great tribulation, such as hath not come from the
beginning of the world until now ; no, nor ever again
22 will come. And unless those days had been shortened,
not one person would have been saved ; but for the
sake of the chosen those days will be shortened.
- 23 If any one shall then say to you, ' Behold ! here
is the Christ ! ' or, ' Here he is ! ' believe it not.
24 For there will arise false christs and false prophets,
and they will show great signs, and wonders, so as to
25 deceive, if it be possible, even the chosen. Behold,
26 I have told you beforehand. Therefore, if they
shall say to you, ' Behold, he is in the wilderness,'
go not forth ; ' Behold, he is in the inner chambers,'
27 believe it not. For as the lightning cometh forth
from the east and is seen even unto the west, so will
28 the coming of the Son of man be. Wherever the
carcase is, there will the vultures gather together.
- 29 But immediately after the tribulation of those
days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not
give her light, and the stars will fall from the heaven,
30 and the powers of the heavens will be shaken ; and
then will be seen the sign of the Son of man, in
heaven. And then will all the tribes of the earth wail ;
and they shall see the Son of man coming on the
31 clouds of the heaven with power and great glory. And
he will send forth his angels with a great trumpet, and
they will gather together his chosen from the four
winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.

Now from the fig tree learn its parable ; when its 32
 branch hath now become tender, and is putting
 forth its leaves, ye know that summer is nigh ; so 33
 also you, when ye see all these things, know ye that
 he¹ is nigh, at the doors. Verily, I say to you, this 34
 generation will not pass away, till all these things
 have come to pass. The heaven and the earth will pass 35
 away ; but my words will not pass away. But of that 36
 day and hour no one knoweth, not even the angels
 of heaven, nor yet the Son,² but the Father only.

For as the days of Noah were, so will the coming 37
 of the Son of man be. For as in those days, the 38
 days before the flood, they were feeding and drinking,
 were marrying and giving in marriage, until the day *
 that Noah entered the ark, and they knew not until 39
 the flood came and carried them all away ; so will
 also the coming of the Son of man be. Then there 40
 will be two men in the field ; one is taken, and one
 is left ; two women grinding at the mill ;³ one is 41
 taken, and one is left. Watch therefore, for ye 42
 know not what day your Lord cometh. But this ye 43
 know, that if the master of the house had known in
 what watch the thief was coming, he would have
 watched, and would not have let his house be broken
 into. Therefore make yourselves also ready ; for 44
 in an hour that ye think not the Son of man
 cometh.

Who then is the faithful and prudent servant,⁴ 45
 whom his lord set over his household to give them
 their food in due season? Happy is that servant⁴ 46
 whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47
 Verily, I say to you, he will set him over all his goods.
 But if that evil servant⁴ shall say in his heart, 48
 ' My lord delayeth his coming,' and shall begin to 49
 smite his fellow servants,⁴ and shall even eat and
 drink with the drunken, the lord of that servant⁴ 50
 will come in a day when he is not expecting, and in
 an hour when he knoweth not, and will cut him 51
 asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypo-
 crites ; there the weeping will be, and the gnashing
 of teeth.

Then the kingdom of heaven will be likened unto 25

¹ Or it (his coming). ² Some MSS. omit the last four words. ³ hand-
 mill, or quern. ⁴ Or bondman (men).

MATTHEW 25

ten virgins, who took their torches¹ and went forth
 2 to meet the bridegroom. Five of them were foolish,
 3 and five were wise; for the foolish took their
 4 torches, and took no oil with them; but the wise
 5 took oil in their vessels with their torches. But
 while the bridegroom tarried, they all fell aslumber
 6 and slept. But at midnight a cry is raised, 'Behold,
 7 the bridegroom! come forth to meet him!' Then
 all those virgins arose, and trimmed their torches.
 8 And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us of your oil,
 9 for our torches are going out.' But the wise
 answered, saying, 'Nay, there will not be enough
 for us and for you; go rather to them that sell,
 10 and buy for yourselves.' But while they were on
 their way to buy, the bridegroom came; and they
 that were ready went in with him to the wedding;
 11 and the door was shut. Afterwards there come the
 rest of the virgins also, saying, 'Lord, Lord! open
 12 to us!' But he answered and said, 'Verily, I say
 13 to you, I know you not.' Watch therefore, for ye
 know not the day nor the hour.

14 For it is like a man going abroad, who called his
 servants,² and delivered unto them his goods.
 15 And to one he gave five talents, to another two, to
 another one; to each according to his particular
 16 ability; and he went on his journey. Straightway
 he that received the five talents went and did business
 17 with them, and gained other five. Likewise he with
 18 the two gained other two. But he that received the
 one, went away and dug in the earth, and hid his
 19 lord's money. But after a long time the lord of
 those servants cometh, and setteth accounts with
 20 them. And he that received the five talents came
 up and brought other five talents, saying, 'Lord,
 five talents thou deliveredst to me; behold, I have
 21 gained other five talents.' His lord said to him,
 'Well done, good and faithful servant! over a few
 things thou wast faithful, over many things I will
 22 set thee; enter into the joy of thy lord.' He also
 with the two talents came up and said, 'Lord, two
 talents thou deliveredst to me; behold, I have

¹ Lamps (A.V.); but see Lord Roberts's *Forty-one Years in India*,
 Vol. 1. p. 13: 'The procession was lighted on its way by a torch-
 bearer, whose torch consisted of bits of rag tied round the end of a
 stick, upon which he continually poured the most malodorous of oils.'

² *Lit.* bondmen (and throughout the parable).

gained other two talents.' His lord said to him,
 'Well done, good and faithful servant! over a few
 things thou wast faithful, over many things I will
 set thee; enter into the joy of thy lord.' But he 24
 also that had received the one talent came up and
 said, 'Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man,
 reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering from
 where thou didst not winnow;¹ and in my fear 25
 I went away and hid thy talent in the earth; behold,
 thou hast thine own.' But his lord answered and 26
 said to him, 'Wicked and slothful servant, knewest
 thou that I reap where I sowed not, and gather from
 where I winnowed¹ not? Thou oughtest therefore 27
 to have placed my money at the bankers', and
 I should have gone and got back mine own with
 interest. Take away, therefore, the talent from 28
 him, and give it to him that hath the ten talents.'
 For to every one that hath² shall be given and given 29
 in abundance; but as for him that hath not,³ from
 him shall be taken away even that which he hath.
 And as for the unprofitable servant, cast him out 30
 into the darkness outside; there the weeping will be,
 and the gnashing of teeth.

But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, 31
 and all the angels with him, then he will sit on
 the throne of his glory; and before him will be 32
 gathered all the nations; and he will separate them,
 man from man,⁴ as the shepherd separateth the
 sheep from the goats; and he will set the sheep at 33
 his right hand, but the goats at the left. Then the 34
 King will say to those at his right hand, 'Come ye,
 the blessed of my Father, take possession of the king-
 dom prepared for you from the foundation of the
 world; for I hungered, and ye gave me food; I 35
 thirsted, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, and
 ye took me in; naked, and ye clothed me; I fell sick, 36
 and ye visited me; I was in prison, and ye came to
 me.' Then the righteous will answer him, saying, 37
 'Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and nourished
 thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? and when saw 38
 we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and

¹ Scatter, scattered (A.V.). ² See note on 13¹⁰. ³ One from another (A.V.). But this would mean 'nation from nation.' The Greek for 'them' is masculine plural, whereas that for 'nations' is neuter. This shows that we ought to translate, not simply construe.

39 clothed thee? and when saw we thee sick, or in
 40 prison, and went to thee?' And the King will
 answer and say to them, ' Verily, I say to you,
 as often as ye did it unto one of these my brethren,
 41 these least ones, unto me ye did it.' Then also he
 will say to those at the left hand, ' Depart from me,
 ye accursed, into the fire eternal which hath been
 42 prepared for the devil and his angels; for I hungered,
 and ye gave me no food; I thirsted, and ye gave me
 43 no drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me not in;
 naked, and ye clothed me not; sick, and in prison,
 44 and ye visited me not.' Then they also will answer,
 saying, ' Lord, when saw we thee hungry, or thirsty,
 or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did
 45 not minister to thee?' Then he will answer them,
 saying, ' Verily, I say to you, as often as ye did it
 not unto one of these least ones, unto me ye did
 46 it not.' And these will go away into eternal punish-
 ment,¹ but the righteous into life eternal.

26 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all
 2 these sayings, he said to his disciples, Ye know that
 after two days the Passover cometh, and the Son of
 man is delivered up to be crucified.

3 Then the high priests and the elders of the people
 gathered together to the court of the high priest, who
 4 was called Caiaphas;—and they took counsel together
 that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.
 5 But they said, Not during the festival, lest a tumult
 break out among the people.

6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of
 7 Simon the leper, there went up to him a woman with
 an alabaster cruse of very precious ointment; and
 she poured it upon his head as he sat at table.
 8 But when the disciples saw it, they were indignant,
 9 saying, To what purpose is this waste?² For this
 might have been sold for much, and given to poor
 10 persons.—But Jesus perceiving it said to them, Why
 trouble ye the woman? for it was a gracious work
 11 she wrought for me. For the poor ye have always
 12 with you; but me ye have not always. For in pouring
 this ointment over my body, she did it to prepare
 13 me for burying. Verily, I say to you, wheresoever this

¹ Or chastisement (1 St. John 4¹⁰). ² Lit. destruction, perdition.

MATTHEW 26

gospel shall be preached in the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

Then one of the twelve, the one called Judas 14
 Iscariot, went to the high priests, and said, What 15
 are ye willing to give me? and I will deliver him
 to you.—And they weighed¹ unto him thirty pieces
 of silver.² And from that time he sought opportunity 16
 to deliver him to them.

Now on the first day of the Unleavened Bread the 17
 disciples went up to Jesus, saying, Where wilt thou
 that we make ready for thee to eat the passover?—
 And he said, Go into the city to such a one, and say 18
 to him, 'The Master saith, My time is at hand; I am
 keeping the Passover at thy house with my disciples.'
 —And the disciples did as Jesus directed them, and 19
 they made ready the passover.

Now when evening had come, he was sitting at 20
 table with the twelve disciples. And while they were 21
 eating, he said, Verily, I say to you, one of you will
 betray me.—And, being exceedingly sorrowful, they 22
 began each to say to him, Can it be I, Lord?—
 But he answered and said, He that hath dipped 23
 his hand with me in the bowl, he will betray me. The 24
 Son of man goes his way, even as it is written of him;
 but alas for that man through whom the Son of
 man is betrayed! well were it for that man if he
 had not been born!—And Judas, his betrayer, 25
 answered and said, Can it be I, Rabbi?—He saith
 to him, Thou hast said it.³

Now while they were eating, Jesus took a loaf,⁴ 26
 and blessed God, and broke it, and giving to the
 disciples⁵ he said, Take, eat; this is my body—
 And he took a cup, and gave thanks, and gave to 27
 them, saying, Drink ye all from it; for this is my 28
 blood of the⁶ covenant, the blood that is poured
 out for many unto forgiveness of sins. But I say 29
 to you, I shall not drink henceforth of this fruit of
 the vine, until that day when I drink it with you, a
 new fruit, in the kingdom of my Father.

¹ Zechariah 11¹². ² 30 shekels=30 staters=120 denarii, say, £6
³ 'It' is not expressed in the original. The sentence seems to mean
 'Yes,' as in our colloquial, 'Now, you have said it!' ⁴ Or bread.
⁵ Cf. language of 14¹⁹. ⁶ Some MSS. insert, 'new.'

MATTHEW 26

- 30 And, after singing a hymn, they went out to the Mount of the Olive Trees.
- 31 Then Jesus saith to them, All you will find in me a stumbling-block this night ; for it is written, ' I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered abroad.' But after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee.—But Peter answered and said to him, If all shall find in thee a stumbling-block, I will never find it.—Jesus said to him, Verily, I say to thee, this night, before a cock crow, thou wilt disown me thrice.—Peter saith to him, Even if I must die with thee, I will not disown thee.—And likewise said all the disciples.
- 38 Then Jesus goeth with them to a plot called Gethsemane, and saith to his disciples, Sit down here till I have gone yonder and prayed.—And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and sore troubled. Then he saith to them, My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even unto death ; wait here, and watch with me.—And going forward a little, he fell on his face, and prayed, saying, My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from me ; yet not as I will, but as thou wilt.
- 40 —And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them sleeping, and saith to Peter, What, were ye not able to watch with me one hour ? Watch and pray, that ye come not into temptation ; the spirit indeed is eager, but the flesh is weak.—Again, a second time, he went away, and prayed, saying, My Father, if this cannot pass away unless I drink it, thy will be done !—And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes had grown heavy. And he left them again, and went away, and prayed a third time, saying the same words again. Then he cometh unto the disciples and saith to them, Do ye sleep on, then, and take your rest¹ ? behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.
- 46 Arise, let us be going ; behold, my betrayer is at hand.
- 47 And while he was yet speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and clubs, from the high priests and elders

¹ American Standard Version (margin), matching with St. Luke 22 ⁴⁶. 'Sleep on now and take your rest' (A.V.); but this seems rather artificial.

MATTHEW 26

of the people. Now his betrayer gave them a sign, 48
 saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he ; take
 him.—And straightway he went up to Jesus, and 49
 said, Hail, Rabbi !—and kissed him. And Jesus 50
 said to him, My friend, what doest thou here?¹
 —Then they came up and set hands on Jesus, and
 took him.

And, behold, one of them that were with Jesus 51
 stretched forth his hand, and drew out his sword,
 and smote the high priest's bondman, and struck
 off his ear. Then Jesus saith to him, Put back thy 52
 sword into its place ; for all they that take the
 sword will perish by the sword. Or thinkest thou 53
 that I cannot beseech my Father, and he will even
 now set by me more than twelve legions of angels?
 How then would the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus 54
 it must happen?—In that hour Jesus said to the 55
 multitudes, As against a robber came ye out, with
 swords and clubs, to seize me? Daily in the temple
 I sat teaching, and ye took me not.—But all this 56
 hath come to pass that the scriptures of the prophets
 may be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him
 and fled.

But they that had taken Jesus led him away to 57
 the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where the
 scribes and the elders had gathered together. But 58
 Peter was following him at a distance, even to the
 court of the high priest ; and he went in, and sat
 with the officers, to see the end.

Now the high priests and the whole council² were 59
 seeking false witness against Jesus, that they might
 put him to death ; and they found none, though 60
 many false witnesses came forward. But after- 61
 wards two came forward, and said, This man said,
 I am able to destroy the sanctuary of God, and after³
 three days to build it up.—And the high priest 62
 stood up and said to him, Makest thou no answer?
 What is it that these witness against thee?—But 63
 Jesus held his peace. And the high priest said to
 him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell
 us whether thou art the Christ, the Son of God.—
 Jesus saith to him, Thou hast spoken truly ; more- 64
 over, I say to you, hereafter⁴ ye shall see the Son

¹ Do (say) that for which thou art come (R.V.). ² i. e., the Sanhedrin. ³ In (A.V.). ⁴ *Lit.* from now.

of man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and
 65 coming on the clouds of the heaven.—Then the
 high priest rent his garments, saying, He hath spoken
 blasphemy ; what further need have we of witnesses ?
 66 lo, ye have just heard the blasphemy ; what think
 ye?—And they answered and said, He is liable to
 67 death.—Then they spat in his face, and buffeted
 him ; while some smote him with the palms of their
 68 hands, saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ ; who
 is it that struck thee ?

69 Now Peter was sitting outside in the court ; and
 a maid-servant went up to him, saying, Thou also
 70 wast with Jesus the Galilæan.—But he denied before
 them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.—
 71 And when he had gone out into the porch, another
 saw him ; and she saith to them that were there,
 72 This man was with Jesus the Nazorean.—And again
 73 he denied with an oath, I know not the man.—And
 after a little while the bystanders went up and said
 to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them ; for even
 74 thy speech betrayeth thee.—Then he began to curse
 and to swear, saying, I know not the man.—And
 75 straightway a cock crew. And Peter remembered
 the word that Jesus had said, Before a cock crow,
 thou wilt disown me thrice. And he went forth
 outside and wept bitterly.

27 Now when day broke, all the high priests and
 the elders of the people consulted together against
 2 Jesus, in order to put him to death. And when they
 had bound him, they led him away and delivered
 him to Pilate, the governor.

3 Then Judas, who betrayed him, when he saw that
 he was condemned, regretted it, and brought back
 the thirty pieces of silver to the high priests and
 4 elders, saying, I have sinned in betraying innocent¹
 blood.—But they said, What is that to us ? see thou
 5 to it.—And he flung the pieces of silver into the
 sanctuary and withdrew ; and went away and hanged
 6 himself. But the high priests took the pieces of silver,
 and said, It is not lawful to put them into the
 treasury,² seeing that they are the price of blood.—

¹ Some MSS., 'righteous.' ² *Lit.* the Corbanas, the gifts offered to God in the temple (see St. Mark 7¹³).

And they consulted together, and bought with them 7
 the potter's field, as a burial-place for strangers. 8
 Wherefore that field was called, unto this day, The 8
 field of blood. Then was fulfilled what was spoken 9
 through Jeremiah the prophet, saying, 'And they 9
 took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of the 10
 priced one, whom they priced on the part of the 10
 children of Israel; and they gave¹ them for the 10
 potter's field, as the Lord directed me.'

Now Jesus was set before the governor; and the 11
 governor asked him, saying, Art thou indeed the 11
 King of the Jews?—And Jesus said, 'Thou speakest 12
 truly—And while he was being accused by the high 12
 priests and elders, he made no answer. Then 13
 Pilate saith to him, Hearest thou not how many 14
 things they witness against thee?—And he answered 14
 him to never a word; so that the governor marvelled
 greatly.

Now at festival-time the governor was accustomed 15
 to release unto the multitude a prisoner, whomsoever 15
 they would. Now they had at that time a notorious 16
 prisoner, called Barabbas.² Therefore, when they 17
 had gathered together, Pilate said to them, Whom 17
 will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas,² or Jesus 18
 who is called Christ?—For he knew that for envy 18
 they had delivered him up.

Now while he was sitting on the judgement-seat, 19
 his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing 19
 to do with that righteous man; for I have suffered 20
 many things this day in a dream because of him.

But the high priests and the elders persuaded the 20
 multitudes to ask for Barabbas and to destroy Jesus. 20
 But the governor answered and said to them, Which 21
 of the two will ye that I release unto you?—And 21
 they said, Barabbas.—Pilate saith to them, What 22
 shall I do then with Jesus who is called Christ?— 22
 They all say, Let him be crucified!³—But he said, 23
 Why, what evil hath he done?—But they kept 23
 crying out vehemently, saying, Let him be crucified! 24
 —Now Pilate seeing that he was doing no good, but 24
 rather that a tumult was breaking out, took water⁴
 and washed his hands in sight of the multitude,

¹ Some MSS., 'I gave.' ² Here, but not in 20, 21, 26, a few authorities read 'Jesus Barabbas.' ³ See Appendix 12. ⁴ Deuteronomy 21^{1, 2}.

MATTHEW 27

saying, I am innocent of this bloodshed ;¹ see ye
25 to it.—And all the people answered and said, His
26 blood be on us, and on our children !—Then he
released unto them Barabbas ; but Jesus he scourged
and delivered to be crucified.

27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into
the palace, and gathered together about him the
28 whole battalion. And they stripped² him, and put
29 on him a scarlet mantle ; and plating a crown of
thorns, they put it on his head, and a reed into his
right hand ; and kneeling down before him, they
mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews !—And
30 they spat upon him, and took the reed, and kept
31 smiting him on the head. And when they had
mocked him, they took the mantle off him, and put
on him his own garments, and led him away to
crucify him.

32 Now as they went out, they found a man of Cyrene,
Simon by name ; him they impressed to carry his
cross.

33 And having come to a place called Golgotha (that
34 is to say, called Place of a skull), they gave him wine
to drink, mingled with gall ;³ and when he had tasted
35 it, he would not drink. But having crucified him
they divided his garments among themselves, casting
36 lots ;⁴ and sitting down they kept guard over him
37 there. And they set-up above his head the charge
against him, written,

THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS,

38 Then there are crucified with him two robbers, one
39 at the right hand, and one at the left. Now the
passers-by were reviling him, shaking their heads,
40 and saying, Thou that wouldst destroy the sanctuary
and build it in three days, save thyself, if thou art
the Son of God ; and come down from the cross.—
41 Likewise the high priests, with the scribes and elders,
42 mocking said, He saved others ; himself he cannot
save. He is King of Israel ! let him come down
43 now from the cross, and we will believe on him. He
trusteth on God ; let him deliver him now, if he
44 wants him ; for he said, I am God's Son.—And the

¹ Some MSS., 'of the blood of this righteous man.' ² Some MSS.,
'they clothed.' ³ Those about to be executed were given a narcotic.
⁴ What follows here in A.V. is without good authority.

MATTHEW 27

robbers also who were crucified with him were reproaching him with the same.

Now from the sixth hour¹ darkness came over all the land until the ninth hour. But about the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?—that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? And some of them that stood there heard it and said, He is calling Elijah.—And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and offered him to drink. But the rest said, Let be; let us see whether Elijah is coming to save him.²—But Jesus crying again with a loud voice yielded up his spirit. And, behold, the veil of the sanctuary was rent into two from top to bottom, and the earth quaked, and the rocks were rent. And the tombs were opened, and many bodies of the saints that had fallen asleep arose; and coming forth out of the tombs after he had risen, they went into the holy city and appeared to many.

Now when the centurion and they that were with him, keeping guard over Jesus, saw the earthquake and the things that were happening, they feared exceedingly, saying, Truly this was a son of God. And many women were there, looking on from a distance, they that had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering to him; among whom were Mary of Magdala, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's sons.

Now when it was evening, there came a rich man of Arimathæa (Joseph by name) who also himself had become a disciple of Jesus; this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate ordered it to be given up. And Joseph taking the body wrapped it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in his new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock; and after rolling a great stone to the door of the tomb he departed. But Mary of Magdala and the other Mary were there, sitting opposite the sepulchre.

Now on the morrow, being the day after the Preparation, the high priests and the Pharisees

¹ *i.e.*, 12 o'clock, noon. ² Some MSS. add, 'and another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came forth water and blood.'

- 63 gathered together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remembered that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive,
 64 'After three days I rise.' Give orders therefore that the sepulchre be secured until the third day, lest haply the disciples go and steal him, and say to the people, 'He is risen from the dead'; and the
 65 last deception will be worse than the first.—Pilate said to them, Take a guard; go, make it as secure
 66 as ye can.—And they went with the guard, and made the sepulchre secure, sealing the stone.
- 28 But after the sabbath,¹ as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, Mary of Magdala and the other Mary went to look at the sepulchre.
- 2 And, behold, there came a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord came down out of heaven, and drew near and rolled away the stone; and he sat
 3 upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and
 4 his raiment white as snow; and for fear of him the
 5 guards quaked and became like dead men. But the angel spoke and said to the women, As for you, fear not! for I know that ye seek Jesus, the crucified.
 6 He is not here; for he is risen, even as he said. Come,
 7 see the place where he² lay. And go quickly, and tell his disciples, He is risen from the dead, and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there ye shall see him; behold, I have told you.
- 8 And they departed quickly from the tomb with fear and great joy, and ran to take word to his
 9 disciples. And, behold, Jesus met them, saying, Rejoice!³ And they went up and took him by the
 10 feet, and worshipped him. Then Jesus saith to them, Fear not! go, take word to my brethren⁴ that they set out for Galilee, and there they shall see me.
- 11 Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard went into the city, and reported to the high
 12 priests everything that had happened. And when they had assembled with the elders, and had consulted together, they gave large moneys to the
 13 soldiers, saying, Say, 'His disciples came by night,
 14 and stole him while we slept'; and if this should come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him,

¹ R.V. has 'late on the sabbath.' *Vespere autem sabbati* (Vulgate).
² Some MSS., 'where the Lord.' ³ See St. John 16²². ⁴ *i. e.*, the disciples; or render 'brothers' (13⁴⁶).

MATTHEW 28

and keep you out of trouble.—And they took moneys, 15
and did as they were instructed. And this saying
was spread among the Jews until this day.

But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the 16
mountain whither Jesus had directed them to go.
And when they saw him, they worshipped him ; but 17
some doubted. And Jesus drew near and spoke to 18
them, saying, There has been given to me all author-
ity in heaven and over the earth. Go therefore, and 19
make all the nations disciples, baptizing them into the
name¹ of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy
Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatso- 20
ever I commanded you. And, lo, I am with you all
the days, even unto the end of the world.²

¹ =into the ownership (as money is paid into a man's name).

² *i. e.* the consummation of the age.

THE GOSPEL:—

ACCORDING TO LUKE

1 Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to draw
2 up a narrative concerning the things that have been
3 fulfilled among us, even as they were handed down
4 to us by them that from the beginning were eye-
5 witnesses, and ministers of the word, I also, having
6 traced out everything carefully from the beginning,
7 determined to write for thee, most excellent
8 Theophilus, an orderly account, that thou mightest
9 have exact knowledge concerning the matters where-
10 in thou wast instructed.

5 There was in the days of Herod, king of Judæa, a
6 certain priest named Zacharias, of the class¹ of
7 Abijah ; and he had for wife one of the daughters² of
8 Aaron ; her name was Elizabeth. And both were
9 righteous before God, walking blameless in all the
10 commandments and ordinances of the Lord. And
11 they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren,
12 and they both were advanced in years.

8 Now it came to pass, while he was serving the
9 priest's office before God in the order of his class,
10 it fell to his lot, according to the custom of the
11 priest's office, to go into the sanctuary of the Lord
12 and burn incense. And all the multitude of the
13 people were praying outside at the hour of incense.
14 And there appeared to him an angel of the Lord,
15 standing at the right side of the altar of incense.
16 And Zacharias, seeing him, was troubled, and fear
17 fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear
18 not, Zacharias ; for thy supplication was heard, and
19 thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son ; and thou

¹ 'Course' (A.V.) ; see 1 Chronicles 24¹⁰. ² *i. e.*, descendants (13²⁸).

shalt give him the name John. And thou shalt have 14
 joy and gladness ; and many will rejoice at his birth.
 For he shall be great before the Lord, and shall drink 15
 no wine nor strong drink ; and, even from his very
 birth, he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit. And 16
 many of the children of Israel he shall turn to the
 Lord their God. And he shall go before his face in 17
 the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn hearts of
 fathers towards children, and disobedient men to the
 wisdom of the righteous ; to make ready for the
 Lord a people prepared.—And Zacharias said unto 18
 the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an
 old man, and my wife is advanced in years.—And 19
 the angel answered and said to him, I am Gabriel, he
 that standeth in the presence of God, and I was sent
 to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these good
 tidings. And, because thou believedst not my words, 20
 which will be fulfilled in their season, behold, thou
 shalt keep silence, and not be able to speak, until the
 day when these things come to pass.—And the 21
 people were waiting for Zacharias, and they won-
 dered at his tarrying in the sanctuary. But when he 22
 came out, he could not speak to them, and they per-
 ceived that he had seen a vision in the sanctuary ;
 and he continued making signs to them, and re-
 mained dumb. And it came to pass, when the days 23
 of his ministration were fulfilled, he departed to his
 own house.

Now after those days Elizabeth, his wife, con- 24
 ceived ; and she secluded herself five months, saying,
 Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the days where- 25
 in he looked on me, to take away my reproach
 among men.

But in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent 26
 from God to a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, unto
 a virgin betrothed to a man named Joseph, of the 27
 house of David ; and the virgin's name was Mary.
 And he went in to her, and said, Rejoice, thou highly 28
 favoured! ¹ the Lord is with thee. ²—But she was 29
 much troubled at the saying, and began to reason
 in herself what manner of salutation this might be.
 And the angel said to her, Fear not, Mary ; for thou 30
 hast found favour with God. And, behold, thou 31

¹ Or highly graced ; see Ephesians 1 ⁶. ² Some MSS. add, 'Blessed art thou among women.'

32 shalt conceive in thy womb, and shalt bring forth a
 son ; and thou shalt give him the name Jesus. He
 shall be great, and shall be called Son of the Highest ;
 33 and the Lord God will give to him the throne of his
 father David ; and he shall be king over the house of
 Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no
 34 end.—But Mary said unto the angel, How shall this
 35 be, seeing that I am a virgin?—And the angel
 answered and said to her, The Holy Spirit will come
 upon thee, and the power of the Highest will over-
 shadow thee ; wherefore also the holy thing which
 36 is begotten¹ shall be called the Son of God. And,
 behold, Elizabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath
 conceived a son in her old age, and this is the sixth
 37 month with her that was called barren ; for from
 38 God no word will be impossible.—But Mary said,
 Behold, the handmaid of the Lord ; be it unto me
 according to thy word.—And the angel departed
 from her.

39 But Mary arose in those days, and went into
 40 the hill country with haste, to a city of Judah ;
 and entered the house of Zacharias, and saluted
 41 Elizabeth. And it came to pass, when Elizabeth
 heard Mary's salutation, the babe leapt in her womb ;
 and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit, and
 42 spoke out with a loud cry, and said, Blessed art thou
 among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb !
 43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my
 44 Lord should come unto me ? For, behold, when the
 sound of thy salutation came to my ears, the babe
 45 leapt in my womb for joy. And happy is she that
 believed ; for there shall be a fulfilling of the things
 46 that were spoken to her from the Lord.—And Mary
 said,

My soul magnifies the Lord,
 47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.
 48 For he hath regarded the lowliness of his hand-
 maiden.
 For, behold, henceforth all generations will
 call me happy ;
 49 For he that is mighty hath done for me great
 things ;
 And holy is his name.

¹ Some MSS. add, 'of thee.'

LUKE 1

And his mercy is unto generations and genera- 50
 tions upon them that fear him.
 He hath showed strength with his arm ; 51
 He hath scattered proud men in the imagina-
 tion of their hearts.
 He hath put down potentates from thrones, and 52
 hath exalted men of low degree ;¹
 Hungry men he hath filled with good things, 53
 and rich men he hath sent empty away.
 He hath given help to Israel his servant, 54
 That, even as he spoke unto our forefathers, 55
 He may remember mercy
 To Abraham and his posterity for ever.
 And Mary abode with her about three months, and 56
 returned to her own house.
 Now Elizabeth's time was fulfilled that she should 57
 be delivered ; and she brought forth a son. And 58
 her neighbours and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord
 had magnified his mercy towards her ; and they
 rejoiced with her. And it came to pass on the 59
 eighth day, that they came to circumcise the child ;
 and they were going to call him after his father's
 name, Zacharias. And his mother answered and 60
 said, Not so ; but he shall be called John.—And
 they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that 61
 is called by this name.—But they made signs to his
 father, what he would have him called. And he 62
 asked for a writing-tablet, and wrote, saying, His
 name is John.—And they all marvelled. And im- 63
 mediately his mouth and his tongue were set free,
 and he began to speak, blessing God. And fear 64
 came on all that dwelt round about them ; and all
 these sayings were noised abroad in all the hill 65
 country of Judæa. And all that heard them laid 66
 them up in their hearts, saying, What then will this
 child be?—For the hand of the Lord was with him.
 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy 67
 Spirit, and prophesied, saying,
 Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel, 68
 For he hath visited and wrought deliverance
 for his people,
 And hath raised up a horn² of salvation for us 69
 In the house of his servant David

¹ Ecclesiasticus 10¹⁴. ² Psalm 132¹⁷ ; Daniel 7¹, 8.

LUKE 1, 2

70 (Even as he spoke through the mouth of his
 holy prophets who have been from of old) ;
 71 Salvation from our enemies and from the hand
 of all that hate us ;
 72 To show mercy to our forefathers,
 And to remember his holy covenant,
 73 The oath that he swore unto Abraham our
 forefather ;
 74 That he would grant to us, that, delivered out
 of the hand of our enemies,
 We should serve him without fear,
 75 In holiness and righteousness before him, all
 our days.
 76 Yea, and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet
 of the Highest ;
 For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord,
 to make ready his ways ;
 77 To give his people knowledge of salvation,
 In forgiveness of their sins,
 78 Because of the heart of mercy of our God,
 Wherein the dayspring from on high shall visit¹
 us,
 79 To shine on them that dwell in darkness and
 the shadow of death,
 To guide our feet into the way of peace.
 80 And the child grew, and became strong in spirit, and
 was in the deserts till the day of his manifestation
 unto Israel.

2 Now it came to pass in those days, there went
 out a decree from Cæsar² Augustus, that all the
 2 world³ should be registered. (This first registration
 took place while Quirinius was governor of Syria.)
 3 And all were going each to his own city, to be
 4 registered. And Joseph also, because he was of
 5 the house and family of David, went up from Galilee,
 out of the city Nazareth, into Judæa, to the city of
 David, which is called Bethlehem, to get himself
 registered, together with Mary his betrothed, she
 6 being great with child. But it came to pass while
 they were there, the days for her to be delivered
 7 were fulfilled ; and she brought forth her son, the
 firstborn, and wrapped him in swaddling bands, and

¹ Some MSS., 'has visited.' ² *i. e.*, the Roman Emperor (A.C. 31-
 A.D. 14). ³ *Lit.* the inhabited (earth) ; practically, the Roman Empire.

LUKE 2

laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the guest chamber.¹

And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in the fields, and keeping watch over their flock by night. And an angel of the Lord came and stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were afraid with great fear. And the angel said to them, Fear not! for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the people; for unto you there was born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, who is Christ the Lord. And this is a sign to you; ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling bands and lying in a manger.—And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host; they were praising God, and saying,

Glory to God in the highest; and on earth peace among men in whom he is well pleased.²

And it came to pass, when the angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds were saying one to another, Come, let us go over even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing that hath come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.—And they went with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, with the babe lying in the manger. But when they had seen it, they made known about the saying that had been spoken to them concerning this child. And all that heard it marvelled at the things spoken unto them by the shepherds. But Mary kept in mind all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. And the shepherds went back glorifying and praising God for all that they had heard and seen, even as it had been spoken unto them.

And when eight days were fulfilled for his circumcision, the name Jesus³ was given him, the name given by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they took him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord (even as it

¹ Same word as in 22¹¹; 'inn' (A.V.). ² Some MSS., 'and on earth peace, good pleasure among men.' ³ i.e., Saviour (same as Joshua, in the O.T.).

LUKE 2

is written in the law of the Lord, ' Every male that
 24 openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord '),
 and to offer a sacrifice according to what is said in
 the law of the Lord, ' A pair of turtle-doves or two
 young pigeons.'

25 And, behold, there was in Jerusalem a man named
 Symeon ; and this man was righteous and devout,
 26 looking for the consolation of Israel ; and the Holy
 Spirit was upon him. And it had been revealed to
 him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death
 27 before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came,
 in the Spirit, into the temple ; and when the parents
 brought in the child Jesus that they might do for
 28 him according to the custom of the law, he also
 received him into his arms, and blessed God, and
 said,

29 Master, now thou art letting thy servant
 depart,

According to thy word, in peace ;
 30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,
 31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of
 all peoples ;

32 A light for revelation to the Gentiles,
 And a glory to thy people Israel.

33 And his father and his mother marvelled at the
 34 things that were spoken concerning him. And
 Symeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his
 mother, Behold, this child is set for the falling and
 the rising of many in Israel, and for a sign that is
 35 spoken against ; yea, and a sword will pass through
 thine own soul ; that thoughts out of many hearts
 may be revealed.

36 There was also Hannah, a prophetess, daughter of
 Phanael, of the tribe of Asher ; she was of a great
 age, having lived with a husband seven years from
 37 her maidenhood, and by herself as a widow, even
 to four score and four years ; and she departed
 not from the temple, worshipping with fastings and
 38 supplications night and day. And coming up at that
 very hour, she began to give thanks to God, and to
 speak of him to all that were looking for the
 deliverance of Jerusalem.

39 And when they had carried out all that the
 law of the Lord required, they went back into Galilee,
 to their own city Nazareth.

LUKE 2, 3

Now the child grew and became strong, filling with 40
wisdom ; and the favour of God was upon him.

And his parents used to go every year to Jerusalem 41
at the festival of the Passover. But when he was 42
twelve years of age, and they went up according to
the custom of the festival, and had fulfilled the days, 43
the boy Jesus, while they were returning, tarried
behind in Jerusalem ; and his parents knew it not.
But, supposing that he was in the company, they 44
went a day's journey, and sought for him among
their kinsfolk and acquaintances ; and, not finding 45
him, they went back to Jerusalem, seeking for him.
And it came to pass, after three days they found him 46
in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers,
both hearing them and asking them questions ; but 47
all that heard him were amazed at his understanding
and his answers. And when they saw him, they 48
were astonished ; and his mother said unto him,
Child, why didst thou treat us thus ? behold, thy 49
father and I are seeking thee, sorrowing.—And he
said unto them, Why was it that ye sought me ?
knew ye not that I must be in my Father's house ?¹
—And they understood not the saying that he spoke 50
to them. And he went down with them, and came 51
to Nazareth, and was subject unto them. And his
mother kept all these sayings carefully in her heart.
And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in 52
favour with God and men.

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius 3
Cæsar (Pontius Pilate being governor of Judæa, and
Herod being tetrarch² of Galilee, but his brother
Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituræa and Trachon-
itis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene, in the high
priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas), the word of God 2
came unto John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilder-
ness. And he went into all the region round about 3
the Jordan, preaching a baptism of repentance unto
forgiveness of sins ; as it is written in the book of 4
words of Isaiah, the prophet,

' A voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make ready the way of the Lord,

¹ Or about my Father's business. ² = ruler (*lit.* governor of a fourth part).

LUKE 3

- 5 Make his paths straight.
 Every valley shall be filled,
 And every mountain and hill shall be brought
 low ;
 And the crooked places shall become straight
 ways,
 And the rough roads smooth ;
 6 And all mankind shall see the salvation of God.²
 7 He said therefore to the multitudes that came
 forth to be baptized by him, Broods of vipers ! who
 8 warned you to flee from the wrath to come ? Bring
 forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and
 begin not to say within yourselves, ' We have
 Abraham for our father ' ; for I say to you, that
 God is able out of these stones to raise up children
 9 unto Abraham. But even now also the axe lieth
 at the root of the trees ; therefore every tree that
 bringeth not forth good fruit is cut down and thrown
 10 into the fire.—And the multitudes asked him, saying,
 11 What then are we to do ?—And he answered and
 said to them, He that hath two coats, let him impart
 to him that hath none ; and he that hath food, let
 12 him do likewise.—And there came tax-gatherers also
 to be baptized, and they said unto him, Master, what
 13 are we to do ?—And he said unto them, Exact no
 14 more than that which is appointed you.—And
 men serving as soldiers also asked him, saying,
 And we, what are we to do ?—And he said to them,
 Do violence to no one, neither accuse anyone falsely ;
 and be contented with your pay.¹
 15 But as the people were in expectation, and all were
 arguing in their hearts concerning John, whether he
 16 might be the Christ ;³ John answered, saying to
 them all, I indeed baptize you with water ; but
 there cometh he that is mightier than I, the thong of
 whose shoes I am not worthy to untie. He will
 17 baptize you in the Holy Spirit and in fire ; his
 winnowing fan is in his hand, thoroughly to cleanse
 his threshing-floor and to gather the wheat into his
 barn ; but the chaff he will burn up with fire
 unquenchable.
 18 So with many different exhortations he preached
 19 good tidings to the people. But Herod the tetrarch,

¹ Or allowances. ² The word Christ means Anointed.

LUKE 3, 4

being reprov'd by him concerning Herodias, his brother's wife, and concerning all the evil things that Herod had done, added this also to them all, that he shut up John in prison. 20

Now it came to pass, when all the people had been baptized, Jesus also having been baptized, and being in prayer, the heaven was opened, and the Spirit, the Holy Spirit, descended upon him in bodily form, like a dove ; and there came a voice out of heaven, Thou art my Son, the beloved ; in thee I am well pleased.¹ 21

And Jesus himself, when he began his work, was about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) son of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Jodah, the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubabel, the son of Salathiel, the son of Neri, the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, the son of Joshua, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Simeon, the son of Judah, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim, the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Sala, the son of Nahshon, the son of Aminadab, the son of Admin, the son of Arni, the son of Hezrom, the son of Perez, the son of Judah, the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor, the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Sula, the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jaret, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God. 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38

Now Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, turned back 4

¹ Or (with slight support) Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee (Psalm 2^v).

LUKE 4

from the Jordan, and for forty days was led in the
 2 Spirit in the wilderness, tempted by the devil. And
 in those days he ate nothing ; and when they were
 3 completed, he hungered. But the devil said to him,
 If thou art God's Son, command this stone to
 4 become a loaf of bread.—And Jesus answered unto
 him, it is written, ' Man shall not live on bread
 5 only.'—And leading him up¹ he showed him all the
 6 kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And
 the devil said to him, I will give thee all this
 authority, and the glory of them ; for unto me it hath
 been delivered ; and to whomsoever I will, I give it.
 7 Therefore if thou wilt worship before me, it shall all
 8 be thine.—And Jesus answered and said to him, It
 is written, ' Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
 9 and him only shalt thou serve.'—But he led him to
 Jerusalem, and set him on the pinnacle of the
 temple, and said to him, If thou art God's Son,
 10 throw thyself down hence ; for it is written,
 ' He will give his angels charge concerning thee,
 to protect thee ' ;
 11 And, ' on their hands they shall bear thee up,
 Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.'
 12 And Jesus answered and said to him, It is said,
 13 ' Thou shalt not make trial of the Lord thy God '—
 And when the devil had completed every temptation,
 he departed from him for a season.
 14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into
 Galilee ; and a report of him went forth throughout
 15 all the region round about. And he taught in their
 synagogues, being glorified by all.
 16 And he went to Nazareth, where he had been
 brought up ; and, as his custom was, he went into
 the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to
 17 read. And there was handed to him a roll of the
 prophet Isaiah ; and he opened the roll and found
 the place where it was written,
 18 ' The Spirit of the Lord is upon me ;
 Because he anointed me to bring good tidings
 to the poor ;
 He hath sent me to proclaim to the captives
 release, and to the blind recovery of sight,
 To send away released those that are crushed,

¹ See St. Matthew 4 6.

'To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.' 19
 And folding the roll he gave it back to the attendant, 20
 and sat down ; and the eyes of all in the synagogue
 were gazing on him. But he began to say unto 21
 them, To-day this scripture hath been fulfilled in
 your hearing.—And all bore him witness, and 22
 marvelled at the gracious words that proceeded out
 of his mouth ; and they said, Is not this Joseph's
 son?—And he said unto them, Ye will surely say to 23
 me this parable, 'Physician, cure thyself ; whatso-
 ever things we have heard of as done at Capernaum,
 do here also in thine own country.'—And he said, 24
 Verily, I say to you, no prophet is acceptable in his
 own country. But of a truth, I say to you, there were 25
 many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when
 the heaven was shut up for three years and six
 months, when there came a great famine upon all
 the land ; and unto none of them was Elijah sent, 26
 but only to Sarepta, in the land of Sidon, unto a
 woman, a widow. And there were many lepers in 27
 Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet ; and not
 one of them was cleansed, but only Naaman, the
 Syrian.—And they were all filled with wrath, as they 28
 heard these things in the synagogue ; and they rose 29
 up, and put him forth out of the city, and led him
 unto the brow of the hill on which their city was
 built, that they might throw him down headlong.
 But he, passing through the midst of them, went 30
 his way.

And he went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee. 31
 And he taught them on the sabbath, and they were 32
 astonished at his teaching, for his word was with
 authority. And in the synagogue there was a man 33
 that had a spirit of an unclean demon, and it cried 34
 out with a loud voice, Ah ! what hast thou to do
 with us, thou Jesus of Nazareth ? didst thou come
 to destroy us ? I know thee who thou art, the Holy
 One of God.—And Jesus rebuked it, saying, Hold 35
 thy peace, and come out from him.—And when the
 demon had thrown him down into the midst, it 36
 came out from him, not hurting him at all. And
 amazement came upon all, and they spoke together,
 one with another, saying, What is this word ? for
 with authority and power he commandeth the un-
 clean spirits, and they come out.—And a rumour 37

concerning him went forth into every place of the region round about.

38 But he rose up and went from the synagogue into Simon's house. Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever ; and they entreated him
39 for her. And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever ; and it left her, and immediately she rose up and began to serve them.

40 Now, when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him ; and he laid his hands on each of them, and
41 cured them. And demons also came forth from many, crying out and saying, Thou art the Son of God.—And he rebuked them, and did not suffer them to speak ; because they knew that he was the Christ.

42 But when day came, he went out and departed into a desert place ; and the multitudes were seeking after him, and they came up to him, and would have stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 But he said unto them, To the other cities also I must proclaim the gospel of the kingdom of God ; for this is why I was sent.

44 And he was preaching in the synagogues of Judæa.¹

5 Now it came to pass, while the multitude were pressing upon him and hearing the word of God, he
2 was standing by the lake of Gennesaret ; and he saw two boats moored by the lake, but the fishermen had gone away from them, and were washing their nets.

3 And getting into one of the boats, the one that was Simon's, he asked him to put out a little from the land. And sitting down he began to teach the
4 multitudes out of the boat. But when he had ceased speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep ; and let ye down your nets for a catch.—

5 And Simon answered and said, Master, the whole night through we toiled, and took nothing ; yet at
6 thy word I will let down the nets.—And when they had done this, they enclosed a great multitude of
7 fishes ; but their nets were breaking. And they beckoned to their partners in the other boat to come and help them. And they came and filled both the
8 boats, so that they began to sink. But when Simon

¹ Some MSS., 'Galilee.' Judæa here—the whole country inhabited by Jews, as in 23^b.

LUKE 5

Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me ; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.—
 For he and all that were with him were amazed at 9
 the catch of fish they had taken ; and so were also 10
 James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners
 with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not,
 henceforth thou shalt catch men.—And when they 11
 had brought their boats to land, they left all and
 followed him.

And it came to pass, while he was in one of the 12
 cities, behold, a man full of leprosy ; and when he
 saw Jesus, he fell on his face and besought him,
 saying, Lord, if thou willest, thou canst make me
 clean.—And he stretched forth his hand, and 13
 laid hold of him, saying, I will ; be thou made clean.
 —And straightway the leprosy departed from him.
 And he charged him to tell no one ; But go thy way, 14
 and show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy
 purification, even as Moses appointed, for witness
 unto them.—But so much the more the report 15
 spread concerning him ; and great multitudes came
 together to hear, and to be cured of their infirmities.
 But he himself was in retirement in the deserts, and 16
 in prayer.

And it came to pass, on one of the days, that he 17
 was teaching ; and there were Pharisees and doctors
 of the Law sitting by, who had come out of every
 village of Galilee and Judæa, and out of Jerusalem ;
 and the power of the Lord was present, that he
 might heal. And, behold, some men bringing on a 18
 bed a man who was paralysed ; and they sought to
 bring him in and to lay him before him. And, 19
 because of the multitude, not finding by what way
 they might bring him in, they went up to the roof,
 and let him down through the tiles with his couch
 into the midst before Jesus. And seeing their faith, 20
 he said, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.—And the
 scribes and the Pharisees began to argue, saying, 21
 Who is this that speaketh blasphemies ? Who can
 forgive sins but God only ?—But Jesus, perceiving
 their arguments, answered and said unto them, Why 22
 argue ye in your hearts ? Which is easier ? to say
 ' Thy sins are forgiven thee ' ; or to say, ' Arise and 23
 walk ' ? But that ye may know that the Son of man 24
 hath authority upon earth to forgive sins (he said to

the paralysed man) I say to thee, Arise, and take up
 25 thy couch, and go to thy house.—And immediately
 he arose before them, and took up that whereon he
 had been lying, and departed to his house, glorifying
 26 God. And amazement seized upon them all, and
 they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying,
 We have seen strange things to-day.

27 And after these things he went forth, and saw
 a tax-gatherer, named Levi, sitting at the toll-house
 28 and he said to him, Follow me.—And he forsook
 all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And Levi gave a great feast for him in his house ;
 and there was a great multitude of tax-gatherers and
 of others who were sitting at table with them.
 30 And the Pharisees and their scribes murmured
 against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink
 31 with tax-gatherers and sinners?—And Jesus an-
 swered and said unto them, It is not the healthy
 32 that need a physician, but they that are sick. I have
 not come to call righteous men, but sinners, to
 repentance.

33 But they said unto him, John's disciples fast often,
 and make supplications ; likewise also the disciples
 of the Pharisees ; whereas thine eat and drink.—
 34 But Jesus said unto them, Can ye make the friends
 of the bridegroom fast while the bridegroom is with
 35 them? But days will come ; and when the bride-
 groom will be taken from them, then they will fast
 36 in those days.—And he spoke a parable also unto
 them, No one rendeth a piece from a new garment
 and putteth it on to an old garment ; else he will
 rend the new, and also the piece from the new will
 37 not match the old. And no one putteth new wine
 into old wine-skins ; else the wine will burst the
 skins, and will be spilt itself, and the skins will
 38 perish. But new wine must be put into fresh skins.
 39 And no one after drinking old wine desireth new ;
 for he says, The old is excellent.

6 Now it came to pass on a sabbath,¹ that he was
 going on his way through some cornfields ; and his
 disciples were plucking and eating the ears of corn,
 2 rubbing them with their hands. But some of the
 Pharisees said, Why do ye that which is not lawful

¹ Some MSS. have, ' the second-first sabbath ' ; perhaps a fusion of
 two marginal notes ; but any meaning it may ever have had is lost.

on the sabbath?—And Jesus answered and said unto 3
 them, Did ye never read even this which David did,
 when he and they that were with him hungered?
 how he went into the house of God, and took and ate 4
 the loaves that were set forth, and gave to them that
 were with him ; which it is not lawful for any but
 the priests to eat?—And he said to them, The Son 5
 of man is lord of the sabbath.

Now it came to pass on another sabbath, that he 6
 went into the synagogue and taught ; and a man
 was there, and his right hand was withered. And 7
 the scribes and the Pharisees were watching Jesus,
 whether he cures on the sabbath ; that they might
 find how to accuse him. Now he knew their 8
 thoughts ; yet he said to the man with the withered
 hand, Rise, and stand forth in the midat.—And he
 arose, and stood forth. But Jesus said unto them, 9
 I ask you, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to
 do evil? to save a life, or to destroy it?—And he 10
 looked round on them all, and said to him, Stretch
 forth thy hand.—And he did so ; and his hand was
 restored. But they were filled with madness, and 11
 began to commune one with another what they
 should do to Jesus.

Now it came to pass in those days, that he went 12
 out to the mountain to pray, and continued all night
 in prayer to God. And when day came, he called 13
 to him his disciples ; and from them he chose out
 twelve, whom he also named Apostles; Simon (whom 14
 he also named Peter), and Andrew his brother, and
 James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew, and
 Matthew and Thomas, and James (son of Alphæus), 15
 and Simon (who is called The Zealot), and Judas 16
 (son of James), and Judas Iscariot, who turned
 traitor. And coming down with them, he took his 17
 stand on a level place, with a great multitude of his
 disciples, and a great number of the people from all
 Judæa and Jerusalem and the sea coast of Tyre and
 Sidon, who came to hear him, and to be healed of
 their diseases ; and they that were troubled by 18
 unclean spirits were cured. And all the multitude 19
 sought to lay hold of him ; for power went forth
 from him and healed all.

And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and 20
 said,

LUKE 6

Happy are ye poor ; for yours is the kingdom of God.

21 Happy are ye that hunger now ; for ye shall be satisfied.

Happy are ye that weep now ; for ye shall laugh.

22 Happy are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall shut you out, and reproach you, and banish as evil the name you bear, for the Son of man's
23 sake. Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy ; for, behold, your reward is great in heaven ; for in the same way their forefathers treated the prophets.

24 But alas for you, the rich ! for ye have received your consolation.

25 Alas for you, ye that are filled now ! for ye shall hunger.

Alas for you, ye that laugh now ! for ye shall mourn and weep.

26 Alas for you, when all men speak well of you ! for in the same way their forefathers treated the false prophets.

27 But I say to you that hear, Love your enemies ;
28 do good to them that hate you ; bless them that
29 curse you ; pray for them that abuse you. To him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer the other also ; and from him that taketh away thy cloak, withhold not thy coat also. Give to every one that asketh of thee ; and from him that taketh away thy
30 goods, ask not for their return. And even as ye would that men should do to you, do to them like-
31 wise. And if ye love them that love you, what thanks do ye get ? for even the outcasts love those
32 that love them. For even if ye do good to them that do good to you, what thanks do ye get ? even the
33 outcasts do the same. And if ye lend to them from whom ye hope to receive, what thanks do ye get ?
34 even outcasts lend to outcasts, that they may get back as much. But love your enemies, and do good,
35 and lend, not hoping for any return ;¹ and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be sons of the Highest ; for he is kind towards the unthankful
36 and evil. Show yourselves merciful, even as your
37 Father is merciful. Also judge not, and ye shall not be judged ; and condemn not, and ye shall not be

¹ Cf. Bismarck's 'do ut des.'

condemned. Pardon,¹ and ye shall be pardoned.¹
 Give, and gifts shall be given unto you; good 38
 measure, pressed down, shaken together, running
 over, they shall give into your bosoms.² For with
 what measure ye measure, it shall be measured to
 you in return.

And he spoke a parable also to them, Can a blind 39
 man guide a blind man? will they not both fall into
 a pit? There is no disciple above his master; but 40
 every one fully instructed will be as his master.
 But why beholdest thou the mote³ that is in thy 41
 brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that
 is in thine own eye? How canst thou say to thy 42
 brother, 'Brother, let me pull out the mote that is
 in thine eye,' while thou beholdest not the beam
 that is in thine own eye? Hypocrite! first pull
 out the beam from thine own eye, and then thou
 wilt see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy
 brother's eye. For there is no good tree that 43
 bringeth forth worthless fruit; neither, again, is there
 a worthless tree that bringeth forth good fruit.
 For each tree becomes known by its own fruit. For 44
 from thorns men do not gather figs, neither from a
 bramble do they pick grapes. The good man 45
 out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth
 that which is good, and the evil man out of his evil
 treasure bringeth forth that which is evil; for out
 of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

But why call ye me 'Lord, Lord,' and do not the 46
 things that I say? Everyone who cometh unto me, 47
 and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will show
 you whom he is like. He is like a man building a 48
 house, who dug and went deep, and laid a foundation
 upon the rock; and when a flood rose, the stream
 broke against that house, and could not shake it;
 because it had been well built.⁴ But he that heard, 49
 and did not, is like a man who built a house upon the
 earth, without a foundation; against which the
 stream broke, and straightway it fell in; and great
 was the ruin⁵ of that house.

After he had finished all his sayings in the hearing 7
 of the people, he entered Capernaum.

¹ Or set free. ² Or cloaks, Ruth 3¹⁵. ³ Or speck. ⁴ Some MSS.,
 'had been founded upon the rock'. ⁵ Or breach

LUKE 7

2 Now a certain centurion's bondman, whom he
 3 highly valued, was sick, at the point of death. And,
 hearing of Jesus, he sent unto him elders of the
 Jews, asking him that he would come and save his
 4 bondman. And when they came unto Jesus, they
 besought him earnestly, saying, He is worthy that
 5 thou shouldst do this for him; for he loveth our
 6 nation, and himself built us our synagogue.—And
 Jesus went with them. But when he was now not
 far from the house, the centurion sent friends, saying
 to him, Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not
 worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof;
 7 wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come
 unto thee; but say the word, and let my servant
 8 be healed. For I also am a man set under authority,
 having soldiers under myself; and I say to this
 one, 'Go,' and he goeth; and to another, 'Come,'
 and he cometh; and to my bondman, 'Do this,'
 9 and he doeth it.—Now when Jesus heard these
 things he marvelled at him, and turning said to the
 multitude that followed him, I say to you, Not even
 10 in Israel have I found so great a faith.—And they
 that had been sent, returning to the house, found the
 bondman in good health.

11 And it came to pass soon after¹ that he went unto
 a city called Nain; and his disciples and a great
 12 multitude went with him. Now as he came near the
 gate of the city, behold, there was being carried out
 a dead man, his mother's only son, and she was a
 widow; and a great multitude from the city was
 13 with her. And the Lord, seeing her, had com-
 14 passion on her, and said to her, Weep not.—And he
 went up, and touched the bier; and the bearers
 stopped. And he said, Young man, I say to thee,
 15 Arise.—And the dead man sat up, and began to
 16 speak; and he gave him to his mother. But fear
 seized upon all; and they glorified God, saying,
 A great prophet hath arisen among us; and God
 17 hath visited his people.—And this report went forth
 concerning him throughout the whole of Judæa²
 and all the region round about.

18 And John's disciples brought him word of all
 19 these things. And calling unto him some two or so

¹ Some MSS., 'it came to pass on the next day.' ² See note to 4th.

of his disciples, John sent them unto the Lord, saying, Art thou the Coming One? or are we to look for another?—And when the men had come unto him, they said, John the Baptist sent us unto thee, saying, ‘Art thou the Coming One? or are we to look for another?’—In that very hour he cured many persons of diseases and ailments and evil spirits; and to many who were blind he granted sight. And he answered and said to them, Go, and take word to John of what ye have seen and heard; blind persons recover their sight, lame walk, lepers are cleansed, and deaf hear, dead are raised, poor have good tidings preached to them; and happy is he whosoever shall find in me no cause of stumbling.

But when John’s messengers had departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, Why went ye out into the wilderness? was it to behold reeds shaken by the wind? But why went ye out? was it to see a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that are gorgeously appavelled and live delicately are in kings’ courts. But why went ye out? was it to see a prophet? Yea, I say to you, and much more than a prophet. (This is he of whom it is written,

‘Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
And he shall prepare thy way before thee.’)

I say unto you, Among those born of women there is none greater than John; yet he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. (And all the people when they heard, and the tax-gatherers, pronounced God righteous, having been baptized with the baptism of John. But the Pharisees and the law-students brought to naught God’s purpose concerning themselves, not having been baptized by John.) To what then shall I liken the men of this generation? and what are they like? They are like children who sit in the market-place, and call one to another; who say,

We piped to you, and ye did not dance;
We sang lamentations, and ye did not weep.
For John the Baptist hath come, not eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, ‘He hath a demon.’

* Some take verses 29-30 to be a parenthetical remark of the Evangelist.

LUKE 7

34 The Son of man hath come, eating and drinking ;
 and ye say, ' Behold, a man, a glutton and a wine-
 drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and sinners ! ' And
 35 Wisdom was pronounced righteous by all her children.
 36 Now one of the Pharisees asked him to eat with
 him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and
 37 sat down at table. And, behold, a woman, one
 living in the city, an outcast ; and finding that he
 was sitting at table in the Pharisee's house, she
 38 brought an alabaster cruse of ointment, and standing
 behind at his feet, weeping, with her tears she began
 to wet his feet, and with the hair of her head she
 wiped them dry ; and she kissed his feet and
 39 anointed them with the ointment. Now when the
 Pharisee who had invited him saw it, he spoke
 within himself, saying, This man, were he a prophet,¹
 would have perceived who and what manner of
 woman this is that toucheth him, that she is a
 40 sinner.—And Jesus answered and said unto him,
 Simon, I have something to say to thee. (And he
 41 saith, Master, say on.) A certain money-lender had
 two debtors ; one owed five hundred shillings, and
 42 the other fifty. And as they could not pay, he
 forgave them both. Which of them, therefore, will
 43 love him most?—Simon answered and said, He,
 44 I suppose, to whom he forgave the most.—And he
 said to him, Thou hast rightly judged.—And turning
 to the woman, he said to Simon, Seest thou this
 woman ? I entered thy house ; thou gavest me no
 water for my feet, but she with her tears wetted my
 45 feet and with her hair she wiped them dry. Thou
 gavest me no kiss, but she, ever since I entered, hath
 46 not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou
 didst not anoint, but she hath anointed my feet with
 47 ointment. Wherefore, because she has loved much,
 I say to thee, Her sins, her many sins, have been
 forgiven ;² but he to whom little is forgiven, little
 48 he loves.—And he said to her, Thy sins have been
 49 forgiven.—And they that sat at table with him
 began to say within themselves, What man is this

¹ Some MSS., ' the prophet.' ² Christ's reason for declaring her forgiven was that she had manifested her love. This better fits the context than the view represented by Hartley Coleridge's lines :

' And he wiped off the soiling of despair
 From her sweet soul, because she loved so much.'

LUKE 7, 8

who even forgiveth sins?—But he said unto the 50
woman, Thy faith hath saved thee ; go in peace.¹

And it came to pass afterwards that he was 8
journeying through city after city and village after
village, preaching and publishing the gospel of the
kingdom of God ; and there were with him the 2
twelve, and certain women who had been cured of
evil spirits and infirmities, Mary (the one called
Mary of Magdala), from whom seven demons had 3
gone out, and Joana, the wife of Chuzas (Herod's
steward), and Susanna, and many others, who used
to minister to them² out of their means.

Now a great multitude gathering together, and 4
those of every city resorting to him, he spoke by a
parable ;

A sower went out to sow his seed ; and as he sowed, 5
some fell by the wayside ; and it was trodden under-
foot, and the birds of the air devoured it. And other 6
fell upon rock ; and when it had grown up, it
withered away, because it had no moisture. And 7
other fell amidst thorns ; and the thorns grew
up with it, and choked it. And other fell into 8
good ground, and grew up, and brought forth fruit
a hundredfold.—As he said these things he cried out,
He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

But his disciples began to ask him, What might 9
this parable be?—And he said, To you it hath been 10
given to know the secrets of the kingdom of God ;
but to the rest in parables, that seeing they may not
see, and hearing they may not understand. Now 11
the parable is this ; The seed is the word of God.
But those by the wayside are they that heard ; then 12
cometh the devil and taketh away the word from
their hearts, that they may not believe and be saved.
But those on the rock ; they that when they have 13
heard receive the word with joy ; and these have no
root, who for a while believe, and in time of trial fall
away. But that which fell among the thorns ; these 14
are they that heard, and as they go their way they
are choked by cares and riches and pleasures of this
life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that in 15
the good ground ; these are such as in an honest and

¹*Lit.* into peace. *Some MSS., 'him.'

LUKE 8

good heart, having heard the word, hold it fast, and bear fruit with steadfastness.

16 No one, when he hath lighted a lamp, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a couch ; but he putteth it on a lamp-stand, that they that go
17 in may see the light. For there is not anything hidden that will not be brought to light ; nor yet anything secret, that will not be made known and
18 come into light. Take heed therefore how ye hear ; for whosoever hath,¹ to him shall be given ; and whosoever hath not,¹ from him shall be taken away even that which he thinks he hath.²

19 Now there came unto him his mother and brothers ; and because of the multitude they could not get to
20 him. And it was told him, Thy mother and thy brothers are standing outside, desiring to see thee.—
21 But he answered and said unto them, Mother to me and brothers are they that hear the word of God and do it.

22 Now it came to pass on one of the days, that he and his disciples got into a boat ; and he said unto them, Let us go over to the other side of the lake.—And
23 they put to sea. But as they sailed, he fell asleep ; and there came down upon the lake a storm of wind ;
24 and they were filling and were in jeopardy. And they went up to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish !—But he awoke, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water ; and they ceased,
25 and there was a calm. And he said to them, Where is your faith ! But they, being afraid, marvelled, saying one to another, Who then is this, that he commandeth even the winds and the water, and they obey him !

26 And they came to shore at the country of the
27 Gerasenes,³ which is opposite Galilee. Now, when he got out on land, there met him out of the city a certain man, possessed by demons ; and for a long time he had worn no clothes, and lived not at home,
28 but in the tombs. But when he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What hast thou to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God ? I beseech thee, torment

¹ See note to St. Matthew 13²⁴. ² Or he seems to have. ³ Some MSS., 'Gadarenes.'

LUKE 8

me not.—For he was charging the unclean spirit to 29
 come out from the man. For many times it had
 laid hold of him ; and he was bound with chains
 and fetters, and kept under guard ; and breaking the
 bonds asunder he was driven by the demon into the
 deserts. And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? 30
 —And he said, Legion—because many demons had
 entered into him. And they besought him, that he 31
 would not command them to depart into the abyse.¹
 Now a herd of many swine was there, feeding on the 32
 mountain ; and the demons besought him that he
 would give them leave to go into them. And he
 gave them leave. And the demons came out from 33
 the man and went into the swine ; and the herd
 rushed down the steep into the lake, and were
 drowned. But when they that fed them saw what 34
 had happened, they fled and reported it in the city
 and in the hamlets. And they came out to see what 35
 had happened ; and they came to Jesus and found
 the man, from whom the demons had gone out,
 sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed and in his right
 mind, and they were afraid. And they that had seen 36
 it reported to them how the man possessed by demons
 had been saved. And all the multitude of the country 37
 of the Gerasenes round about asked him to depart
 from them, for they were seized with great fear ;
 and he got into a boat, and went back. But the 38
 man from whom the demons had gone out besought
 him that he might remain with him ; but he sent
 him away, saying, Go back to thy house, and declare 39
 what great things God hath done for thee.—And he
 went his way, publishing throughout the whole city
 what great things Jesus had done for him.

Now as Jesus was going back, the multitudes 40
 welcomed him ; for they were all waiting for him.
 And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and 41
 he was a warden of the synagogue ; and falling at
 Jesus' feet, he besought him to come into his house,
 for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of 42
 age, and she was dying. But as he went, the
 multitudes thronged him.

And a woman with a discharge of blood of twelve 43

¹ Revelation 20 ².

years' standing,¹ who could not be cured by any,
 44 came up behind him, and laid hold of the fringe of his
 cloak ; and immediately the discharge of her blood
 45 stanch'd. And Jesus said, Who is it that laid hold
 of me ?—But as all were denying, Peter said, Master,
 46 the multitudes throng thee and press thee.—But
 Jesus said, Some one laid hold of me ; for I perceived
 47 that power had gone forth from me.—But the
 woman, seeing that she was not hid, came trembling,
 and falling down before him declared before all the
 people the reason why she had laid hold of him, and
 48 how she was healed immediately. And he said to her,
 Daughter, thy faith hath saved thee ; go in peace.²

49 While he was yet speaking, there cometh one from
 the warden's house, saying, Thy daughter is dead,
 50 trouble not the Master further.—But Jesus hearing
 it answered him, Fear not ; only have faith, and she
 51 shall be saved.—But when he came to the house, he
 allowed no one to go in with him, except Peter and
 John and James, and the father of the maiden, and
 52 her mother. And all were weeping and bewailing
 her ; but he said, Weep no more ; she is not dead,
 53 but asleep.—And they laugh'd him to scorn, know-
 54 ing that she was dead. But he, taking her by the
 55 hand, called, saying, Maiden, arise !—And her
 spirit returned, and she rose up immediately ; and
 he directed that something be given her to eat.
 56 And her parents were amazed ; but he charg'd
 them to tell no one what had taken place.

9 Now calling the twelve together, he gave them
 power and authority over all demons, and to cure
 2 diseases. And he sent them forth to proclaim the
 3 kingdom of God, and to heal. And he said unto
 them, Take nothing for the journey ; no staff, nor
 wallet, nor bread, nor money ; neither have two
 4 coats apiece. And whatsoever house ye enter, there
 5 abide, and thence depart. And whosoever welcome
 you not, shake off, as ye depart from that city, the
 dust from your feet, for witness against them.—
 6 And they departed, and went throughout the villages,
 preaching the gospel and working cures everywhere.

¹ Some MSS. add, ' who had spent all her living upon physicians.'
² *Id.* into peace.

LUKE 9

Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was 7
 happening. And he was much perplexed, because
 it was said by some, that John had risen from the 8
 dead ; and by some, that Elijah had appeared ; and
 by others, that one of the old prophets had arisen. 9
 But Herod said, John I myself beheaded ; but
 who is this, of whom I hear such things?—and he
 sought to see him.

And the apostles on their return narrated to him 10
 whatever they had done. And he took them with
 him, and retired privately to a city called Bethsaida.
 But the multitudes, when they knew it, followed 11
 him ; and he welcomed them, and spoke to them of
 the kingdom of God ; and those in need of cure he
 healed. But the day began to decline, and the 12
 twelve came up, and said to him, Send the multitude
 away, that they may go to the villages and hamlets
 round about, and find lodging and provisions ; for
 we are here in a desert place.—But he said unto 13
 them, Give you them to eat.—And they said, We have
 no more than five loaves and two fishes, unless we
 are to go and buy food for all this people.—For there 14
 were about five thousand men. But he said unto
 his disciples, Make them sit down in companies,
 about fifty each.—And they did so, and made them 15
 all sit down. And he took the five loaves, and the 16
 two fishes, and looking up into heaven he blessed
 them, and broke into pieces, and gave to the disciples
 to set before the multitude. And they ate and were 17
 all satisfied ; and there was picked up what remained
 over to them of broken pieces, twelve frails.

And it came to pass, as he was praying in private, 18
 his disciples were with him, and he asked them,
 saying, Who say the multitudes that I am?—And
 they answered and said, John the Baptist ; but 19
 others say, Elijah ; and others, that one of the
 old prophets hath risen.—And he said to them, 20
 But who say you that I am?—And Peter answered
 and said, The Christ of God.—But he charged them, 21
 and commanded them to tell no one this thing ;
 saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, 22
 and be rejected by the elders and high priests and
 scribes, and be killed, and on the third day rise.—
 And he said unto all, If any one wisheth to come 23
 after me, let him deny himself, and take up his

LUKE 9

24 cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever wisheth
 25 to save his life will lose it ; but whosoever shall lose
 26 his life for my sake, he shall save it. For what is a
 27 man profited in gaining the whole world, but losing
 28 or forfeiting himself? For whosoever shall be
 29 ashamed of me and of my words, of him will the Son
 30 of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory
 31 and the glory of the Father and of the holy angels.
 32 But, I say to you, of a truth there are some of them
 33 that stand here, who will in no wise taste death, till
 34 they have seen the kingdom of God.

35 Now it came to pass about eight days after these
 36 sayings, that he took with him Peter, and John,
 37 and James, and went up into the mountain to pray.
 38 And as he prayed, the aspect of his countenance
 39 was changed, and his raiment became white,
 40 gleaming forth. And behold, two men were talking
 41 with him, and these were Moses and Elijah, who
 42 appeared in glory and spoke of his departure¹ which
 43 he was going to bring about at Jerusalem. Now Peter
 44 and they that were with him had grown heavy with
 45 sleep ; but when they were fully awake they saw
 46 his glory and the two men who were standing with
 47 him. And it came to pass, as they were parting
 48 from him, Peter said unto him, Master, it is well
 49 that we are here ; and let us set up three tents, one
 50 for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah ;—
 51 not knowing what he said. But while he was saying
 52 these things, there came a cloud and began to over-
 53 shadow them ; and they feared as they passed into
 54 the cloud. And there came a voice out of the cloud,
 55 saying, This is my Son, the chosen ;² hearken to
 56 him. And when the voice came, Jesus was found
 57 alone. And they kept silence, and told no one in
 58 those days any of the things that they had seen.

59 Now it came to pass the next day, when they had
 60 come down from the mountain, a great multitude
 61 met him. And, behold, a man from the multitude
 62 cried, saying, Master, I beseech thee to have regard
 63 to my son ; for he is my only child. And, behold,
 64 a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out ; and
 65 it convulseth him so that he foameth, and bruising
 66 him sorely it scarcely departeth from him. And I

¹*Lit.*, exodus. ² Some MSS., 'beloved.'

besought thy disciples to cast it out ; and they could
 not.—But Jesus answered and said, O faithless and 41
 perverse generation, how long shall I be with you
 and bear with you? bring hither thy son.—And as 42
 he was yet coming near, the demon dashed him down
 and convulsed him. But Jesus rebuked the unclean
 spirit, and healed the boy, and gave him back to his
 father. And they were all astonished at the majesty 43
 of God.

But while they were all marvelling at all the things
 he was doing, he said unto his disciples, Let these 44
 words sink into your ears ; for the Son of man is
 about to be delivered into the hands of men.—But 45
 they understood not this saying, and it was concealed
 from them, that they might not perceive it ; and
 they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

Now there arose a reasoning among them as to 46
 which of them was the greatest. But Jesus, knowing 47
 the reasoning of their hearts, took a little child, and
 set him by him, and said to them, Whosoever shall 48
 welcome this little child in my name welcomes me ;
 and whosoever shall welcome me welcomes him that
 sent me ; for he that is least among you all, the same
 is great.—But John answered and said, Master, we 49
 saw some one casting out demons in thy name ; and
 we would have hindered him, because he followeth
 not with us.—But Jesus said unto him, Hinder him 50
 not ; for he that is not against you is for you.

Now it came to pass, when the days had come 51
 that he should be taken up,¹ he steadfastly set his
 face to go to Jerusalem, and sent messengers to go
 before him ; and they went and entered a village of 52
 Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they 53
 welcomed him not, because his face was turned to-
 wards Jerusalem. But when the disciples James 54
 and John saw it, they said, Lord, wilt thou
 that we bid fire come down from the heaven, and
 consume them?²—But he turned and rebuked them.³ 55
 And they went to another village. 56

And as they went on the way, some one said unto 57

¹ *Lit.* of his assumption. ² Some MSS. add, 'even as Elijah did.'
³ Some MSS. add, 'And he said, Ye know not of what manner of spirit
 you are. 56 For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but
 to save them.'

him, 'I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.—
 58 And Jesus said to him, Foxes have holes, and birds
 of the air have roosts ; but the Son of man hath not
 59 where to lay his head.—And he said unto another,
 Follow me.—But he said, Suffer me first to go and
 60 bury my father.¹—But he said to him, Leave the
 dead to bury their own dead ; but go thou, and
 61 publish abroad the kingdom of God.—And another
 also said, I will follow thee, Lord ; but first suffer
 me to bid farewell to them that are at my house.—
 62 But Jesus said unto him, No one, having put his
 hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the
 kingdom of God.

10 Now after these things the Lord appointed
 seventy² others, and sent them forth two and two
 to go before him into every city and place whither he
 2 himself was about to go. And he said unto them,
 The harvest indeed is plentiful, but the labourers
 are few ; pray therefore the Lord of the harvest,
 that he may send out labourers into his harvest.

3 Go your ways ; behold, I send you forth as lambs in
 4 the midst of wolves. Carry not a purse, nor a
 wallet, nor shoes ; and salute no one on the way.

5 And whatsoever house ye enter, first say, ' Peace to
 6 this house ! ' And if a son of peace be there, your
 peace will rest upon him ; but if not, it will turn
 7 back to you. And in that same house abide, eating
 and drinking such things as they give ; for the
 labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house
 8 to house. And whatsoever city ye enter, and they
 welcome you, eat such things as are set before you,
 9 and cure the sick that are therein ; and say to them,
 10 ' The kingdom of God is at hand to you.' But
 whatsoever city ye enter, and they welcome you not,
 11 go out into the streets thereof, and say, ' Even the
 dust from your city that cleaveth to our feet, we
 wipe off against you ; yet know this, that the
 12 kingdom of God is at hand.' I say to you, that it
 will be more tolerable for Sodom in that day,³ than
 13 for that city. Alas for thee, Chorazin ! alas for
 thee, Bethsaida ! for, if in Tyre and Sidon had been
 done the mighty works that were done in you, they

¹ See note to St. Matthew 8²². ² Some MSS., 'seventy-two' (and in 17). ³ The day of judgement.

LUKE 10

would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon, in the judgement, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? unto Hades thou shalt go down. He that heareth you heareth me; and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me; but he that rejecteth me rejecteth him that sent me.

Now the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject unto us in thy name. —But he said to them, I was watching Satan fall, as lightning out of the heaven. Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall hurt you. Yet rejoice not in this, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rejoice that your names are enrolled in heaven.

In that very hour he exulted in the Holy Spirit, and said, I praise thee, O Father, Lord of the heaven and of the earth, that thou hast hidden these things from men wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes; yes, Father, that so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. All things were delivered unto me by my Father; and no one knoweth who the Son is, except the Father; and who the Father is, except the Son and him to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him—And turning unto the disciples, he said privately, Happy the eyes that see the things that ye see; for I tell you, that many prophets and kings desired to see the things that you see, and saw them not; and to hear the things that ye hear, and heard them not.

And, behold, a certain law-student¹ stood up, and tested him, saying, Master, what shall I do to gain eternal life?—But he said unto him, What is written in the Law? how readest thou? And he answered and said, 'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God from all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind'; and, 'thy neighbour as thyself.'—And he said to him, Thou hast answered rightly; do this, and thou shalt live.—But he, wishing to show himself righteous, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?—In reply, Jesus said,

¹ Lawyer (A.V.), (and elsewhere).

A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho ; and he fell among robbers, who, after both stripping and beating him, went off, leaving
 31 him half dead. Now, as it happened,¹ a certain priest was going down that way ; and when he saw
 32 him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite also, when he came to the place and saw
 33 him, passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was ; and when he saw him, he was moved with com-
 34 passion, and went up to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on oil and wine ; and setting him on his own beast, he carried him to an inn, and took
 35 care of him. And on the morrow he took out two shillings, and gave them to the innkeeper, and said, ' Take care of him ; and whatsoever thou spendest
 36 more, I, on my way back, will repay thee.' Which of these three, thinkest thou, showed himself neighbour to him that fell in with the robbers?—
 37 And he said, He that had mercy on him.—And Jesus said to him, Go, do thou also likewise.

38 Now, as they went, he entered a certain village ; and a certain woman named Martha welcomed him
 39 into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, who sat down at the Lord's feet, and hearkened to
 40 his word. But Martha was distracted about much serving ; and she went up to him, and said, Lord, carest thou not that my sister hath left me to serve
 41 alone ? tell her therefore to help me.—But the Lord answered and said to her, Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and troubled about many things ; yet few
 42 things are needed, or one ;² for Mary hath chosen the good part, and it will not be taken from her.

11 And it came to pass, as he was in a certain place, praying ; when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also
 2 taught his disciples.—And he said to them, When ye pray, say,

Father,³
 Hallowed be thy name.
 Thy kingdom come.⁴

¹ By chance (A.V.). ² Some MSS., ' yet of one thing there is need.'
³ Some MSS., ' Our Father, who art in heaven.' ⁴ Some MSS. add, ' Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.'

LUKE 11

Give us day by day our daily bread. 3
 And forgive us our sins ; for we ourselves also 4
 forgive every one that is indebted to us.
 And bring us not into temptation.¹
 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a 5
 friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say 6
 to him, ' Friend, lend me three loaves ; for a friend 7
 of mine hath come unto me off a journey, and I have 8
 nothing to set before him ' ; and he from within 9
 shall answer and say, ' Trouble me not ; the door 10
 is now shut, and my children with me have gone to 11
 bed ; I cannot get up and give thee ' ? I say to 12
 you, Although he will not get up and give to him 13
 because he is his friend ; yet because of his impor-
 tunity he will rise and give him as many as he
 needs. I likewise say to you, Ask, and it shall be 14
 given you ; seek, and ye shall find ; knock, and it 15
 shall be opened to you. For every one that asks, 16
 receives ; and he that seeks, finds ; and to him that 17
 knocks, it shall be opened. But if of one of you, as 18
 being his father, the son shall ask for² a fish, will he 19
 for a fish hand him a serpent ? or if he shall ask for 20
 an egg, will he hand him a scorpion ? Therefore, if 21
 you, evil as ye are, know how to give good gifts to
 your children, how much more will the heavenly
 Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him !
 And he was casting out a demon, and it was dumb. 14
 And it came to pass, when the demon had gone out,
 the dumb man spoke, and the multitudes marvelled,
 But some of them said, He casteth out demons by 15
 Beelzebub, the prince of the demons.—But others, 16
 testing him, sought from him a sign out of heaven.
 But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them, 17
 Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to
 desolation, and house upon house falleth. Now if 18
 Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his
 kingdom stand ? for ye say that by Beelzebub I cast
 out demons. But if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, 19
 by whom do your sons cast them out ? therefore
 they shall be your judges. But if by the finger 20
 of God I cast out demons, surely the kingdom of
 God hath come upon you. When the strong man 21

¹ Or trial. Some MSS. add, ' But deliver us from the evil one.
² Some MSS. add, ' a loaf, will he hand him a stone ? or.'

fully armed guardeth his own court, his goods are in
 22 peace ; but when a stronger than he shall attack him,
 and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole
 armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.
 23 He that is not with me is against me ; and he that
 24 gathereth not with me scattereth. When an un-
 clean spirit hath gone out from a man, it passeth
 through waterless places, seeking rest ; and, finding
 none, it saith, ' I will turn back unto my house
 25 whence I came out ' ; and when it hath come, it
 26 findeth it swept and garnished. Then it goeth, and
 taketh with it seven other spirits more evil than
 itself ; and they go in, and settle there ; and the
 last state of that man becomes worse than the
 first.

27 Now it came to pass, as he said these things, a
 certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her
 voice, and said to him, Happy the womb that bare
 28 thee, and the breasts that thou didst suck !—But he
 said, Nay, rather, happy are they that hear the word
 of God, and observe it.

29 But when the multitudes were gathering together
 unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil
 generation ; it seeketh a sign, and no sign shall be
 30 given it, except the sign of Jonah. For even as
 Jonah became a sign to the Ninevites, so will also
 31 the Son of man be to this generation. A queen of
 the south will rise in the judgement with the men of
 this generation and will condemn them ; for she
 came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom
 of Solomon ; and, behold, something greater than
 32 Solomon is here. Men of Nineveh will rise up in
 the judgement with this generation, and will con-
 demn it ; for they repented at the preaching of
 Jonah ; and, behold, something greater than Jonah
 is here.

33 No one, when he hath lighted a lamp, putteth it
 into a cellar, or even under the bushel, but on the
 lamp-stand, that they that go in may see the
 34 light. The lamp of the body is thine eye ; when
 thine eye is sound, thy whole body also is full of
 light ; but when it is diseased, thy body also is full
 35 of darkness. Look to it therefore, whether the light
 36 that is in thee is not darkness. Therefore, if thy
 whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it

will be wholly full of light, as when a lamp by its bright shining giveth thee light.

Now, after he had spoken, a Pharisee asketh him 37
to breakfast with him ; and he went in and sat down
at table. And when the Pharisee saw it, he mar- 38
velled that he had not first washed¹ before breakfast.
But the Lord said unto him, Now you Pharisees 39
cleanse the outside of the cup and of the dish ; but
your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness.
Foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make 40
the inside also? But the things that are in them, 41
give as alms ; and, behold, all things are clean unto
you. But alas for you Pharisees ! for ye pay tithes 42
of mint and rue and every herb, and disregard
justice and the love of God ; but these ye ought to 43
have done, while not neglecting the others. Alas
for you Pharisees ! for ye delight in the front seat in
the synagogues, and to be saluted in the market- 44
places. Alas for you ! for ye are like tombs that are
unseen, and the men that walk over them know it not.

But one of the law-students answering saith to 45
him, Master, in saying these things, thou insultest us
also.—But he said, Alas also for you law-students ! 46
for ye load men with burdens hard to be borne ;
and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of
your fingers. Alas for you ! for ye build the tombs 47
of the prophets, whereas your forefathers killed
them. So ye are witnesses, and approve of the 48
deeds of your forefathers ; for they indeed killed the
prophets, and you do the building. Therefore also 49
said the Wisdom of God, I will send unto them
prophets and apostles, and some of them they will
kill and persecute ; that the blood of all the prophets 50
that hath been shed since the foundation of the
world may be required of this generation ; from the 51
blood of Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, who
perished between the altar and the sanctuary ;² yea,
I say to you, it shall be required of this generation.
Alas for you law-students ! for ye have taken away 52
the key of knowledge ; ye yourselves entered not,
and them that were entering ye hindered.

And when he had come out thence, the scribes 53

¹ Bathed himself (American Standard Version) ; *id.* baptized himself.
² *Lit.* house.

and the Pharisees began to set themselves bitterly against him, and to question him about further
54 matters ; laying wait for him, to seize upon something out of his mouth.

12 In the meantime, when there had gathered together the tens of thousands of the multitude, so that they trod one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware of the leaven
2 of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. Nothing hath been covered up, that will not be uncovered ; and nothing hidden, that will not be made known.
3 Therefore, whatsoever ye have said in the darkness will be heard in the light ; and what ye have spoken to the ear in the inner chambers will be proclaimed
4 upon the house-tops. But I say to you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and afterwards have nothing more that they can do. But
5 I will show you whom ye shall fear ; fear him that after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell :¹
6 yea, I say to you, fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two pence ? and not one of them is forgotten
7 in the sight of God. But even the hairs of your heads are all numbered. Fear not ; ye are of more
8 value than many sparrows. But I say to you, Every one who shall acknowledge me before men, him will the Son of man acknowledge before the
9 angels of God ; but he that disowneth me in the presence of men will be disowned in the presence of
10 the angels of God. And every one who shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him ; but to him that blasphemeth against the
11 Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven. But when they bring you before the synagogues,² and the rulers and the authorities, be not anxious how or where-with ye shall defend yourselves, or what ye shall
12 say ; for the Holy Spirit will teach you in that very hour what ye ought to say.

13 Now one out of the multitude said to him, Master, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me.—
14 But he said to him, Man, who made me a judge or a
15 divider over you?—And he said unto them, Take heed, and guard yourselves from all covetousness ;

¹ *Lit.* Gehenna. ² Synagogue may be either a building or the congregation using it.

for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of
 his possessions.—But he spoke a parable unto them, 16
 saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought
 forth plentifully; and he argued within himself, 17
 saying, 'What shall I do? for I have not room to
 store my crops.' And he said, 'I will do this; 18
 I will pull down my barns and build larger ones;
 and there I will store all my wheat and my goods.
 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast abundance 19
 of good things laid up for many years; take thine
 ease, eat, drink, be merry.' But God said to him, 20
 'Foolish one, this night they¹ demand thy soul from
 thee; but the things that thou hast prepared,
 whose will they be?' So is he that layeth up 21
 treasure for himself, and is not rich as regards God.²

But he said unto his disciples, This is why I say to 22
 you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat;
 neither for your body, what ye shall put on. For the 23
 life is more than the food, and the body more than
 the raiment. Consider the ravens, that they neither 24
 sow nor reap; they have no storehouse nor barn;
 yet God feedeth them; of how much more value
 are you than the birds! But which of you, by 25
 being anxious, can lengthen his life by a span?
 Therefore, if ye are not able to do a very little 26
 thing, why are ye anxious concerning the rest? Con-
 sider the lilies, how³ they neither spin nor weave; 27
 yet, I say to you, not even Solomon in all his glory
 was arrayed like one of them. But if God so 28
 clotheth the grass in the field, which to-day is, and
 to-morrow is thrown into the oven, how much more
 will he clothe you, O men of little faith! And for 29
 yourselves, seek not what ye shall eat, and what ye
 shall drink; and be not of wavering mind. For 30
 after all these things the nations of the world seek;
 but your Father knoweth that ye need these things.
 But seek his kingdom; and these things shall be 31
 given you besides. Fear not, thou little flock; for it 32
 is your Father's good pleasure to give you the
 kingdom. Sell what ye have, and give alms; make 33
 for yourselves purses that grow not old, a treasure
 unfailling in the heavens, where thief draweth not

¹ See note to St. John 15⁶. ² See Romans 10¹². ³ Some MSS. add, 'they grow.'

- 34 near, neither doth moth destroy. For where your
treasure is, there will your hearts be also.
- 35 Let your loins be girt about, and your lamps
36 burning; and be ye yourselves like men waiting for
their lord, when he shall return from a wedding;
that when he cometh and knocketh, they may
37 straightway open to him. Happy those servants¹
whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching;
verily, I say to you, he will gird himself, and will
make them sit down at table, and will come for-
38 ward and serve them. And if he shall come in the
second watch, and if in the third, and find them so,
39 happy are those servants.¹ But this ye know, that
if the master of the house had known at what hour
the thief was coming, he² would not have suffered
40 his house to be broken into. Make yourselves also
ready; for in an hour that ye think not the Son of
man cometh.
- 41 But Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable
42 about us, or even about all?—And the Lord said,
Who then is the faithful steward, the prudent one,
whom his lord will set over his household to give
43 them their portion of food in due season? Happy
that servant³ whom his lord when he cometh shall
44 find so doing. Of a truth, I say to you, he will
45 set him over all that he hath. But if that servant
say in his heart, 'My lord delayeth his coming,' and
shall begin to beat the menservants and the maid-
servants, and to eat and drink, and to get drunk;
46 the lord of that servant will come in a day when he
is not expecting, and in an hour when he knoweth
not, and will cut him asunder, and appoint his portion
47 with the faithless. But that servant who knew
his lord's will and prepared not, nor did according
to his will, will be beaten with many stripes;
48 whereas he that knew not, but did things deserving
of stripes, will be beaten with few stripes. But
every one to whom much was given, from him much
will be required; and to whom they entrusted
much, of him they will ask the more.
- 49 I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what
50 will I? would that it were already kindled!⁴ But

¹ Or bondmen. ² Some MSS. add, 'would have watched and.' ³ Or bondman (and in context). ⁴ Or and what will I, if it has been already kindled?

I have a baptism to be baptized with ; and how am
 I constrained until it be finished ! Think ye that 51
 I came to give peace in the earth ? No, I tell you,
 but to cause division ; for there will be henceforth 52
 five in one house, divided ; three against two, and
 two against three, they will be divided ; father 53
 against son, and son against father ; mother against
 daughter, and daughter against the mother ;
 mother-in-law¹ against her daughter-in-law, and
 daughter-in-law against the mother-in-law.

And he said also to the multitudes, When ye see a 54
 cloud rising over the west, straightway ye say,
 ' A shower is coming ' ; and so it cometh to pass.
 And when ye see a south wind blowing, ye say, 55
 ' There will be a scorching heat ' ; and it cometh to
 pass. Hypocrites ! ye know how to read² the face 56
 of the earth and of the heaven ; but this season,
 how is it ye read it not ? But why even of your- 57
 selves judge ye not what is right ? For as thou art 58
 going with thy opponent before a magistrate, on
 the way take pains to be quit of him, lest haply he
 drag thee along unto the judge, and the judge
 will deliver thee to the officer, and the officer will
 put thee into prison. I tell thee, thou wilt not 59
 come out thence, till thou hast paid the very last
 mite.

Now there came at that very season some who 13
 brought him word about the Galilæans whose blood
 Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And he 2
 answered and said to them, Think ye that these
 Galilæans were sinners beyond all the other Gali-
 læans, in that they have suffered these things ? I 3
 tell you, Nay ; but, unless ye repent, ye will all
 perish in like manner. Or those eighteen, upon 4
 whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think
 ye that they were guilty beyond all the dwellers in
 Jerusalem ? I tell you, Nay ; but, unless ye repent, 5
 ye will all perish in the same manner.

Now he spoke this parable : A certain man had 6
 a fig tree planted in his vineyard ; and he came
 seeking fruit thereon, and found none. And he 7
 said unto the vinedresser, Behold, three years I have

¹ The mother and the mother-in-law are the same person. ² Or interpret.

come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and I find none ;
cut it down ; why doth it also waste the ground ?

8 But he answering saith to him, Master, let it alone
this year also, till I shall dig about it and dung it ;
9 and if it bear fruit next year, well and good ; but
if not, thou shalt cut it down.

10 Now he was teaching in one of the synagogues on
11 the sabbath. And, behold, a woman that had a
spirit of infirmity eighteen years ; and she was
bowed together, and utterly unable to lift herself up.
12 But when Jesus saw her, he addressed her, and said
to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity,
13 —And he laid his hands on her ; and immediately
14 she was made straight and glorified God. But the
warden of the synagogue, indignant that Jesus had
cured on the sabbath, spoke and said to the multi-
tude, There are six days in which men ought to work ;
come therefore and be cured in them, and not on the
15 sabbath day.—But the Lord answered him, and
said, Hypocrites ! doth not each of you on the
sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the manger,
16 and lead him away to watering ? And this woman,
daughter of Abraham as she is, whom Satan had
bound, lo, eighteen years, ought she not to have
been loosed from this bond on the sabbath day ?—
17 And as he said these things, all his adversaries
were put to shame ; and all the multitude rejoiced
at all the glorious things that were done by
him.

18 He said therefore, What is the kingdom of
19 God like ? and to what shall I liken it ? It is
like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took
and threw into his garden ; and it grew and became
a tree ; and the birds of the air roosted in its
branches.

20 And he went on to say, To what shall I liken the
21 kingdom of God ? It is like leaven, which a woman
took and covered up in three measures of meal, till
it all was leavened.

22 And he was passing on through cities and villages,
teaching and making his way towards Jerusalem.
23 But some one said to him, Lord, are they few that
are in the way of salvation ?—But he said unto
24 them, Strive to enter through the narrow door ; for
many, I say to you, will seek to enter, and will not

be able. When once the master of the house hath 25
 risen, and hath shut the door, and ye begin to stand
 outside, and to knock at the door, saying, ' Lord,
 open to us ' ; and he shall answer and say to you,
 ' I know you not whence ye are ' ; then ye will begin 26
 to say. ' We ate and drank in thy presence, and thou
 didst teach in our streets ' ; and he will tell you and 27
 say, ' I know not whence ye are ; depart from me,
 all ye workers of unrighteousness. ' There the 28
 weeping will be, and the gnashing of teeth, when
 ye shall see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, and all
 the prophets, in the kingdom of God, but you
 yourselves being cast forth outside. And they will 29
 come from the east and from the west, from the
 north and from the south, and will sit down¹ in the
 kingdom of God. And, behold, there are last who 30
 will be first, and there are first who will be last.

In that very hour certain Pharisees came up, 31
 saying to him, Come out, and go hence ; for Herod
 wants to kill thee.—And he said to them, Go, and 32
 say to that fox, Behold, I cast out demons and
 perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third
 day I am perfected. Howbeit I must go my way 33
 to-day and to-morrow and the next day ; for it
 cannot be that a prophet perish outside Jerusalem.
 Jerusalem, Jerusalem ! that killeth the prophets, and 34
 stoneth them that are sent unto her ! how often
 would I have gathered thy children together, even
 as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings ;
 and ye would not ! Behold, your house is left to 35
 you.² But I say to you, Ye shall not see me, until
 the time come when ye shall say,

Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the
 Lord.

And it came to pass, when he went into the house 14
 of one of the rulers, a Pharisee, on a sabbath, to
 take food, they were watching him. And, behold, 2
 a certain man suffering from dropsy was before him. 3
 And Jesus spoke and said unto the law-students
 and Pharisees, Is it lawful to cure on the sabbath,
 or not?—But they held their peace. And he took 4
 him, and healed him, and let him go. And he said 5

¹ Or be guests (St. Matthew 22 ¹⁴). ² Some MSS. add, ' desolate.'

unto them, Which of you shall have a son¹ or an ox fall into a well, and will not straightway draw
6 him up on a sabbath day?—And they could not answer back to these things.

7 But he spoke a parable unto them that had been invited, observing how they were choosing the first
8 places ; saying unto them, When thou art invited by any one to a wedding, sit not down in the first place ; lest haply some one more honourable than
9 thou have been invited by him, and he that invited thee and him shall come and say to thee, ' Give this man place ' ; and then thou wilt begin with
10 shame to take the lowest place. But when thou art invited, go and sit down in the lowest place, that, when he that hath invited thee cometh, he may say to thee, ' Friend, come up higher ' ; then thou wilt have honour in the presence of all that sit at
11 table with thee. For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled ; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

12 But he said unto him that had invited him, When thou givest a breakfast, or a dinner, call not thy friends, nor thy brothers, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbours ; lest haply they invite thee in return, and a recompense be made thee.
13 But when thou givest a feast, invite poor, maimed,
14 lame, blind persons ;— and happy shalt thou be ; because they cannot recompense thee ; for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the righteous.

15 Now when one of them that were sitting at table with him heard these things, he said to him, Happy the man that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.—

16 But he said to him,

A certain man was giving a great dinner, and he
17 invited many ; and he sent his servant² at dinner time to say to them that had been invited, ' Come ;
18 for everything is now ready.' And they all with one accord began to excuse themselves. The first said to him, ' I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go out and see it ; I pray thee, hold me excused.' And another said, ' I have bought five yoke
19 of oxen, and I am on my way to try them ; I pray

¹ Some MSS., ' an ass.' ² Or bondman (and in context).

thee, hold me excused.' And another said, 'I have 20
 married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.' And 21
 the servant came and told his lord these things.
 Then the master of the house was angered, and said
 to his servant, 'Go out quickly into the streets and
 lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and
 maimed and blind and lame.' And the servant 22
 said, 'Lord, what thou commandedst hath been
 done, and still there is room.' And the lord said 23
 unto the servant, 'Go out into the highways and
 hedges, and urge them to come in, that my house
 may be filled; for, I say to you, not one of those 24
 men that were invited shall taste of my dinner.'

Now great multitudes were going with him; and 25
 he turned and said unto them, If any one cometh 26
 unto me and hateth not¹ his father and mother, and
 wife and children, and brothers and sisters, yea and
 his own life also, he cannot be disciple of mine.
 Whosoever doth not carry his own cross, and come 27
 after me, cannot be disciple of mine. For which of 28
 you, wishing to build a tower, doth not sit down first
 and calculate the cost, whether he hath the means
 to complete it? lest haply, after he hath laid a 29
 foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold
 begin to mock him, saying, 'This man began to 30
 build, and was not able to finish.' Or what king, 31
 setting out to engage in battle with another king,
 will not sit down first and consider whether he is
 able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh
 against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while 32
 the other is yet at a distance, he sendeth an embassy,
 and inquireth the terms of peace. So therefore, 33
 whosoever of you biddeth not farewell to² all that
 he hath, he cannot be disciple of mine. Salt there- 34
 fore is good; but if even the salt lose its flavour,
 wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is fit neither 35
 for the land, nor for the dunghill; out they throw
 it. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

But the tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all 15
 drawing nigh to him, to hear him. And the Phari- 2
 sees and also the scribes murmured, saying, 'This

¹ Cf. St. Matthew 10th. ² Forsakes not (A.V.); renounceth not (R.V.).

3 man receiveth sinners and eateth with them. But he spoke unto them this parable, saying,

4 What man of you, having a hundred sheep, and losing one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after the one that is
5 lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it,
6 he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And coming home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying to them, 'Rejoice with me ;
7 for I have found my sheep which was lost.' I say to you, that even so there will be joy in heaven over one sinner who repenteth, more than over ninety and nine righteous persons, who need no repentance.

8 Or what woman having ten pieces of silver,¹ if she lose one piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek diligently until she find it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth together her friends and neighbours, saying, 'Rejoice with
10 me ; for I have found the piece that I lost.' Even so, I say to you, joy cometh in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repenteth.

11 And he said, A certain man had two sons ; and
12 the younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me of the property the portion that falleth to me.' And he divided unto them his substance.

13 And not many days after, the younger son sold off everything, and took his journey into a far country ; and there he wasted his property in riotous living.

14 But when he had spent everything, there came a grievous famine throughout that country ; and he

15 began himself to suffer want. And he went and joined one of the citizens of that country ; and he

16 sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he longed to take his fill of the husks² that the swine

17 ate ; and no one gave to him. But coming to himself, he said, 'How many men hired by my

18 father have bread enough and to spare, while I am perishing here with hunger ! I will arise and go

19 to my father, and will say to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and in thy sight ; I am no longer worthy to be called thy son ; make me as

¹ Drachmæ, about a shilling each. ² Or pods of the carob tree.

one of thy hired men.' And he arose, and went to 20
 his father. But while he was yet a long way off,
 his father saw him, and was moved with compas-
 sion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed 21
 him. And the son said to him, 'Father, I have
 sinned against heaven and in thy sight; I am 22
 no longer worthy to be called thy son.' But the
 father said unto his bondmen, 'Haste! bring out
 a robe, the best, and put it on him; and give him a 23
 ring for his hand, and shoes for his feet; and bring
 the fatted calf, kill it, and let us eat and make 24
 merry; for this my son was dead, and is alive again;
 he was lost, and is found!' And they began to 25
 make merry. But his elder son was in the field;
 and as he came and drew near to the house, he heard 26
 music and dancing; and calling one of the servants,
 he inquired what all this might be. And he said to 27
 him, 'Thy brother hath come; and thy father hath
 killed the fatted calf, because he hath got him back
 safe and sound.' But he was angered, and would 28
 not go in; but his father came out and began to
 beseech him. But he answered and said to his 29
 father, 'Lo, these many years I serve thee, and
 never did I disregard command of thine; yet thou
 never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry
 with my friends; but when this thy son came, who 30
 hath devoured thy substance with harlots, thou
 hast killed for him the fatted calf.' But he said to 31
 him, 'Child, thou art always with me; and all that
 is mine is thine. But we were bound to make 32
 merry and rejoice; for this thy brother was dead,
 and is alive; and was lost, and is found.'

But he said also unto the disciples, There was a 16
 certain rich man, who had a steward, of whom tales
 were brought to him, that he was wasting his goods.
 And he called him, and said to him, 'What is this 2
 that I hear of thee? give in the account of thy
 stewardship; for thou canst no longer be steward.'
 But the steward said within himself, 'What shall 3
 I do? for my master is taking the stewardship
 from me; I have not strength to dig, to beg I am
 ashamed. I know what I will do, that, when I am 4
 put out of the stewardship, they may welcome me
 into their houses.' And calling to him each of his 5
 master's debtors, he said to the first, 'How much

LUKE 16

- owest thou to my master?' And he said, 'A
 6 hundred firkins of oil.' And he said to him, 'Take
 thy agreement, and sit down quickly, and write
 7 Fifty.' Then he said to another, 'And thou, how
 much owest thou?' And he said, 'A hundred
 quarters of wheat.' He saith to him, 'Take thy
 8 agreement, and write Eighty.' And his master
 commended the dishonest steward, in that he had
 acted prudently; for the sons of this world are, as
 to their own generation, more prudent than the
 9 sons of the Light.¹ I likewise say to you, Make for
 yourselves friends by means of the mammon² of
 unrighteousness; that, when it faileth, they may
 10 welcome you into the eternal tabernacles. He that
 is trustworthy in a very little is trustworthy also in
 much, and he that is dishonest in a very little is
 11 dishonest also in much. Therefore if in the un-
 righteous mammon ye have not proved trustworthy,
 12 who will entrust to you the true riches? And if in
 that which is another's ye have not proved trust-
 worthy, who will give you that which is our³ own?
 13 No house-servant can serve two masters; for either
 he will hate the one, and love the other; or else
 he will cling to one, and despise the other. Ye
 cannot serve God and mammon.
- 14 Now the Pharisees, lovers of money as they were,
 were listening to all these things, and scoffing at⁴
 15 him. And he said to them, You are they that
 declare themselves righteous in the sight of men.
 But God knoweth your hearts; for that which is
 exalted among men is an abomination in the sight
 16 of God. Until John came, there were the law
 and the prophets; since then, the gospel of the
 kingdom of God is proclaimed, and every one is
 17 forcing his way into it. Yet it is easier for the
 heaven and the earth to pass away, than for one
 tittle of the law to perish.⁵
- 18 Every one who putteth away his wife, and
 marrieth another, committeth adultery; and he
 that marrieth a woman who hath been put away
 from her husband committeth adultery.
- 19 Now there was a certain rich man, and he used to

¹ St. John 12⁶⁶. ² Mammon means riches. ³ Some MSS., 'your.'
⁴ Lit. turning up the nose at. ⁵ Lit. fall.

clothe himself in purple, and fine linen ; making
 merry every day in splendid fashion. But at his 20
 porch there was laid a certain poor man, named
 Lazarus, full of sores, and longing to satisfy him- 21
 self from whatever fell from the rich man's table ;
 nay, even the dogs used to come and lick his sores.
 Now it came to pass that the poor man died and 22
 was borne away by the angels into Abraham's
 bosom. But the rich man also died, and was
 buried ; and in Hades¹ lifting up his eyes,² being 23
 in torments, he seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus
 in his bosom. And he cried out and said, ' Father 24
 Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus,
 that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and
 cool my tongue ; for I am in anguish in this flame.'
 But Abraham said, ' Child, remember that thou in 25
 thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus
 in like manner received evil things ; but now
 he is comforted here, whereas thou art in anguish.
 And with all this, between us and you a great gulf 26
 has been fixed, that they that would pass hence to
 you may not be able, and that none may cross thence
 to us.' But he said, ' I pray thee therefore, father, 27
 that thou wouldst send him to my father's house ;
 for I have five brothers ; that he may testify to 28
 them, lest they also come into this place of torment.'
 But Abraham saith, ' They have Moses and the 29
 prophets ; let them hearken to them.' And he said, 30
 ' Nay, father Abraham ; but if one go unto them
 from the dead, they will repent.' But he said to 31
 him, ' If they hearken not to Moses and the prophets,
 they will not be persuaded, even if one rise from
 the dead.'

And he said unto his disciples, It is impossible 17
 that occasions of stumbling should not come ; but,
 alas for him through whom they come ! It were 2
 gain to him if a millstone were hanging about his
 neck, and he had been flung into the sea, rather than
 he should cause one of these little ones to stumble.
 Take heed to yourselves. If thy brother do wrong, 3
 rebuke him ; and if he repent, forgive him. And if 4
 seven times in the day he do thee wrong, and seven

¹ Hades means the ~~under~~ place (of spirits). ² Mortuus est autem et
 dives, et sepultus est in inferno. Elevans autem oculos . . . (Vulgate)

times turn back to thee, saying, 'I am sorry,' thou shalt forgive him.

- 5 And the apostles said to the Lord, Increase our
6 faith. And the Lord said, If ye have faith as a
grain of mustard seed, ye might say to this mulberry
tree, 'Be rooted out, and be planted in the sea';
7 and it would obey you. But which of you is there,
having a servant¹ ploughing or tending sheep, who
will say to him when he has come in from the field,
'Come forward straightway, and sit down at table'?
8 But will he not say to him, 'Make ready wherewith
I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have
eaten and drunken; and afterwards thou thyself
9 shalt eat and drink'? Doth he thank the servant
because he did the things that were commanded?
10 So also as to you, when ye have done everything
that was commanded you, say, 'We are unprofitable
servants; we have done what it was our duty to do.'

- 11 And it happened, as he was on his way to Jeru-
salem, that he was passing between Samaria and
12 Galilee. And as he was entering a certain village,
there met him ten men, lepers, who stood afar off;
13 and they lifted up their voices, saying, Jesus, Master,
14 have mercy on us.—And when he saw them, he said
to them, Go, and show yourselves to the priests.—
And it came to pass, as they went, they were
15 cleansed. But one of them, seeing that he was
healed, turned back, with a loud voice glorifying
16 God; and he fell on his face at Jesus' feet, giving
17 him thanks; and he was a Samaritan. But Jesus
answered and said: Were not the ten cleansed?
18 but where are the nine? Were none found to
return and give glory to God, except this foreigner?
19 —And he said to him, Arise, go thy way; thy faith
hath saved thee.

- 20 But being asked by the Pharisees when the king-
dom of God was coming, he answered them and
said, The kingdom of God cometh not admitting
21 observation; neither will they say, 'Lo, here!'
or, 'There!' for, behold, the kingdom of God
is in the midst of you.²

- 22 But he said unto the disciples, Days will come
when ye will long to see one of the days of the Son

¹ Or bondman (men). ² Or within you.

of man, and will not see it. And they will say to 23
 you, 'Lo, there!' 'Lo, here!'—go not away, nor 24
 follow after them. For as the lightning, when it
 lighteneth out of the one side under the heaven,
 shineth unto the other side under heaven, so will 25
 the Son of man be in his day. But first he must
 suffer many things, and be rejected by this genera- 26
 tion. And even as it came to pass in the days of
 Noah, so also will it be in the days of the Son of man.
 They ate, they drank, they married, they were given 27
 in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark
 and the flood came and destroyed them all. Like- 28
 wise, even as it came to pass in the days of Lot ;
 they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they 29
 built ; but in the day that Lot went out from
 Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven and
 destroyed them all ; in the same wise will it be in 30
 the day that the Son of man is revealed. In that 31
 day, he that shall be on the roof, his goods being
 in the house, let him not go down to take them ;
 and he that is afield, let him likewise not turn back. 32
 Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save 33
 for himself his life will lose it ; and whosoever
 shall lose his life will preserve it. I say to you, In 34
 that night there will be two men on one bed ; one
 will be taken, and the other will be left. Two 35
 women will be grinding together ; one will be taken,
 but the other will be left.¹—And they answer and 37
 say to him, Where, Lord?—But he said to them,
 Where the body is, thither will the vultures also
 gather together.

Now he spoke a parable to them, to the effect that 18
 they must pray always, and not lose heart ; saying, 2
 There was in a certain city a judge, who feared not
 God, and regarded not man. Now there was in that 3
 city a widow, and she kept coming to him, saying,
 'Do me justice against my opponent.'² And he 4
 would not for a while ; but afterwards he said within
 himself, 'Though I fear not God, nor even regard 5
 man, yet because this widow troubleth me, I will do
 her justice, lest by her continual coming she wear
 me out.'³—And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust 6

¹ Some MSS. give 36 : 'There will be two men in the field ; one will be taken, and the other will be left.' ² Adversary (A.V.).

7 judge saith. But will not God do justice to his
 chosen, who cry to him day and night, and he is
 8 long-suffering over them? I tell you he will do
 them justice speedily. Howbeit, when the Son of
 man cometh, will he find this faith¹ on the earth?

9 But he spoke this parable also unto certain who
 trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and
 10 despised all others; Two men went up into the
 temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a
 11 tax-gatherer. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus
 to himself, 'God, I thank thee, that I am not like
 the rest of men, extortioners, dishonest, adulterers,
 12 or even like this tax-gatherer; I fast twice in the
 13 week, I pay tithes on all that I get.' But the
 tax-gatherer, standing afar off, would not so much
 as lift up his eyes to heaven, but kept smiting his
 breast, saying, 'O God, be merciful² to me the
 14 sinner!' I say to you, This man went down to his
 house accounted righteous rather than the other;
 for every one who exalteth himself shall be humbled;
 but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

15 Now they were bringing to Jesus their babes also,
 that he might touch them; but when the disciples
 16 saw it, they began to rebuke them. But Jesus called
 the babes to himself, saying, Suffer the little children
 to come unto me, and hinder them not; for to such
 17 belongeth³ the kingdom of God. Verily, I say to
 you, whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God
 as a little child, he will in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certain warden⁴ questioned him, saying,
 Good Master, what shall I do to gain eternal life?
 19 —But Jesus said to him, Why callest thou me good?
 20 there is none good but God only. Thou knowest
 the commandments, 'Commit not adultery,'
 'Murder not,' 'Steal not,' 'Bear not false witness,'
 21 'Honour thy father and thy mother,'—And he said,
 All these things I have observed from youth up.—
 22 But when Jesus heard it, he said to him, One thing
 thou lackest yet; all that thou hast, sell it, and
 distribute it to poor persons, and thou shalt have
 23 treasure in heaven; and come, follow me.—But
 when he heard these things, he became exceedingly
 24 sorrowful; for he was very rich. But Jesus, looking

¹ Or such faith (see verse 1). ² *Lit.* be propitiated. ³ See note to St. Matthew 19²⁴. ⁴ Of a synagogue.

at him, said, With what difficulty do they that have riches go into the kingdom of God ! For it is easier 25
 for a camel to go through the eye of a needle,
 than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of
 God.—And they that heard it said, Who then can 26
 be saved?—And he said, The things that are im- 27
 possible with men are possible with God.—And Peter 28
 said, Lo, we indeed left our homes, and followed
 thee.—And he said to them, Verily, I say to you, 29
 there is no one who left house, or wife, or brothers,
 or parents, or children, for the kingdom of God's
 sake, who shall not receive manifold more in the 30
 present time, and in the age to come eternal life.

But taking to himself the twelve, he said unto 31
 them, Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and
 all that has been written through the prophets concern- 32
 ing¹ the Son of man will be brought to a finish. For he
 will be delivered to the Gentiles, and will be mocked,
 and shamefully treated, and spit upon ; and they will 33
 scourge him, and kill him ; and the third day he will
 rise.—And they understood none of these things ; 34
 and this saying was hidden from them, neither did
 they get to know the things that were said.

Now it came to pass, as he drew near to Jericho, 35
 a certain blind man was sitting by the wayside,
 begging ; but hearing a multitude going through, he 36
 inquired what this might be. And they told him, 37
 Jesus the Nazorean is passing by. And he cried, 38
 saying, Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me.—
 And they that went in front began to rebuke him, 39
 that he should keep silence ; but he cried out a great
 deal the more, Son of David, have mercy on me.—
 And Jesus stopped, and commanded that he should 40
 be brought to him ; and when he drew nigh, he
 asked him, What wouldst thou that I should do for 41
 thee?—And he said, Lord, that I may recover my
 sight.—And Jesus said to him, Recover thy sight ; 42
 thy faith hath saved thee.—And immediately he 43
 recovered his sight, and followed Jesus, glorifying
 God ; and all the people, when they saw it, gave
 praise to God.

And Jesus entered and was passing through 19
 Jericho. And, behold, a man whose name was 2
 Zacchæus ; and he was a chief tax-gatherer, and he

¹ *Lk.* written . . . for (with reference to).

3 was rich. And he was trying to see Jesus, who he
 4 was ; and for the multitude he could not, because
 he was little of stature. And running on in front,
 he climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him ; for
 5 he was going to pass that way. And when Jesus
 came to the place, he looked up and said unto him,
 Zacchæus, make haste, and come down ; for I must
 6 abide in thy house to-day.—And he made haste,
 7 and came down, and welcomed him joyfully. And
 when they saw it, they all began to murmur, saying,
 He hath gone in to be guest to a man that is a
 8 sinner.—But Zacchæus stood and said unto the
 Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I here-
 with give to the poor ; and if I ever took anything
 9 from any one by fraud, I restore it fourfold.—And
 Jesus said of him, To-day salvation hath come to
 this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham.
 10 For the Son of man came to seek and to save that
 which was lost.

11 Now as they were listening to these things, he went
 on to speak a parable, because he was near Jerusalem,
 and because they thought that the kingdom of God
 12 was going to appear immediately. He said therefore,

A certain nobleman went into a far country to
 13 receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And
 he called ten servants¹ of his and gave them ten
 pounds,² and said unto them, Trade whilst I am
 14 coming. But his citizens hated him, and sent an
 embassy after him, saying, We will not have this man
 15 to be king over us. And it came to pass, when he
 had returned after receiving the kingdom, that he
 ordered these servants, to whom he had given the
 money, to be called unto him, that he might know
 16 what trade each had done. And the first came up,
 17 saying ' Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.'
 And he said to him, ' Well done, thou good
 servant¹ ! because in a very little thou provedst
 18 faithful, have authority over ten cities.' And
 the second came, saying, ' Thy pound, Lord,
 19 hath made five pounds.' And he said to him
 also, ' Thou also, be thou set over five cities.'
 20 And the next came, saying, ' Lord, behold thy

¹ Or bondmen (and in context). ² Lit. minæ. The mina = about £4 ;
 but the actual value is immaterial.

pound | which I kept laid up in a napkin ; for I was 21
 afraid of thee, because thou art a hard man ; thou
 takest up what thou layedst not down, and reapest
 what thou didst not sow.' He saith to him, ' Out 22
 of thine own mouth I will judge thee, thou wicked
 servant ! knewest thou that I am a hard man,
 taking up what I laid not down, and reaping what
 I did not sow ? wherefore then didst thou not put my 23
 money into a bank ? and I should have gone and
 demanded¹ it with interest.' And he said to them 24
 that stood by, ' Take away from him the pound,
 and give it to him that hath the ten pounds.'—And 25
 they said to him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.—' I say 26
 to you, To every one that hath² shall be given ; but
 from him that hath not,³ even that which he hath
 shall be taken away. But these my enemies, who 27
 would not have me to be king over them, bring
 them hither, and slay them before me.'

And when he had said these things, he went on in 28
 front, going up to Jerusalem. —

And it came to pass, when he drew near to Beth- 29
 phage and Bethany, at the mount called Olivet, he
 sent two of the disciples, saying, Go your way into 30
 the village opposite you ; in which at your entering
 ye will find a colt tied up, whereon no man ever yet
 sat ; loose it and bring it. And if any one ask you, 31
 ' Why are ye loosing it ? ' thus ye shall say, ' The
 Lord hath need of it.'—And they that were sent 32
 went away, and found even as he had said to them.
 And as they were loosing the colt, its owners said 33
 unto them, Why are ye loosing the colt ?—And they 34
 said, The Lord hath need of it.—And they brought it 35
 to Jesus : and they threw their cloaks over the colt,
 and set Jesus thereon. And as he went, men 36
 spread their cloaks in the way. And as he was now 37
 drawing nigh, at the descent of the Mount of the
 Olive Trees, the whole company of the disciples
 began to rejoice, and to praise God with a loud voice
 for all the mighty works they had seen ; saying, 38

Blessed is the Coming One,
 The King, in the name of the Lord ;
 Peace in heaven,
 And glory in the highest.

¹ Or I at my coming should have demanded. ² See note to Matthew 19¹².

39 And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said
40 unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.—And he answered and said, I tell you, if these shall hold their peace, the stones will cry out.

41 And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept
42 over it, saying, Oh, that thou hadst known, in this¹ day, even thou, the things that make for¹ peace !
43 But now they are hidden from thine eyes. For days will come upon thee, when thine enemies will throw up a rampart about thee, and compass thee round,
44 and keep thee in on every side, and will lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee ; and they will not leave in thee stone upon stone ; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 And he went into the temple, and began to drive
46 out them that sold ; saying to them, It is written, ' And my house shall be a house of prayer ' ; but you have made it a robbers' den.

47 And he was teaching daily in the temple. But the high priests and the scribes and the chief men
48 of the people sought to destroy him, and they could not find what they might do ; for the people all hung upon him, hearkening.

20 And it came to pass on one of the days, as he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the gospel, the high priests and the scribes, together
2 with the elders, came upon him ; and they spoke, saying unto him, Tell us by what authority thou doest these things ; or who is he that gave thee this
3 authority?—But he answered and said unto them, I also will ask you a question ; and tell ye me ;
4 John's baptism, was it from heaven, or from men ?
5 But they argued among themselves, saying, If we shall say, ' From heaven,' he will say, ' Why did ye
6 not believe him ? ' but if we shall say, ' From men,' all the people will stone us ; for they are persuaded
7 that John was a prophet.—And they answered that
8 they knew not whence it was. And Jesus said to them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 But he began to speak unto the people this parable ; A man planted a vineyard, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country for

¹Some MSS. insert, 'thy.'

a long time. And at the season he sent a servant¹ 10
 unto the husbandmen, that they should pay him part
 of the produce of the vineyard ; but the husband-
 men beat him, and sent him away empty-handed. 11
 And he sent yet a second servant ; but him also they
 beat, and treated him shamefully, and sent him
 away empty-handed. And he sent yet a third, but 12
 him also they wounded and threw him out. But 13
 the owner of the vineyard said, ' What shall I do ?
 I will send my son, my beloved ; it may be they
 will reverence him.' But when the husbandmen 14
 saw him, they began to argue among themselves,
 saying, ' This is the heir ! let us kill him, that the
 inheritance may become ours.' And they threw 15
 him out of the vineyard and killed him. What there-
 fore will the owner of the vineyard do to them ?
 He will come and destroy those husbandmen, and 16
 will let the vineyard to others.—And when they
 heard it, they said, God forbid !²—But he looked 17
 upon them and said, What then is this that is written,

' A stone which the builders rejected,
 The same became the corner-stone ' ?

Every one who falleth upon that stone will be 18
 broken to pieces ; but on whomsoever it shall fall,
 it will crush him to dust.

And the scribes and the high priests sought to set 19
 hands on him in that very hour, and they feared the
 people ; for they perceived that he had spoken this
 parable in respect of themselves. And they kept 20
 watch, and sent forth spies, who pretended to be
 upright men, that they might take hold of his
 words, so as to deliver him up to the ruling power
 and to the authority of the governor. And they 21
 asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou
 sayest and teachest rightly, and showest no favour
 to any,³ but of a truth teachest the way of God ; Is 22
 it lawful for us to pay tribute to Cæsar,⁴ or not?—
 But, perceiving their craftiness, he said unto them, 23
 Show me a shilling. Whose image and super-
 scription hath it?—And they said, Cæsar's.—And 24
 he said unto them, Render therefore to Cæsar the
 things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that 25

¹ Or bondman. ² *Lit.* may it not be. ³ Or neither acceptest thou the person of any (A.V.). ⁴ The Roman Emperor.

26 are God's.—And they could not take hold of his saying before the people ; and, marvelling at his answer, they kept silence.

27 Now there came up certain of the Sadducees (who deny that there is any resurrection), and they asked
 28 him, saying, Master, Moses wrote for us that if any one's brother die, having a wife, and he were childless, his brother should take the widow, and raise up
 29 issue to his brother. Now there were seven brothers ;
 30 and the first took a wife and died childless. And the
 31 second, and the third, took her ; and likewise also the seven left no children behind them, and died.
 32 Afterwards the woman also died. Of which of
 33 them, then, doth the woman become wife in the
 34 resurrection ? for the seven had her for wife.—And Jesus said to them, The sons of this world marry,
 35 and are given in marriage ; but they that are accounted worthy to attain that other world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor
 36 are given in marriage ; for neither can they die any more ; for they are equal to angels, and are sons of
 37 God, being sons of the resurrection. But, that the dead rise, even Moses intimated (in the place about the Bush¹), when he calls the Lord, ' the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of
 38 Jacob.' But God he is, not of dead men, but of
 39 living ; for unto him all are living.—And certain of the scribes answered and said, Master, thou hast
 40 said well ;—for they durst not any more ask him any question.

41 But he said unto them, How say they that the
 42 Christ is David's son ? For David himself saith in the book of Psalms,

' The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand.

43 Until I make thine enemies a footstool under thy feet.'

44 David, you see, calls him Lord ; and how is he his son ?

45 But in the hearing of all the people, he said to the
 46 disciples, Beware of the scribes, who like to walk about in long robes, and love to be saluted in the market-places, and front seats in the synagogues,
 47 and first places at feasts ; who devour widows'

¹ In that section of the Book of Exodus (3^d).

houses, and for a pretence make long prayers ; these will receive a heavier sentence.

Now looking up he saw the rich putting their gifts 21
into the treasury. And he saw a certain poor widow 2
putting in thither two mites. And he said, I tell 3
you, Of a truth, this widow, poor as she is, put in
more than they all. For all these out of their 4
abundance put in unto the gifts ; but she out of her
want put in all the substance that she had.

And as some were speaking of the temple, how it 5
was adorned with beautiful stones and offerings, he
said, As for these things which ye behold, days will 6
come, in which there will not be left stone upon
stone, that will not be thrown down.—And they 7
asked him, saying, And when, Master, will these
things be? and what will be the sign when these
things are coming to pass?—And he said, Take 8
heed that ye be not deceived ; for many will
come in my name, saying, ' I am he,' and, ' The
time is at hand ' ; go not after them. But when ye 9
shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified ; for
these things must first come to pass ; but the end
cometh not immediately.

Then he said to them, Nation will rise against 10
nation, and kingdom against kingdom ; and there 11
will be great earthquakes, and in divers places
pestilences and famines ; and there will be terrors
and great signs from heaven. But before all these 12
things, they will set hands on you, and persecute
you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons,
as ye are led away unto kings and governors for my
name's sake. It shall turn out unto you for witness. 13
Settle therefore in your hearts, not to meditate 14
beforehand how to defend yourselves ; for I will 15
give you utterance and wisdom, which all your
adversaries will not be able to withstand or to gain-
say. But ye will be delivered up even by parents, 16
and brothers, and kinsfolk, and friends ; and some of
you they will put to death. And ye will be hated 17
by all men for my name's sake. Yet not a hair of 18
your heads shall perish. In your steadfastness ye will 19
win your souls.¹

¹ Or lives.

LUKE 21

20 But when ye see Jerusalem being encompassed
 with armies,¹ then know that her desolation is at
 21 hand. Then let them that are in Judæa flee to the
 mountains ; and let them that are in the midst of
 the city get away out ; and they that are in the
 22 country,² let them not come in to her. For these are
 days of vengeance, that all things that are written
 23 may be fulfilled. Alas for them that are with child,
 and for them that give suck in those days ! for there
 will be great anguish upon the land,³ and wrath for
 24 this people. And they will fall by the edge of the
 sword, and will be led away captive unto all the
 nations ; and Jerusalem will remain trodden down
 by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be
 25 fulfilled. And there will be signs in sun and moon
 and stars ; and upon the earth distress of nations,
 26 in perplexity at the roaring of sea and billows ; men
 fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things
 that are coming on the world ; for the powers of the
 27 heavens will be shaken. And then they shall see
 the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and
 28 great glory. But when these things begin to come
 to pass, look up, and lift up your heads ; because
 your deliverance⁴ draweth nigh.

29 And he spoke a parable to them ; Behold the fig
 30 tree, and all the trees ; when they now shoot forth,
 ye see and know of your own selves that now the
 31 summer is nigh. So also you, when ye see these
 things coming to pass, know ye that the kingdom of
 32 God is nigh. Verily, I say to you, this generation
 will not pass away, till all things have come to pass.
 33 The heaven and the earth will pass away, but my
 34 words will not pass away. But take heed to your-
 selves, lest haply your hearts be over-charged with
 surfeiting and drunkenness and cares of this life,
 35 and that day come upon you suddenly, as a snare ;
 for it will come in upon all that dwell on the face
 36 of all the earth. But be wakeful at every season,
 praying that ye may succeed in escaping all these
 things that will come to pass, and in standing before
 the Son of man.

37 Now as for the days, he was teaching in the

¹ Or encampments. ² Or fields. ³ Or earth. ⁴ 'Liberatio,' Old Latin ;
 'redemptio' (Vulgate).

temple ; but as for the nights, he used to go out and pass them on the mount called Olivet. And all the people used to rise early and go to him in the temple, to hear him. 38

Now the festival of the Unleavened Bread, the festival called the Passover, drew near. And the high priests and the scribes were seeking how they might put him to death ; for they feared the people. 22 2

But Satan entered into Judas (him that was called Iscariot) who was of the number of the twelve. And he went away and conferred with the high priests and captains, how he might deliver him to them. And they were glad, and agreed to give him money. And he consented, and sought an opportunity to deliver him to them without tumult.¹ 3 4 5 6

Now the day of the Unleavened Bread came, on which the passover lamb must be sacrificed. And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go your way, and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat it.—And they said to him, Where wilt thou that we make ready?—And he said to them, Behold, on your entering the city, there will meet you a man, carrying a pitcher of water ; follow him into the house into which he goeth. And ye shall say to the owner of the house, The Master saith to thee, ‘ Where is the guest chamber, where I may eat the passover with my disciples?’ And he will show you a large upper room furnished ; there make ready.—And they went, and found even as he had said to them ; and they made ready the passover. 7 8 9 10 11 12 13

And when the hour had come, he sat down, and the apostles with him. And he said unto them, Earnestly I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer ; for I say to you, I shall no more eat it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.—And he received a cup, and having given thanks, he said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves ; for I say to you, I shall not drink henceforth of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God hath come.—And he took a loaf,² and, having given 14 15 16 17 18 19

¹ Or in the absence of a multitude. ² Some MSS., ‘ I shall not.’
* Or bread.

thanks, he broke it, and gave it to them, saying, This
 20 is my body, which is given for you;—and the cup likewise, after
 remembrance of me;—and the cup likewise, after
 they had supped, saying, This cup is the new
 covenant in my blood, even that which is poured
 21 out for you. But, behold, the hand of him that
 22 betrayeth me is with me on the table. For the Son
 of man goes his way indeed, as it hath been deter-
 mined; yet alas for that man through whom he is
 23 betrayed!—And they began to dispute among
 themselves, which of them it might be that would
 do this thing.

24 Now there arose also a contention among them,
 25 which of them was reputed to be the greatest. But
 he said to them, The kings of the Gentiles have lord-
 ship over them; and they that have dominion over
 26 them are called Benefactors. But with you it is not
 so; but he that is the greatest among you, let him
 become as the youngest; and he that ruleth as he
 27 that serveth. Which indeed is the greater, he that
 sitteth at table? or he that serveth? is it not he
 that sitteth at table? but I am in your midst as he
 28 that serveth. But you are they that have ever con-
 29 tinued with me in my trials. And, even as my
 Father appointed unto me a kingdom, I likewise
 30 appoint unto you to eat and drink at my table in
 my kingdom; and ye shall sit on thrones, ruling²
 31 the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon, Simon! behold,
 Satan asked and obtained you, that he might sift
 32 you as wheat; but I prayed for thee, that thy
 faith might not fail; and thou, when once thou hast
 33 turned back, strengthen thy brethren.—But he said
 to him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both to
 34 prison and to death.—But he said, I tell thee, Peter,
 a cock will not crow this day until thou hast thrice
 denied that thou knowest me.

35 And he said to them, When I sent you forth with-
 out purse, or wallet, or shoes, did ye come short in
 36 anything?—And they said, In nothing.—And he said
 to them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take
 it, and likewise a wallet; and he that hath no sword,³

¹ *i. e.*, continue to do this (not once for all); *lit.* be doing this. ² See note to St. Matthew 19²⁸. ³ Or knife (*cf.* Genesis 22⁹).

let him sell his cloak, and buy one. For I say to 37
 you, This which is written must be fulfilled in me,
 ' And he was reckoned with transgressors ' ; for that
 which concerneth me is at its end.—And they said, 38
 Lord, behold, here are two swords !—And he said
 to them, Let it suffice !

And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to 39
 the Mount of the Olive Trees ; and the disciples
 followed him. But when he was at the place, he 40
 said to them, Pray, that ye come not into tempta-
 tion.—And he was parted from them about a 41
 stone's throw ; and kneeling down, he began to
 pray, saying, Father, if thou wilt, turn aside this 42
 cup from me ; yet not my will, but thine, be done—
 And there appeared unto him an angel from 43
 heaven, strengthening him. And falling into an 44
 agony, he began to pray more fervently ; and his
 sweat became as it were great clots of blood falling
 down upon the ground.¹ And rising from his prayer, 45
 he came to the disciples, and found them sleeping for
 sorrow ; and he said to them, Why sleep ye ? rise and 46
 pray, that ye come not into temptation.

While he was yet speaking, behold, a multitude ; 47
 and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, was
 going before them ; and he drew near to Jesus, to
 kiss him. But Jesus said to him, Judas, betrayest 48
 thou the Son of man with a kiss !

But when they that were about him saw what 49
 would follow, they said, Lord, shall we smite with
 the sword ?—And some one of them smote the 50
 high priest's bondman, and cut off his right
 ear. But Jesus answered and said, Bear with them 51
 thus far.—And he touched the ear, and healed him.
 But Jesus said unto the high priests and captains of 52
 the temple and elders, who had come against him,
 As against a robber came ye out, with swords and
 clubs ? While I was daily with you in the temple, 53
 ye stretched not forth your hands against me ; but
 this is your hour, and the power of the darkness.

And seizing him they led him away, and took 54
 him into the high priest's house. But Peter was
 following at a distance. Now when they had 55

¹ Verses 43, 44 omitted in some MSS.

kindled a fire in the middle of the court, and had sat down together, Peter was sitting amidst them.

56 But a certain maidservant saw him sitting at the blaze, and, gazing upon him, she said, This man also

57 was with him.—But he denied, saying, Woman,

58 I know him not.—And after a little while, some one else saw him, and said, Thou also art one of them.—

59 But Peter said, Man, I am not.—And about the space of an hour afterwards another stoutly maintained it, saying, Of a truth this man also was with

60 him ; for he is a Galilæan.—But Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest.—And immediately,

61 while he was yet speaking, a cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said to him, Before a cock crow this day, thou wilt disown me thrice. And he went forth outside, and wept bitterly.

63 And the men that had Jesus in charge began to beat him and to mock him. And, blindfolding him, they began to ask him, saying, Prophecy ; who is it that struck thee?—And many other things they spoke against him, reviling him.

66 And when day came, the college of elders of the people, both high priests and scribes, gathered together ; and they led him away into their council, saying, If thou art the Christ, tell us.—But he

68 said to them, If I tell you, ye will not believe ; and if I question you, ye will not answer. But henceforth the Son of man will be sitting at the right hand of the power of God.—And they all said, Thou art, then, the Son of God !—And he said unto them,

71 You speak truly ; I am.—And they said, What further need have we of witness ? for we have heard it ourselves from his own mouth.

23 And the whole company of them arose, and took

2 him before Pilate. And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this man perverting our nation, and forbidding to pay tribute to Cæsar, and saying

3 that he himself is Christ, a king.—And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou indeed the king of the Jews ?—And he answered him and said, Thou speakest truly.

4 —And Pilate said unto the high priests and the

5 multitudes, I find no fault in this man.—But they persisted, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching

throughout all Judæa, and beginning from Galilee
 even to this place.—But Pilate, hearing it, asked 6
 whether the man was a Galilæan. And having 7
 ascertained that he belonged to Herod's jurisdiction,
 he remitted him unto Herod, who himself also was in
 Jerusalem in those days.

Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly 8
 glad ; for he had been a long time desirous to see
 him, because he had heard of him ; and he was
 hoping to see some sign wrought by him. Now he 9
 questioned him in many words ; but he made him
 no answer. Now the high priests and the scribes 10
 were standing, vehemently accusing him. But 11
 Herod with his soldiers treated him despitefully, and
 mocked him, and arraying him in bright apparel sent
 him back to Pilate. And that very day Herod and 12
 Pilate made friends with each other ; for previously
 they had been at enmity between themselves.

Now Pilate called together the high priests and 13
 the rulers¹ and the people, and said unto them, Ye 14
 brought me this man, as one that perverteth the
 people ; and, behold, I, having examined him in
 your presence, found no fault in the man as touch- 15
 ing those things whereof ye accuse him ; no, nor yet
 Herod ; for he sent him back to us ;² and, behold,
 nothing deserving of death hath been committed by
 him. I will therefore chastise him, and release him.³ 16
 —But they cried out all together, saying, Away with 18
 this man ! but release unto us Barabbas ;—one who 19
 for a certain riot that broke out in the city, and
 for murder, had been put into prison. But Pilate 20
 again addressed them, desiring to release Jesus.
 But they kept shouting, saying, Crucify ! crucify 21
 him !—And he said unto them a third time, Why, 22
 what evil hath this man done ? I found in him
 nothing that deserves death ; I will therefore chastise
 him, and release him.—But they were urgent with 23
 loud voices, asking that he should be crucified ; and
 their voices prevailed. And Pilate gave sentence that 24
 what they asked for should be done. And he re- 25
 leased him that for riot and murder had been

¹ Members of the Sanhedrin, the Jewish Senate and highest native court in both civil and ecclesiastical matters. ² Some MSS., 'for I remitted you to him.' ³ Some MSS. add verse 17: 'Now at festival-time, he must needs release one unto them.'

put into prison, for whom they asked ; but Jesus he delivered up to their will.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold of one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming from the country ; and upon him they laid the cross, to bear it after Jesus.

27 Now there was following him a great multitude of the people, and of women who bewailed and
28 lamented him. But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me ; but weep
29 for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold, days are coming, in which men will say, ' Happy the barren, and the wombs that never bore, and the
30 breasts that never gave suck ! ' Then they will begin to say to the mountains, ' Fall on us ' ; and
31 to the hills, ' Cover us. ' For if they do these things to a green tree, what is to happen to the withered ?

32 Now there were also two others, criminals, led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they came to the place called The Skull,¹ there they crucified him, and the criminals, one at the right hand, and the other at the left. But Jesus said, Father, forgive them ; for they know not what they do.²—Now in dividing his garments among
35 themselves they cast lots. And the people stood beholding. And the rulers³ also scoffed at him, saying, He saved others ; let him save himself, if he is
36 the Christ of God, the chosen.—And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar,
37 and saying, If thou art the king of the Jews, save thyself.—And above him there was an inscription,

THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 Now one of the criminals who were hanged was reviling him, Art thou not the Christ ? save thyself and us.—But the other, rebuking him, answered and said, Dost thou not even fear God, seeing thou
41 art under the same sentence ? and we indeed justly, for we are receiving the due reward of our deeds ; but
42 this man did nothing amiss.—And he said, Jesus, remember me when thou comest into⁴ thy kingdom.
43 —And he said to him, Verily, I say to thee, to-day thou shalt be with me in Paradise.⁵

¹ A. V. Calvary (from the Latin word for skull). ² Last thirteen words are omitted in some MSS. ³ See note to verse 13. ⁴ Some MSS., ' in. ' ⁵ *Lit.* In the paradise.

And it was now about the sixth hour, and darkness 44
 came over the whole land until the ninth
 hour, the sun's light failing ;¹ and the veil of the 45
 sanctuary was rent in the midst. And Jesus, crying 46
 out with a loud voice, said, Father, into thy hands
 I commit my spirit.—And having said this, he
 expired.

Now when the centurion saw what had happened, 47
 he glorified God, saying, Surely this was a righteous
 man.—And all the multitudes that had come to- 48
 gether to this sight, when they beheld what things
 had happened, began to return, smiting their
 breasts. But all his acquaintances, and certain 49
 women who had accompanied him from Galilee,
 were standing at a distance, seeing these things.

And, behold, a man named Joseph, of Arimathæa 50
 (a city of the Jews), councillor as he was, a good and
 upright man (he had not consented to their counsel 51
 and doing), who was looking for the kingdom of
 God ; this man went to Pilate, and asked for the 52
 body of Jesus. And he took it down, and wrapped 53
 it in a linen sheet, and laid him in a rock-hewn tomb,
 where no one had ever yet laid. And it was the 54
 Preparation day, and the sabbath was dawning.
 And the women, those that had come with him out 55
 of Galilee, followed after, and beheld the tomb, and
 how his body was laid. And they went back, and 56
 prepared spices and ointments ; and on the sabbath
 they rested according to the commandment.

But on the first day of the week, very early, 24
 they went to the tomb, taking the spices they had
 prepared. Now they found the stone rolled away 2
 from the tomb ; but going in they found not the 3
 body of the Lord Jesus.² And it came to pass while 4
 they were perplexed about this, behold, two men
 came and stood by them, in glistening apparel ; and 5
 when they were affrighted and bowed their faces to
 the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the
 Living One³ among the dead ? He is not here, but is 6
 risen ;⁴ remember how he spoke to you while he

¹ Our word 'eclipse' is derived from the Greek word here used ; but as an eclipse is impossible at full moon, it is best to keep to the ordinary meaning of the word, i.e., cease, fall. ² Some MSS. omit the last four words. ³ Revelation 1¹⁸. ⁴ Some MSS. omit the last seven words.

LUKE 24

7 was yet in Galilee, saying that the Son of man must
 8 be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be
 9 crucified, and on the third day rise.—And they
 10 remembered his words and returned from the tomb,¹
 and reported all these things to the eleven, and to
 11 all the rest. Now they were Mary of Magdala, and
 Joana, and Mary the mother of James; also the
 12 other women with them told these things unto the
 apostles. And these words appeared in their sight
 as idle tales; and they disbelieved them. But
 Peter arose, and ran to the tomb; and looking in,
 he seeth the linen cloths by themselves; and he
 went away home, wondering at what had come to
 pass.²

13 And, behold, two of them were going that same
 day to a village named Emmaus, which is three score
 14 furlongs from Jerusalem. And they were con-
 versing with each other about all these things that
 15 had happened. And it came to pass, while they
 conversed and disputed together, Jesus himself drew
 16 near and went on with them. But their eyes were
 17 holden that they should not know him. And he
 said unto them, What matters are these that ye are
 talking over, one with the other, as ye walk?—And
 18 they stood still, looking sad. But one of them,
 named Cleopas, answered and said unto him,
 Sojournest thou alone in Jerusalem? and knowest
 19 thou not the things that have come to pass therein
 in these days?—And he said to them, What things?
 —And they said to him, Those concerning Jesus
 of Nazareth, who was a man, a prophet, mighty in
 20 deed and word before God and all the people; and
 how the high priests and our rulers³ delivered him
 21 up to be sentenced to death, and crucified him. But
 we had hoped that it was he that should deliver
 22 Israel. Yea, and besides all this, it is now the third
 day since these things came to pass. Moreover,
 23 certain women of our company astounded us;
 having been early at the tomb, and not finding his
 body, they came, saying that they had also seen
 24 a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. And
 some of them that were with us went away to the

¹ Some MSS. omit, 'from the tomb.' ² This verse is omitted in some MSS. ³ See note on 23³⁸.

LUKE 24

tomb, and found it even as the women had said ;
 but him they saw not.—And he said unto them, 25
 O foolish ones, and slow of heart to believe in all
 that the prophets spoke. Was it not necessary that 26
 the Christ should suffer these things, and should
 enter into his glory?—And beginning with Moses 27
 and with all the prophets, he interpreted to them, in
 all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.
 And they drew near unto the village whither they 28
 were going ; and he made as if he would go farther.
 And they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, 29
 for it is towards evening, and the day is now far
 spent.—And he went in to abide with them. And 30
 it came to pass when he had sat down at table with
 them, he took the bread and blessed God; and break-
 ing it he handed to them. And their eyes were opened, 31
 and they knew him ; and he vanished out of their
 sight. And they said one to the other, Did not 32
 our hearts burn within us, while he spoke to us on
 the way, while he opened to us the scriptures?—And 33
 rising up that very hour they went back to Jerusalem,
 and found the eleven gathered together, and those
 that were with them ; who said, The Lord is risen 34
 indeed, and he appeared to Simon.—And they began 35
 to relate what things were done in the way, and how
 he was made known to them in the breaking of the
 bread.

Now as they were speaking these things, he himself 36
 stood in the midst of them, and saith to them,
 Peace be unto you !¹—But they were terrified and 37
 affrighted, and thought they saw a spirit. And he 38
 said to them, Why are ye troubled? and why do
 questionings arise in your hearts? See my hands 39
 and my feet, that it is I myself ; feel me and see ;
 for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see I have.
 —And having said this, he showed them his hands 40
 and his feet.² But while yet for joy they disbelieved, 41
 and marvelled, he said to them, Have ye here any-
 thing to eat?—And they handed him a piece 42
 of broiled fish ;³ and he took it, and ate before 43
 them.⁴

¹ Some MSS. omit the last eight words. ² Some MSS. omit verse 40.
³ Some MSS. add, 'and some honeycomb.' ⁴ Vulgate has 'et cum
 manducasset coram eis, sumens reliquias dedit eis.'

LUKE 24

44 But he said unto them, These are my words which
 I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, that all
 things must be fulfilled that are written in the law
 of Moses, and in the prophets and psalms, concerning
 45 me.—Then he opened their minds, that they might
 46 understand the scriptures; and he said to them,
 Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer and
 47 should rise from the dead the third day, and that
 repentance unto¹ forgiveness of sins should be
 preached in his name unto all the nations;
 48 Beginning from Jerusalem, you are witnesses of
 49 these things. And behold, I send forth upon you
 what was promised by my Father; but tarry ye in
 the city until ye have put on power from on high.
 50 Now he led them out as far as Bethany; and he
 51 lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came
 to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them,
 52 and was carried up into heaven.²—And they wor-
 shipped him, and went back to Jerusalem with
 53 great joy, and were continually in the temple,
 blessing God.

¹ Some MSS., 'and.' ² Some MSS. omit from verse 51, 'and was
 carried . . . heaven': and from verse 52, 'worshipped him and.'

THE GOSPEL:—

ACCORDING TO JOHN

In the beginning was the Word,¹ and the Word was
 with² God, and the Word was God. He was in the
 beginning with³ God. Through him all things came
 into being, and without him there came no one thing
 that hath come. In him was life ; and the life was
 the light of men. And the light is shining in the
 darkness ; and the darkness overcame⁴ it not.

There rose up a man, sent from God ; his name
 was John. He came for witness, to bear witness to
 the light, that through him all might believe. He was
 not the light, but came to bear witness to the light.

The light, the true light, which lighteneth every
 man, was ever coming into the world. He was in the
 world, and through him the world came into being,
 and the world knew him not. He came to what was
 his own,⁴ and his own⁴ received him not. But as
 many as received him, to them he gave the privilege
 to become children of God, to them that believe on
 his name ; who were⁵ begotten, not of blood,⁶ nor
 of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but
 of God.

And the Word became flesh,⁷ and tabernacled⁸
 among us, full of grace and truth ; and we beheld
 his glory, glory as of an only son from a father. For
 out of his fullness we all received, and grace for grace.
 For the law was given through Moses ; the grace
 and the truth came through Jesus Christ. No one

¹ The Greek word Logos means Word (discourse) or Reason ; he declares the Father (verse 18) ; Revelation 19¹³. ² Apud, Vulgate (as in St. Matthew 13³⁴). ³ Comprehended (A.V.), apprehended (R.V.). ⁴ Lit. his own things . . . his own persons ('propria . . . sul,' Vulgate). ⁵ Some authorities, but no Greek MSS., read 'was,' to simplify the meaning. ⁶ Lit. bloods. ⁷ See Appendix III. ⁸ Dwelt (A.V.), Revelation 21³.

JOHN 1

hath ever seen God; God, the only Son,¹ who is in the bosom of the Father, he declared him.

- 15 John beareth witness of him, and crieth, saying, This was he of whom I said, He that cometh after me hath surpassed me; for he was before me.
- 19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent unto him priests and Levites from Jerusalem,
- 20 to ask him, Who art thou?—And he confessed, and denied not; and he confessed, I am not the Christ.—
- 21 And they asked him, What then? art thou Elijah?—And he saith, I am not.—Art thou the prophet?
- 22 And he answered, No.—They said therefore to him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them
- 23 that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?—He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, ‘Make straight the way of the Lord,’ even as Isaiah
- 24 the prophet said.—And some of the Pharisees had
- 25 been sent. And they asked him, and said to him, Then why baptizest thou, if thou art not the Christ,
- 26 nor Elijah, nor the prophet?—John answered them, saying, I baptize in water; in the midst of you there
- 27 standeth one whom you know not, he that cometh after me, the thong of whose shoe I am not worthy
- 28 to untie.—These things took place in Bethany,² beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing.
- 29 On the morrow he seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold! the Lamb³ of God, who taketh
- 30 away⁴ the sin of the world. This is he on whose behalf I said, ‘After me cometh a man who hath
- 31 surpassed me; for he was before me.’⁵ And I knew him not; but the reason why I came baptizing in water was that he might be made manifest to Israel.
- 32 —And John bore witness, saying, I beheld the Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven; and it abode
- 33 upon him. And I knew him not; but he that sent me to baptize in water, he said to me, ‘On whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending and abiding upon him, this is he that baptizeth in the
- 34 Holy Spirit.’ And I have seen, and have borne witness that this is the Son⁶ of God.

¹ The text here is uncertain. Some MSS. give ‘the only begotten Son’ (R.V. text); others ‘God only begotten’ (R.V. margin). ² Some MSS., ‘Bethabara’; others ‘Betharaba.’ ³ Genesis 22⁸; Exodus 12¹⁻³; Isaiah 53⁷; 1 Peter 1¹⁹. ⁴ Or beareth. ⁵ Après moi vient un homme, qui est au dessus de moi, car il est plus ancien que moi (De Genoude). ⁶ Some MSS., ‘the elect.’

Again on the morrow John was standing, with two 35
of his disciples ; and looking upon Jesus as he walked, 36
he saith, Behold ! the Lamb of God !—And the two 37
disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.
But Jesus turned and beheld them following, and he 38
saith to them, What seek ye?—But they said to him,
Rabbi, (which is to say, being translated, Master),
where abidest thou?—He saith to them, Come, and 39
ye shall see.—So they went and saw where he abode ;
and they abode with him that day ; it was about
the tenth hour.¹ One of the two that heard John 40
speak, and followed Jesus,² was Andrew, Simon
Peter's brother. He findeth first his own brother 41
Simon, and saith to him, We have found the Messiah
—(which is, being translated, the Christ).³ He 42
brought him unto Jesus. Jesus looking upon him said,
Thou art Simon, the son of John ; thou shalt be
called Cephas—(which is, being translated, Peter).⁴

On the morrow he was minded to go forth into 43
Galilee, and he findeth Philip. And Jesus saith to
him, Follow me.—Now Philip was of Bethsaida, 44
the city of Andrew and Peter. Philip findeth 45
Nathanael, and saith to him, We have found him
of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, wrote,
Jesus of Nazareth, Joseph's son.—And Nathanael 46
said to him, Can any good thing come out of Nazar-
eth?—Philip saith to him, Come and see.—Jesus 47
saw Nathanael coming unto him, and saith of him,
Behold ! an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile !—
Nathanael saith to him, How knowest thou me? 48
—Jesus answered and said to him, Before Philip
called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree I saw
thee.—Nathanael answered him, Rabbi, thou art 49
the Son of God ; thou art King of Israel.—Jesus 50
answered and said to him, Because I said to
thee, ' I saw thee underneath the fig tree,' believest
thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.—
And he saith to him, Verily, verily, I say to you, ye 51
shall see the heaven standing open, and the angels of
God, ascending and descending upon the Son of man.⁵

And on the third day a wedding took place in 2
Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there ;

¹ 4 p.m., reckoning the hours from sunrise (6 a.m.) to sunset. ² Lit. him. ³ i. e., Anointed. ⁴ i. e., a rock or stone. ⁵ Genesis 28¹²; the Son of man, ladder between earth and heaven.

JOHN 2

2 and Jesus also and his disciples had been invited to
 3 the wedding. And, wine having run short, the mother
 of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.—
 4 And Jesus saith to her, Woman,¹ what hast thou
 5 to do with me? my hour hath not yet come.—His
 mother saith to the attendants, Whatsoever he saith
 6 to you, do it.—Now there were standing there,
 according to the Jews' manner of purification, six
 7 water-jars of stone, holding two or three firkins
 8 apiece. Jesus saith to them, Fill the jars with
 9 water.—And they filled them to the brim. And
 he saith to them, Draw out now, and bear unto the
 ruler of the feast.—And they bore it. Now when
 the ruler of the feast tasted the water after it had
 become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the
 attendants that had drawn out the water knew), the
 10 ruler of the feast calleth the bridegroom, and saith
 to him, Every man setteth forth the good wine first ;
 and when men are drunk, then the poorer ; but thou
 11 hast kept the good wine until now.—This beginning
 of his signs Jesus wrought in Cana of Galilee, and
 manifested his glory ; and his disciples believed on
 him.

12 After this, he, and his mother and brothers and
 his disciples, went down to Capernaum ; and there
 they abode some few days.

13 And the Passover of the Jews was at hand, and
 14 Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And he found in the
 temple them that sold oxen and sheep and doves,
 15 and the money-brokers sitting. And he made a
 scourge of cords, and drove them all out of the
 temple, both the sheep and the oxen ; and he poured
 out the money-changers' coins, and overturned their
 16 tables ; and to them that sold the doves he said, Take
 these things hence, make not my Father's house a
 17 house of merchandise.—His disciples remembered
 that it is written, ' Zeal for thy house will devour me.'
 18 The Jews therefore answered and said to him, What
 sign showest thou to us, seeing that thou doest
 19 these things?—Jesus answered and said to them,
 Destroy this sanctuary, and in three days I will
 20 raise it up.—The Jews therefore said, Forty and six
 years was this sanctuary in building ; and thou,

For this use of 'Woman,' cf. 4²¹ ; 19²⁵ ; St. Matthew 15²⁰

wilt thou raise it up in three days?—But he was 21
speaking of the sanctuary of his body. Therefore 22
when he rose from the dead, his disciples remembered
that he had said this ; and they believed the scripture,
and the word that Jesus had spoken.

Now while he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, 23
during the festival, many believed on his name,
beholding his signs which he wrought. Yet Jesus 24
would not trust himself to them, in that he knew all
men, and because he needed not that any one should 25
bear witness concerning a man ; for he himself
knew what was in the man.

Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named 3
Nicodemus, a ruler¹ of the Jews ; he came unto him 2
by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that thou
art a teacher come from God ; for no one can work
these signs which thou workest, unless God is with
him.—Jesus answered and said to him, Verily, 3
verily, I say to thee, unless any one be born anew,² he
cannot see the kingdom of God.—Nicodemus saith 4
unto him, How can a man be born when he is old?
surely he cannot enter his mother's womb a second
time, and be born?—Jesus answered, Verily, verily, 5
I say to thee, unless any one be born of water and
the Spirit,³ he cannot enter into the kingdom of
God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh ; and 6
that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel 7
not that I said to thee, Ye must be born anew.³ The 8
wind bloweth where it willeth, and thou hearest the
voice thereof, but knowest not whence it cometh
and whither it goeth ; so is every one that has been
born of the Spirit.—Nicodemus answered and said 9
to him, How can these things come to pass?—Jesus 10
answered and said to him, Art thou the teacher of
Israel, and understandest not these things? Verily, 11
verily, I say to thee, we speak that which we know,
and bear witness of that which we have seen ; and
ye receive not our witness. If I told you earthly 12
things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I
tell you heavenly things? And no one hath gone up 13
into heaven, except him that came down out of
heaven, the Son of man.⁴ And as Moses lifted up 14

¹ A member of the Sanhedrin. ² Or from above. ³ Or and spirit.
⁴ Some MSS. add, 'who is (was) in heaven.'

JOHN 3

the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son
15 of man be lifted up ; that whosoever believeth in him
16 may have eternal life. For¹ God so loved the world,
that he gave his Son, his only Son, that whosoever
believeth on him may not perish, but may have
17 eternal life. For God sent the Son into the world, not
that he should judge the world, but that the world
18 through him should be saved. He that believeth on
him cometh not into judgement ; he that believeth
not hath been judged already, because he hath not
19 believed on the name of the only Son of God. But
the ground of judgement is this, that the light hath
come into the world, and men loved the darkness
20 rather than the light ; for their works were evil. For
every one that committeth evil hateth the light, and
cometh not unto the light, lest his works be con-
21 victed. But he that doeth the truth, cometh unto
the light, that his works may be made manifest,
that they have been wrought in God.

22 After these things Jesus and his disciples went into
the land of Judæa ; and there he tarried with them,
23 and baptized. But John also was baptizing at
Ænon, near Salim, because there were many waters
24 there ; and they came and were baptized. For
25 John had not yet been put into prison. There
arose therefore a controversy about purification
26 between some of John's disciples and a Jew. And
they went unto John and said to him, Rabbi, he
that was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom
thou hast borne witness, behold, he baptizeth, and
27 all are going unto him.—John answered and said,
A man can receive nothing, unless it have been
28 given him from heaven. You yourselves bear me
witness that I said not, I am the Christ, but that
29 I have been sent before him. He that hath the bride
is the bridegroom ; but the bridegroom's friend, who
standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because
of the bridegroom's voice ; this my joy therefore is
30 made full. He must increase, but I must decrease.
31 He² that cometh from above is over all things ; he

¹ There is doubt as to the two sections (16-21 and 31-36) whether they are continuations of the preceding discourses or the author's comments thereon. There are no means of settling the question. ² See note to verse 16.

that is from the earth, of the earth he is, and of the earth he speaks.¹ He that cometh from heaven is over all things ; what he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness, and his witness no one receiveth. He that hath received his witness hath set his seal to this, that God is true. For he whom God sent speaks the words of God ; for not by measure he² gives the Spirit. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life ; but he that obeyeth not the Son will not see life, but the anger of God abideth on him.

Therefore when the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John (though it was not Jesus himself that baptized, but his disciples), he left Judæa, and went away back into Galilee. Now he must needs pass through Samaria. So he cometh to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near the piece of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's spring was there. Jesus therefore, wearied by his journey, was sitting, as he was, by the spring ; it was about the sixth hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water. Jesus saith to her, Give me to drink.—For his disciples had gone away into the city to buy food. The Samaritan woman therefore saith to him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink from me, who am a Samaritan woman?—(For Jews do not associate with Samaritans.)³ Jesus answered and said to her, If thou hadst known the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, ' Give me to drink,' thou wouldst have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.—She saith to him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep ; whence then hast thou the living water ? Surely thou art not greater than our forefather Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his sons and his cattle?—Jesus answered and said to her, Every one who drinketh of this water will thirst again. But whosoever shall drink of the water that I will give him shall never thirst ; but the water that I will give

¹ His, John the Baptist's, birth, his life, his teaching, are all alike.
² Some MSS. have, ' God.' ³ For origin of people see 2 Kings 17 24-43 ; for origin of ill-feeling, Ezra 4.

JOHN 4

him shall become in him a spring of water leaping
 15 up into eternal life.—The woman saith unto him,
 Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither
 16 come all the way hither to draw.—He saith to her,
 17 Go, call thy husband, and come hither.—The woman
 answered and said, I have no husband.—Jesus saith
 to her, Thou saidst rightly, 'I have no husband';
 18 for thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou
 hast now is not thy husband; in this thou hast
 19 spoken truth.—The woman saith to him, Sir, I
 20 perceive that thou art a prophet. Our forefathers
 worshipped on this mountain; and you say that
 in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to
 21 worship.—Jesus saith to her, Believe me, woman,
 an hour is coming, when neither on this mountain,
 22 nor in Jerusalem, will ye worship the Father. You
 worship what you know not; we worship what we
 23 know; for salvation is from the Jews. But an hour
 is coming, and now is, when the true worshippers
 will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the
 24 Father also seeketh such as his worshippers. God
 is spirit;¹ and they that worship him must worship
 25 in spirit and truth.—The woman saith to him, I
 know that Messiah is coming, who is called Christ;
 he, when he hath come, will declare unto us all
 26 things.—Jesus saith to her, I that talk to thee am he.
 27 And hereupon his disciples came, and they won-
 dered that he was talking with a woman; yet no one
 said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with
 28 her? The woman therefore left her water-pot, and
 29 went away into the city, and saith to the men, Come,
 see a man, who told me all things that ever I did;
 30 can this be the Christ?—They set out from the city
 31 and were going unto him. Meanwhile the disciples
 32 prayed him, saying, Rabbi, eat.—But he said to
 33 them, I have food to eat that you know not.—The
 disciples therefore said one to another, Did any one
 34 bring him anything to eat?—Jesus saith to them,
 My food is that I may do the will of him that sent
 35 me and accomplish his work. Say you not, 'There
 are yet four months, and the harvest cometh'?
 behold, I say to you, Lift up your eyes, and behold
 the fields, that they are white already unto harvest.
 36 The reaper receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit

¹ Is a spirit (A.V.).

JOHN 4

unto life eternal ; that the sower and the reaper
 may rejoice together. For herein is the saying true, 37
 ' One soweth, and another reapeth.' I sent you forth 38
 to reap that whereon you have not laboured ; others
 have laboured, and you have entered into their labour.

Now many of the Samaritans of that city believed 39
 on him because of the word of the woman as she bore
 witness, He told me all things that ever I did. So 40
 when the Samaritans came unto him, they besought
 him to abide with them ; and he abode there two
 days. And far more believed because of his word ; 41
 and they said to the woman, No longer do we believe 42
 because of thy talking ; for we have heard for our-
 selves, and know that this is indeed the Saviour of
 the world.

Now after the two days he went forth thence into 43
 Galilee. For Jesus himself bore witness that a 44
 prophet hath no honour in his native country.¹ So 45
 when he came into Galilee, the Galilæans welcomed
 him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem
 at the festival ; for they also had gone to the festival.

He went therefore again unto Cana of Galilee, 46
 where he had made the water wine. And there was
 one of the king's² officers, whose son was ill in
 Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus had come 47
 out of Judæa into Galilee, he went off unto him, and
 prayed him to come down and heal his son ; for
 he was at the point of death.³ Jesus therefore said 48
 unto him, Unless ye see signs and wonders, ye will in
 no wise believe.—The officer saith unto him, Sir, 49
 come down ere my child die.—Jesus saith to him, Go 50
 thy way, thy son liveth.—The man believed the
 word that Jesus spoke to him, and went his way.
 But as he was now going down, his servants⁴ met 51
 him, saying that his boy was living. He inquired 52
 therefore of them the hour in which he got better.
 So they said to him, Yesterday in the seventh hour
 the fever left him.—The father therefore knew that 53
 it was in the same hour in which Jesus said to him,
 Thy son liveth ; and he himself and his whole house-
 hold became believers. Now this is the second sign 54
 that Jesus wrought, coming out of Judæa into Galilee.

¹ *i. e.*, Judæa. ² Herod Antipas, tetrarch of Galilee (St. Matthew 14 *).
³ *Incipiebat enim mori* (Vulgate). ⁴ *Or* bondmen.

JOHN 5

5 After these things there was a¹ festival of the
 Jews ; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.
 2 Now there is in Jerusalem, by the sheep-gate, a
 pool, the one called (in Hebrew) Bethzatha,² having
 3 five cloisters. In these were lying a multitude of
 them that were sick, blind, lame, withered, ³waiting
 4 for the moving of the water. For an angel went down
 at certain seasons into the pool, and stirred the water,
 he then, that first after the stirring of the water went
 5 in, got well, whatever disease he had.³ Now a cer-
 tain man was there, who had had his infirmity
 6 thirty-eight years. Jesus, seeing him lying, and
 knowing that he had now been a long time in this
 7 state, saith to him, Wouldst thou get well?—The
 sick man answered him, Sir, I have no one, when the
 water is stirred, to put me into the pool ; but, while
 I am going, another steppeth down before me.—
 8 Jesus saith to him, Rise, take up thy pallet, and
 9 walk.—And straightway the man got well, and took
 up his pallet, and began to walk. Now on that day
 10 was a sabbath. The Jews therefore said to him that
 had been cured, It is a sabbath, and it is not lawful
 11 for thee to take up thy pallet.—But he answered
 them, He that made me well, even he said to me,
 12 'Take up thy pallet and walk.'—They asked him,
 Who is the man that said to thee, 'Take it up and
 13 walk'?—But he that was healed knew not who it
 was ; for Jesus had withdrawn, a multitude being
 14 in the place. After these things, Jesus findeth him
 in the temple, and said to him, Behold, thou hast
 got well ; sin no more, lest some worse thing befall
 15 thee.—The man went away, and told the Jews that
 16 it was Jesus who had made him well. And this is
 why the Jews began to persecute Jesus ; because
 17 he was doing these things on the sabbath. But he
 answered them, My Father worketh even until now,
 18 and I work.—This then is why the Jews sought the
 more to kill him, because not only was he doing
 away with the sabbath, but also he was calling God
 his own Father, making himself equal to God.
 19 Jesus therefore answered and said to them, Verily,

¹ Some MSS., 'the.' ² i. e., House of the Olive ; some MSS. have
 'Bethesda,' others, 'Bethsaida.' ³ The words 'waiting for . . . he
 had' are omitted in many authorities. See Appendix IV.

JOHN 5

verily, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of him-
 self, but only anything he seeth the Father doing ;
 for whatsoever things he doeth, these the Son also
 doeth likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, 20
 and showeth him all things that he himself doeth ;
 and greater works than these he will show him,
 that you may marvel. For as the Father raiseth 21
 the dead, and giveth them life ; even so the Son
 also giveth life to whom he wills. For even the 22
 Father judgeth not any one, but hath given the
 judgement wholly unto the Son ; that all may 23
 honour the Son, even as they honour the Father.
 He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the 24
 Father who sent him. Verily, verily, I say to you,
 he that heareth my word, and believeth him that
 sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into
 judgement, but hath passed out of death into life.
 Verily, verily, I say to you, an hour is coming, and 25
 now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the
 Son of God ; and they that hear shall live. For as 26
 the Father hath life in himself, even so he gave to the
 Son also to have life in himself ; and he gave him 27
 authority to execute judgement, because he is a
 son of man.¹ Marvel not at this ; for an hour is 28
 coming, in which all that are in the tombs will hear
 his voice, and will come forth ; they that did good, 29
 unto a resurrection to life ; they that committed
 evil, unto a resurrection to judgement.

Of myself I can do nothing ; even as I hear, I 30
 judge ; and my judgement is just, because I seek not
 my own will, but the will of him that sent me. If 31
 I bear witness concerning myself, my witness is not
 true. It is another who beareth witness of me ; 32
 and I know that the witness that he witnesseth of me
 is true. You have sent unto John, and he hath borne 33
 witness to the truth. But the witness that I receive is 34
 not from man ; yet these things I say, that you may
 be saved. He was the lamp that burns and shines, 35
 and you were willing to rejoice for a while in his light.
 But the witness that I have is greater than that of 36
 John ; for the works which the Father hath given me
 to accomplish, the very works that I do, bear witness
 of me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father 37

¹ Revelation 1¹³, 14¹⁴.

who sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye
 have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen
 38 his form, and ye have not his word abiding in you ;
 39 because you believe not him whom he sent. Ye
 search the scriptures, because you think that in them
 ye have eternal life ; and it is these that bear witness
 40 of me ; and ye are not willing to come unto me
 41 that ye may have life. I receive not honour from
 42 men. But I know you, that ye have not the love
 43 of God in yourselves. I have come in my Father's
 name, and ye receive me not ; if another shall come
 44 in his own name, him ye will receive. How can you
 believe, while ye receive honour one from another ?
 and the honour that comes from the only God ye seek
 45 not. Think not that I will accuse you to the Father ;
 there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, on whom
 46 you have set your hope. For, if ye believed Moses,
 47 ye would believe me ; for he wrote of me. But if ye
 believe not his writings, how will ye believe my words ?

6 After these things Jesus went away across the sea
 2 of Galilee (which is the sea of Tiberias). And a great
 multitude was following him, because they beheld the
 3 signs that he wrought on them that were sick. And
 Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat
 4 with his disciples. (Now the Passover, the festival of
 5 the Jews, was at hand.) Jesus therefore, lifting up
 his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude is coming
 unto him, saith unto Philip, Whence are we to buy
 6 loaves, that these may eat?—Now this he said, testing
 him ; for he himself knew what he would do.
 7 Philip answered him, Two hundred shillings' worth
 of loaves is not sufficient for them, that each may
 8 take a little.—One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon
 9 Peter's brother, saith to him, There is a lad here,
 who hath five barley loaves and two fishes ; but
 10 what are these for so many?—Jesus said, Make them
 all¹ sit down.—Now there was much grass in the
 place. So the men sat down, in number about five
 11 thousand. Jesus therefore took the loaves, and gave
 thanks, and distributed to them that were seated ;
 likewise also of the fishes, as much as they would.

¹ Here, and in verse 14, the Greek has a word ('the men,' A.V.)
 which includes women and children. Later in the verse it has a word
 ('the men') which excludes them. The Vulgate discriminates with
 'homines,' 'viri.'

JOHN 6

But when they were filled, he saith to his disciples, 12
 Gather together the broken pieces that remain over,
 that nothing be lost.—So they gathered them to- 13
 gether, and loaded twelve frails with broken pieces
 that remained over from the five barley loaves unto
 them that had eaten. Therefore when they had all 14
 seen the sign that he wrought, they said, This is of
 a truth the prophet that cometh into the world.

Jesus therefore, perceiving that they were going 15
 to come and take him by force, to make him king,
 withdrew again to the mountain himself alone.

But when it was evening, his disciples went down 16
 to the sea ; and getting into a boat, they were going 17
 over the sea towards Capernaum. And darkness
 had now come on, and Jesus had not yet come unto
 them ; and the sea was rising, for a strong wind was 18
 blowing. So when they had rowed about five and 19
 twenty or thirty furlongs, they beheld Jesus walking
 on the sea and drawing nigh to the boat ; and they
 were frightened. But he saith to them, It is I, be not 20
 afraid.—They were willing therefore to take him into 21
 the boat ; and straightway the boat was at the land
 whither they were going.

On the morrow the multitude that were standing 22
 at the other side of the sea found that there had been
 at that place no boat save one ;¹ and that Jesus had
 not gone into the boat with his disciples, but that
 his disciples had gone away alone ; yet boats from 23
 Tiberias had come near the place where, after the
 Lord had given thanks, they had eaten the bread.
 Therefore when the multitude saw that Jesus was 24
 not there, neither were his disciples, they themselves
 got into the boats, and went to Capernaum, seeking
 Jesus. And when they found him on the other side 25
 of the sea, they said to him, Rabbi, when camest
 thou hither ?—Jesus answered them and said, Verily, 26
 verily, I say to you, ye seek me, not because ye saw
 signs, but because ye ate of the loaves and were
 satisfied. Work not for the food that perisheth, 27
 but for the food that abideth unto eternal life, which
 food the Son of man will give you ; for on him the
 Father, even God, hath set his seal.—They said 28
 therefore unto him, What must we do, that we may

¹ Some MSS. add, ' that into which his disciples had gone.'

JOHN 6

29 work the works of God?—Jesus answered and said
 to them, This is the work of God, that ye should
 30 believe on him whom he sent.—They said therefore
 to him, What doest thou then as a sign, that we may
 see it, and believe thee? What workest thou?
 31 Our forefathers ate the manna in the wilderness,
 even as it is written, ‘He gave them bread out of
 32 heaven to eat.’—Jesus therefore said to them,
 Verily, verily, I say to you, it is not Moses that hath
 given¹ you the bread out of heaven; but my Father
 giveth you the bread out of heaven, the true bread.
 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down out
 34 of heaven, and giveth life to the world.—They said
 therefore unto him, Sir,² evermore give us this
 35 bread.—Jesus said to them, I am the bread of life;
 he that cometh unto me shall not hunger, and he
 36 that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said
 to you, that ye have seen me, and yet believe not.
 37 All that which the Father giveth me will come unto
 me; and him that cometh unto me I will in no wise
 38 cast out. For I have come down from heaven, not to
 do my own will, but the will of him that sent me.
 39 Now this is the will of him that sent me, that of all
 that he hath given me I should lose nothing, but
 40 should raise it up at the last day. For this is the
 will of my Father, that every one that beholdeth the
 Son, and believeth on him, should have eternal life,
 and I will raise³ him up at the last day.
 41 The Jews therefore murmured about him, because
 he said, I am the bread that came down out of
 42 heaven. And they said, Is not this Jesus, Joseph’s
 son, whose father and mother we know? how sayeth
 he now, ‘I have come down out of heaven’?—
 43 Jesus answered and said to them, Murmur not
 44 among yourselves. No one can come unto me,
 unless the Father who sent me draw him; and I will
 45 raise him up at the last day. It is written in the
 prophets, ‘And they shall all be taught by God.’
 Every one that listeneth to the Father, and learneth,
 46 cometh unto me. Not that any one hath seen the
 Father; he only that is from God, he hath seen
 47 the Father. Verily, verily, I say to you, he that

¹ Some MSS., ‘that gave.’ ² Or Lord (but cf. 4¹¹). ³ Or and that I should raise.

JOHN 6

believeth hath eternal life. I am the bread of life. 48
 Your forefathers ate the manna in the wilderness, 49
 and they died. This is the bread that cometh down 50
 out of heaven, that one may eat thereof and not die.
 I am the bread, the living bread, which came down 51
 out of heaven ; if any one eat of this bread, he shall
 live for ever ; yea, and the bread that I will give is
 my flesh, for the life of the world.

The Jews therefore contended one with another, 52
 saying, How can this man¹ give us his flesh to eat?
 —Jesus therefore said to them, Verily, verily, I say 53
 to you, unless ye eat the flesh of the Son of man,
 and drink his blood, ye have no life in yourselves.
 He that feedeth on my flesh, and drinketh my blood, 54
 hath eternal life ; and I will raise him up at the last
 day. For my flesh is true food, and my blood is 55
 true drink. He that feedeth on my flesh and 56
 drinketh my blood abideth in me, and I in him.
 Even as the living Father sent me, and I live because 57
 of the Father ; so he that feedeth on me, he also
 shall live because of me. This is the bread that 58
 came down out of heaven ; not as the forefathers
 ate and died, he that feedeth on this bread shall live
 for ever.—These things he said in synagogue,² as he 59
 taught in Capernaum.

Therefore many of his disciples, when they heard 60
 it, said, This is a hard saying ; who can listen to it?—
 But Jesus, knowing in himself that his disciples 61
 murmured at this, said to them, Doth this cause you
 to stumble? What then if ye should behold the 62
 Son of man ascending to where he was before? The 63
 spirit is that which giveth life ; the flesh profiteth
 nothing ; the words that I have spoken to you are
 spirit and are life. But there are of you some who 64
 believe not.—For Jesus knew from the beginning
 who they were that believed not, and who it was
 that would betray him. And he said, This is why 65
 I have said to you that no one can come unto me,
 unless it have been given him by the Father.

Hereupon many of his disciples turned back, and 66
 no longer went about with him. Jesus therefore 67
 said to the twelve, Do you also wish to go away?—
 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we 68

¹ ' This man ' is emphatic. ² = ' in church. '

69 go? thou hast words of eternal life ; and we have
 believed and know that thou art the Holy One of
 70 God.—Jesus answered them, Did not I choose you,
 71 the twelve? and one of you is a devil!—Now he
 was speaking of Judas, son of Simon Iscariot ; for he
 it was, one of the twelve, that was going to betray him;

7 And after these things Jesus went about in Galilee ;
 for he would not go about in Judæa, because the
 Jews were seeking to kill him.

2 Now the festival of the Jews, the festival of
 3 Tabernacles,¹ was at hand. His brothers therefore
 said unto him, Go away hence, and go into Judæa,
 that thy disciples also may behold thy works
 4 which thou doest. For no one doeth anything in
 secret, yet himself seeketh² to be known openly.
 If thou doest these things, manifest thyself to the
 5 world.—For even his brothers believed not on him.
 6 Jesus therefore saith to them, My time hath not yet
 7 come ; but your time is always at hand. The world
 cannot hate you ; but it hateth me, because I bear
 8 witness of it, that its works are evil. Go ye up to the
 festival ; I am not yet going³ up to this festival,
 9 because my time is not yet fulfilled.—And having
 said these things to them, he remained in Galilee.

10 But when his brothers had gone up to the festival,
 then he also went up, not publicly, but as it were in
 11 secret. The Jews therefore sought him at the
 12 festival, and said, Where is he?—And there was
 much murmuring among the multitudes concerning
 him ; some said, He is a good man ;—others said,
 13 Nay, but he deceiveth the multitude.—Yet, for fear
 of the Jews, no one spoke openly of him.

14 But when it was now the middle of the festival,
 Jesus went up into the temple, and began to teach.
 15 The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How cometh
 this man with his learning, never having been at
 16 school? Jesus therefore answered them, and said,
 My teaching is not my own, but the teaching of him
 17 that sent me. If any one willeth to do his will, he
 will get to know of the teaching,⁴ whether it is from
 18 God, or whether I speak from myself. He that

¹ Leviticus 23³³⁻⁴². ² Some MSS., 'and seeketh it to be.' ³ Some
 MSS., 'am not going.' ⁴ Psalm 119¹⁰⁰.

speaketh from himself seeketh his own honour ; but
 he that seeketh the honour of him that sent him, he
 is true, and there is no unrighteousness in him. Did 19
 not Moses give you the Law? and not one of you
 carrieth out the Law. Why seek ye to kill me?—
 The multitude answered, Thou hast a demon ; who 20
 is seeking to kill thee?—Jesus answered and said to 21
 them, I did one work, and ye all marvel thereat.
 Moses hath given you circumcision—not that it 22
 comes from Moses ; it comes from the forefathers—
 and on a sabbath ye circumcise a man. If a man 23
 receives circumcision on a sabbath that the law of
 Moses may not be done away with, are ye angry
 with me because I made a man perfectly well on a
 sabbath? Judge not by appearances, but give a 24
 just judgement.

Some therefore of the men of Jerusalem said, Is 25
 not this he whom they are seeking to kill? And, lo, 26
 he speaketh openly ; and they say nothing to him !
 Have the rulers¹ indeed come to know that this is the
 Christ? Yet we know this man, whence he is ; but 27
 when the Christ cometh, no one knoweth whence he
 is.—Jesus therefore cried aloud in the temple, teach- 28
 ing and saying, Ye know me, and ye know also
 whence I am ; yet I have not come of myself, but
 he that sent me is true, whom you know not. I know 29
 him ; because I am from him, and he sent me
 forth.—They sought therefore to seize him ; yet 30
 no one set hand on him ; because his hour had not
 yet come. But many of the multitude believed on 31
 him, and said, When the Christ shall come, will he
 work more signs than those that this man hath
 wrought?—The Pharisees heard the multitude 32
 murmuring these things about him ; and the high
 priests and the Pharisees sent out officers to seize
 him. Jesus therefore said, Yet a little while I am 33
 with you, and I go my way unto him that sent
 me. Ye will seek me, and will not find me ; and 34
 where I am, you cannot come.—The Jews there- 35
 fore said among themselves, Whither is this man
 going, that we shall not find him? will he go to
 The Dispersion² among the Greeks, and teach the

¹ See note, St. Luke 23¹⁸. ² A technical term for the Jews living outside Palestine.

- 36 Greeks?¹ What words are these that he said, 'Ye will seek me, and will not find me; and where I am, you cannot come'?
- 37 Now on the last day, the great day of the festival, Jesus stood and cried aloud, saying, If any one
- 38 thirsteth, let him come unto me and drink. He that believeth on me, out of his heart, even as the scripture said, there shall flow rivers of living water.—
- 39 But this he spoke concerning the Spirit, which they that believed on him would receive; for as yet there was no Spirit,² seeing that Jesus was not yet glorified.
- 40 Some of the multitude, therefore, hearing these
- 41 words, said, This is of a truth the prophet. Others said, This is the Christ. Some said, What! doth
- 42 the Christ come out of Galilee? Said not the scripture that the Christ cometh of the offspring of David, and from Bethlehem, the village where
- 43 David lived?—So there arose a division in the
- 44 multitude because of him. And some of them wanted to seize him; but no one set hands on him.
- 45 The officers therefore came unto the high priests and Pharisees; and these said to them, Why did ye
- 46 not bring him?—The officers answered, Never man
- 47 spoke as this man speaks.—The Pharisees therefore answered them, Are you also deceived? Hath
- 48 any of the rulers³ believed on him? or any of the
- 49 Pharisees? But this multitude that knoweth not the Law, they are accursed.—Nicodemus, he that had
- 50 come to him before, being one of them, saith unto
- 51 them, Doth our law sentence a man, unless it first
- 52 give him a hearing and learn what he doeth?—They answered and said to him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and see that out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.
- 53 And⁴ every one went to his own house; but Jesus
- 8 went to the Mount of the Olive Trees. But at

¹ *Ld.* Hellenes, which may denote persons of Greek descent; or may be a general designation of all who are not of Jewish origin (in this case practically—heathen, Gentiles). The Greek language was in use almost universally in countries to the east of Italy. See St. Mark 7²⁶. To Jews, Greek and Gentile meant one and the same thing. ² Some MSS., 'the Holy Spirit had not yet been given.' ³ See note, St. Luke 23¹². ⁴ The passage, 7⁴²⁻⁴³, is omitted in the Vatican, Sinaitic, and other MSS., and there are some variations in the MSS. that give it. This is no argument against the truth of the narrative. The author, or a friend, may have added it in what would now be called a second edition.

JOHN 8

daybreak he went back into the temple ; and all 2
 the people came unto him. And he sat down, and 3
 began to teach them. But the scribes and the 3
 Pharisees bring unto him a woman caught in adul- 4
 tery ; and setting her in the midst, they say to him, 4
 Master, this woman was caught committing adultery,
 in the very act. Now in the law Moses commanded 5
 us that such women should be stoned ; what there- 5
 fore sayest thou?—But this they said, testing¹ him, 6
 that they might have something whereof to accuse 6
 him. But Jesus stooping down wrote with his finger 7
 on the ground. But when they continued asking 7
 him, he lifted himself up, and said unto them, He
 of you that is without sin, let him be first to throw 8
 his stone at her.—And again he stooped down, and 8
 wrote on the ground. But they, hearing it, and their 9
 consciences convicting them, went out one by one,
 beginning at the older men, even unto the last ; and 9
 Jesus was left alone, with the woman standing in
 the midst. But Jesus, lifting himself up and seeing 10
 no one but the woman, said to her, Woman, where
 are those thy accusers ? did no one condemn thee ?
 —And she said, No one, Lord.—And Jesus said to 11
 her, Neither do I condemn thee ; go thy way, and
 sin no more.

Jesus therefore spoke again to them, saying, I am 12
 the light of the world ; he that followeth me will not 12
 walk in the darkness, but will have the light of life.
 —The Pharisees therefore said to him, Thou bearest 13
 witness to thyself ; thy witness is not true.—Jesus 14
 answered and said to them, Even if I bear witness
 to myself, my witness is true ; because I know whence 15
 I came, and whither I go ; but you know not whence 15
 I come, nor whither I go. You judge according to
 the flesh ; I judge no one. But even if I should 16
 judge, my judgement is true ; because I am not
 alone, but there are I and he that sent me. Yea, 17
 and in your own law² it is written that the witness of
 two men is true. I bear witness to myself ; and the 18
 Father who sent me beareth witness to me.—They 19
 said therefore to him, Where is thy father ?—Jesus
 answered, Ye know neither me, nor my Father ;

¹ Tempting (A.V.) ; see note, St. Matthew 4¹. ² Deuteronomy 19²⁸ ; 17².

JOHN 8

- if ye knew me, ye would know my Father also.—
- 20 These words he spake in the treasury, while teaching in the temple ; and no one seized him, because his hour had not yet come.
- 21 He said therefore again¹ to them, I go my way, and ye will seek me, and in your sin ye will die ; whither
- 22 I go, you cannot come.—The Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself, that he saith, ' Whither I go
- 23 you cannot come ' ?—And he said to them, You are from beneath, I am from above ; you are of this
- 24 world, I am not of this world. I said therefore to you that ye will die in your sins ; for unless ye
- 25 believe that I AM² ye will die in your sins.—They said therefore to him, Who art thou?—Jesus said
- 26 to them, Why do I speak to you at all?³ Many things I have to speak and to judge concerning you ; but he that sent me is true, and the things that I heard from him, these I speak unto the world.—
- 27 They perceived not that he was speaking to them
- 28 about the Father. Jesus therefore said, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then ye will know that I AM, and that of myself I do nothing ; but that, even as the Father taught me, I speak these
- 29 things. And he that sent me is with me, he hath not left me alone ; because I do always what pleases
- 30 him.—As he spake these things, many believed on him.
- 31 Jesus therefore said unto the Jews that had believed him, If you abide in my word, ye are truly
- 32 my disciples ; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth will set you free.—They made answer unto him,
- 33 We are Abraham's offspring, and have never been in bondage to any one ; how sayest thou, ' Ye
- 34 shall be set free ' ?—Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say to you, every one who committeth sin
- 35 is a bondman to sin. But a bondman abideth not
- 36 in the house for ever ; a son abideth for ever. Therefore, if the Son shall set you free, ye will be free
- 37 indeed. I know that ye are Abraham's offspring ; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word maketh

¹ See 7^{33, 4}. ² Implying the self-existence of Divinity (same Greek as in 28, 58 ; 13¹⁸. The A.V., except in 58, supplies *he*, meaning *the Christ*, though the context does not suggest it, as it does in 4⁴⁹). See Exodus 3¹⁴. ³ Or (I am) even that which I have also spoken unto you from the beginning (R.V.). Text brings out hopelessness of the situation ; but the meaning of the sentence is uncertain.

JOHN 8

no way in you. I speak the things that I have seen 38
with my Father ;¹ and you for your part do the
things that ye have heard from your father.—They 39
answered and said to him, Abraham is our father.—
Jesus saith to them, If ye are Abraham's children, do²
the works of Abraham. But, as it is, ye are seeking 40
to kill me, a man who hath spoken the truth to you,
which I heard from God ; Abraham did not thus.
You are doing the works of your father.—They said 41
to him, We were not born of fornication ; we have
one Father, even God.—Jesus said to them, If God 42
were your Father, ye would love me ; for I came
forth from God, and am here ; for neither have
I come of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not 43
understand my speech ? It is because ye cannot
hearken to my word. You are children of your 44
father the devil, and the lusts of your father it is
your will to do. He was a murderer from the
beginning, and stands not in the truth, because
there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie,
he speaketh as his nature is ; for a liar he is, and
the father thereof.³ But as for me, because I say 45
the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you con- 46
victeth me of sin ? If I say truth, why do you not
believe me ? He that is a child of God hearkeneth 47
to the words of God ; the reason why you hearken
not is that ye are not children of God.—The Jews 48
answered and said to him, Say we not rightly that
thou art a Samaritan, and hast a demon ?—Jesus 49
answered, I have no demon ; but I honour my
Father, and you dishonour me. But I seek not 50
my own glory ; there is one that seeketh it and
judgeth. Verily, verily, I say to you, if any one 51
keep my word, he shall never see death.—The Jews 52
said to him, Now we know that thou hast a
demon. Abraham died, and the prophets ; and thou
sayest, ' If any one keep my word, he shall never
taste death.' Surely thou art not greater than our 53
father Abraham, who died ? the prophets also died ;
whom makest thou thyself ?—Jesus answered, If I 54
glorify myself, my glory is nothing ; it is my Father
that glorifieth me, of whom you say, ' He is our 55

¹ *Lit.* at the side of the Father. ² Some MSS., 'ye would do.' ³ Or whenever one speaketh a lie, he speaketh as his nature is, for his father also is a liar.

God'; yet ye have not known him; but I know him. And if I should say, 'I know him not,' I should be like you, a liar; but I know him, and
 56 keep his word. Abraham, your father, was glad that he should see my day; and he saw it, and
 57 rejoiced.—The Jews therefore said unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen
 58 Abraham?¹—Jesus said to them, Verily, verily, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I AM.—
 59 They took up stones therefore to throw at him; but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple.²

9 And, as he was passing by, he saw a man blind
 2 from birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Rabbi, who sinned, this man, or his parents, that
 3 he should be born blind?—Jesus answered, Neither did this man sin, nor did his parents; but he was
 4 born blind that the works of God should be made manifest in him. While it is day, we must work
 5 the works of him that sent me; night is coming, when no one can work. Whosoever I am in the
 6 world, I am light to the world.—When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made
 7 clay with the spittle; and he put the clay on the man's eyes,³ and said to him, Go, wash in the
 8 pool of Siloam;—which is by translation, Sent. So he went away, and washed, and came seeing.
 9 The neighbours therefore and they that had seen him beforetime, that he was a beggar, said, Is
 10 not this he that used to sit and beg? Others said, This is he. Others said, No, but he is like him.
 11 The man said, I am he. They said therefore to him, Then how were thine eyes opened? He
 12 answered, The man who is called Jesus made clay, and anointed my eyes, and said to me, 'Go to
 13 Siloam, and wash'; so I went away and washed, and recovered my sight. And they said to him,
 14 Where is he? He saith, I know not.

13 They take him unto the Pharisees, the man who
 14 aforetime was blind. Now the day whereon Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes was a sabbath.
 15 In turn therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he recovered his sight. And he said to them, He

¹ A few authorities, 'and has Abraham seen thee.' ² Some MSS. add, 'and going through the midst of them went his way, and so passed by.' ³ Some MSS., 'and he anointed the man's eyes with the clay.'

JOHN 9

put clay upon my eyes, and I washed, and see.—Some 16
 therefore of the Pharisees said, This man is not from
 God, seeing that he keepeth not the sabbath.—
 Others said, How can a man who is a sinner work
 such signs?—And there was a division among them.
 They say therefore to the blind man again, What 17
 sayest thou of him, seeing that he opened thine
 eyes?—And he said, He is a prophet.—The Jews 18
 therefore did not believe about him, that he had been
 blind and had recovered his sight, until they called
 the parents of him that had recovered his sight, and 19
 questioned them, saying, Is this your son, of whom
 you say that he was born blind? How then doth
 he now see?—His parents therefore answered and 20
 said, We know that this is our son, and that he was
 born blind; but how he now seeth, we know not; 21
 or who opened his eyes, we know not; ask him, he
 is of age; he shall speak for himself.—These things 22
 his parents said, because they feared the Jews; for
 the Jews had agreed already, that if any one should
 acknowledge him as Christ, he should be excom-
 municated.¹ This is why the man's parents said, 23
 He is of age, ask him. They called therefore a second 24
 time the man that had been blind, and said to him,
 Give glory to God; as for us, we know that this man
 is a sinner.—He therefore answered, Whether he is a 25
 sinner, I know not; one thing I know, that, whereas
 I was blind, now I see.—They said therefore to him, 26
 What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?—
 He answered them, I told you just now, and ye did 27
 not hearken; why would ye hear it again? would
 you also become his disciples?—And they reviled 28
 him, and said, Thou indeed art that man's disciple;
 but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God 29
 hath spoken to Moses; but as for this man, we know
 not whence he is.—The man answered and said to 30
 them, Why, herein is the marvel, that you know not
 whence he is, and yet he opened my eyes. We know 31
 that God heareth not sinners; but if any one is a
 worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he
 heareth, Since the world began, it was never heard 32
 that any one opened the eyes of one born blind. If 33
 this man were not from God, he could do nothing.—

¹ Or put out of the synagogue.

JOHN 9, 10

- 34 They answered and said to him, Thou wast altogether born in sins ; and dost thou teach us?—And they put him out.
- 35 Jesus heard that they had put him out ; and he found him, and said, Dost thou believe on the
- 36 Son of man?¹—The man answered and said, And
- 37 who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him?—Jesus said to him, Thou hast seen him, and also he that
- 38 speaketh with thee is he.—And he said, Lord,
- 39 I believe.—And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgement I came into this world, that they that see not may see, and that they that see may
- 40 become blind.—Some of the Pharisees, they that were with him, heard these things ; and they said
- 41 to him, Are we also blind?—Jesus said to them, If ye were blind, ye would have no sin ; but, as it is, ye say, ‘ We see ’ ; your sin remaineth.
- 10 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that goeth not through the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up
- 2 some other way, he is a thief and a robber. But he that goeth in through the door is shepherd to the
- 3 sheep. To him the door-keeper openeth ; and the sheep hearken to his voice ; and he calleth his own
- 4 sheep by name, and leadeth them out. When he hath brought out all his own, he goeth before them, and
- 5 the sheep follow him ; because they know his voice. But a stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him ; because they know not the voice of
- 6 strangers.—This allegory² Jesus spoke to them ; but they understood not what he spoke to them.
- 7 Jesus therefore went on to say, Verily, verily, I
- 8 say to you, I am the door of the sheep. All, as many as came before me, are thieves and robbers ; but
- 9 the sheep hearkened not to them. I am the door ; through me if any one go in, he shall be saved, and
- 10 shall go in and go out, and shall find pasture. The thief cometh simply that he may steal and kill and destroy ; I came that they may have life, and may
- 11 have abundance.³ I am the good shepherd ; the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep.
- 12 He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholdeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, and the wolf

¹Some MSS., ‘the Son of God.’ ²Or proverb. ³Or may have it abundantly.

snatcheth and scattereth them ; he fleeth, because 13
 he is a hireling and careth not for the sheep. I am 14
 the good shepherd ; and I know mine own, and mine 15
 own know me, even as the Father knoweth me and 15
 I know the Father ; and I lay down my life for the 16
 sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of 16
 this fold ; them also I must lead, and they will 17
 hearken to my voice ; and they shall become¹ one 17
 flock, one shepherd.² The reason why my Father 17
 loveth me is that I lay down my life, that I may take 18
 it again. No one took it³ from me, but I lay it 18
 down of myself. I have authority to lay it down, 18
 and I have authority to take it again ;⁴ this com- 18
 mandment I received from my Father.

There broke out again a division among the Jews 19
 because of these words. And many of them said, 20
 He hath a demon, and is mad ; why hearken ye to 20
 him?—Others said, These are not the sayings of 21
 one possessed by a demon. Can a demon open 21
 blind men's eyes?

At that time the festival of the Dedication⁵ was 22
 held at Jerusalem ; it was winter ; and Jesus was 23
 walking in the temple, in Solomon's cloister. The 24
 Jews therefore came round about him, and said to 24
 him, How long dost thou keep us in suspense ? If 25
 thou art the Christ, tell us plainly.—Jesus answered 25
 them, I told you, and ye believe not ; the works that 25
 I do in my Father's name, these bear witness to me. 26
 But you believe not, because ye are not of my sheep. 26
 My sheep hearken to my voice, and I know them ; 27
 and they follow me, and I give them eternal life ; 28
 and they shall never perish, neither shall any one 28
 snatch them out of my hand. That which my 29
 Father hath given me is greater than all else ;⁶ and 29
 no one is able to snatch them out of the Father's 30
 hand. I and the Father are one.⁷

The Jews again brought stones to stone him. 31
 Jesus answered them, Many good works I have 32
 shown you from the Father ; for which of these 32
 works do ye stone me?—The Jews answered him, 33

¹ Or 'and there shall be.' ² 11⁴²; Ezekiel 34²³. ³ Some MSS., 'taketh it.' ⁴ He took it the first time at the Incarnation. ⁵ Anniversary of the cleansing of the Temple (1 Maccabees 4³⁸⁻³⁹) after being defiled by Antiochus Epiphanes (1 Maccabees 1⁵⁴⁻⁷). ⁶ Some MSS., 'My Father who hath given them to me is greater than all else.' ⁷ Lit. one being ('unum,' Vulgate).

For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy; and because thou, being a man, makest
 34 thyself God.—Jesus answered them, Is it not
 35 written in your law, 'I said, ye are gods'? If it
 36 called them gods, unto whom the word of God came
 (and the scripture cannot be done away¹), say you
 of him whom the Father consecrated and sent forth
 into the world, 'Thou blasphemest,' because I said,
 37 'I am God's Son'? If I do not the works of my
 38 Father, believe me not; but if I do them, though
 ye believe not me, believe the works; that ye
 may know and understand that the Father is in
 39 me, and I am in the Father.—Therefore they
 sought again to seize him; and he went forth
 out of their hands.

40 And he went away back beyond the Jordan to the
 place where John was baptizing at the first; and
 41 there he abode. And many came unto him; and
 they said, John indeed wrought no sign: but all
 things whatsoever John spoke of this man were
 42 true.—And many believed on him there.

11 Now there was a certain man sick, Lazarus of
 Bethany, the village of Mary and her sister Martha.
 2 The Mary who anointed the Lord with ointment,
 and wiped his feet dry with her hair, was
 3 she whose brother Lazarus was sick. The sisters
 therefore sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he
 4 who is dear to thee is sick.—But Jesus, hearing it
 said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the
 glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified
 5 hereby.—Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister,
 6 and Lazarus. So, when he heard that he was sick,
 he abode at the time two days in the place where he
 7 was; then, after this, he saith to the disciples, Let
 8 us go back into Judæa.—The disciples say to him,
 Rabbi, the Jews but now were seeking to atone thee;
 9 and goest thou thither again?—Jesus answered,
 Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any
 walketh in the day, he stumbleth not, because he
 10 seeth the light of this world. But if any walketh in
 the night, he stumbleth, because the light is not in
 11 him.—These things he spoke; and after this he

¹ Broken (A.V.), solvi (Vulgate). See 5¹⁰; 7¹⁰.

saith to them, Lazarus, our friend, hath fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him.—The disciples therefore said to him, Lord, if he hath fallen asleep, he will recover.¹—Now Jesus had spoken of his death; but they thought that he was speaking of the rest taken in sleep. Thereupon Jesus said to them plainly, Lazarus is dead; and I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent that ye may believe; nevertheless, let us go unto him.—Thomas (who is called Didymus²) said therefore to his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four days already. (Now Bethany was near Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; and many of the Jews had come unto Martha and Mary, to console them concerning their brother.) Martha therefore, when she heard that Jesus was coming, went to meet him; but Mary remained sitting in the house. Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. And even now I know that, whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give it thee.—Jesus saith to her, Thy brother shall rise.—Martha saith to him, I know that he will rise in the resurrection in the last day.—Jesus saith to her, I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth on me shall live though he die; and whosoever liveth and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this?—She saith to him, Yea, Lord, I have believed that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, he that cometh into the world.—And having said this, she went away and called Mary her sister, saying secretly, The Master is come, and calleth thee.—And she, when she heard, arose quickly, and went unto him.

Now Jesus had not yet come into the village, but was still in the place where Martha had met him. The Jews therefore who were with Mary in the house, and were consoling her, seeing that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, thinking that she was going to the tomb to wail there. Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, and saw him, fell down at his feet, saying to him, Lord, if

¹ Lit. be saved. *i.e., Twin.

thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.—

33 Jesus therefore, when he saw her wailing, and the
 34 Jews wailing who came with her, was moved with
 indignation in his spirit, and troubled himself, and
 said, Where have ye laid him?—They say to him,
 35 Lord, come and see.—Jesus wept.¹ The Jews there-
 36 fore said, Behold, how dear he was to him!—But
 37 some of them said, Could not this man, who opened
 the blind man's eyes, have brought it about that
 this man also should not die?

38 Jesus therefore, again moved with indignation
 within himself, cometh to the tomb. Now it was
 39 a cave, and a stone was lying upon it. Jesus saith,
 Lift the stone.—Martha, the sister of the dead man,
 saith to Jesus, Lord, by this time he stinketh; for
 40 it is now the fourth day.—Jesus saith to her, Said
 I not to thee, If thou believe, thou shalt see the
 41 glory of God?—So they lifted the stone. But Jesus
 lifted his eyes upwards, and said, Father, I thank
 42 thee, that thou heardest me. Yet I knew that thou
 hearest me always; but because of the multitude
 that stand around I said it, that they may believe
 43 that thou didst send me.—And having said this, he
 cried out with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth!—
 44 Forth came the dead man, bound feet and hands
 with swathings; and his face was bound about
 with a napkin. Jesus saith to them, Loose him,
 and let him go.

45 Therefore many of the Jews, they that had come
 to Mary and had seen what he did, believed on
 46 him. But some of them went away unto the Phari-
 sees, and told them what things Jesus had done.
 47 The high priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered
 together a council, and said, What are we doing?
 48 seeing that this man worketh many signs. If we let
 him alone in this way, all will believe on him; and
 the Romans will come and will take away both our
 49 place² and our nation.—But a certain one of them,
 Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, said to
 50 them, You know nothing at all, nor take into account
 that it is expedient for you that one man should die
 for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.
 51 —Now this he said, not of himself; but, being high

¹ *Lit.* burst into tears. ² Meaning (probably) the Temple; *cf.* Acts 6¹⁴; 21²⁸.

priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus would die for the nation ; and not for the nation only, but that he might also gather together, into one, God's children who are scattered abroad. So from that day forth they determined to kill him.

Jesus therefore no longer went about openly among the Jews, but went away thence into the country near the wilderness, to a city called Ephraim ; and there he tarried with the disciples. Now the Passover of the Jews was nigh ; and many went up out of the country to Jerusalem before the Passover, to purify themselves. They sought therefore for Jesus, and said one to another as they stood in the temple, What think ye? that he will not come to the festival?—Now the high priests and the Pharisees had given orders that, if any one knew where he was, he should report it, that they might seize him.

Jesus therefore, six days before the Passover, went to Bethany, where Lazarus was, whom Jesus had raised from the dead. So they gave a supper for him there ; and Martha was serving, but Lazarus was one of them that sat¹ at table with him. Mary therefore took a pound of ointment of pure nard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and with her hair wiped his feet dry ; and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, who was about to betray him, saith, Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred shillings, and given to poor persons?—But he said this, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and keeping the box used to pilfer what was put therein. Jesus therefore said, Suffer her to keep it for the day of my burying. For the poor ye have always with you, but me ye have not always.

So the common people of the Jews learnt that he was there ; and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. But the high priests determined to kill Lazarus also, because by reason of him many of the Jews were going away and believing on Jesus.

On the morrow the common people who had come

¹ *Lit.* reclined (and in some other places).

JOHN 12

13 to the festival, hearing that Jesus was on the way to Jerusalem, took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him ; and they were shouting, Hosanna !

Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the Lord,

Even the king of Israel !

14 But Jesus, finding a young ass, took his seat thereon even as it is written,

15 ' Fear not, daughter of Zion ;

Behold, thy king cometh,

Sitting on an ass's colt.'

16 (These things the disciples understood not at first ; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things for him.)

17 The multitude therefore, that were with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him

18 from the dead, bore witness. And the reason why the multitude went to meet him was that

19 they heard he had wrought this sign. The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Ye see that ye

do no good ; behold, the world hath gone away after him.

20 Now there were certain Greeks among them that were going up to worship at the festival ; these

21 men, therefore, went up to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and began to ask him, saying,

22 Sir, we would see Jesus.—Philip goeth and telleth Andrew ; Andrew goeth, and Philip, and they tell

23 Jesus. But Jesus answered them, saying, The hour hath come that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth by itself

25 alone ; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. He that loveth his life loseth it ; and he that hateth his life

26 in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. If any one serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am,

27 the Father will honour him. Now my soul is troubled ; and what am I to say ? Father, bring

me safe out of this hour. Nay, this is why I came

28 unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name.—There came therefore a voice out of heaven, I both have

29 glorified it, and will glorify it again.—The multitude

JOHN 12

13 to the festival, hearing that Jesus was on the way to Jerusalem, took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him ; and they were shouting, Hosanna !

Blessed is the Coming One in the name of the Lord,

Even the king of Israel !

14 But Jesus, finding a young ass, took his seat thereon even as it is written,

15 ' Fear not, daughter of Zion ;

Behold, thy king cometh,

Sitting on an ass's colt.'

16 (These things the disciples understood not at first ; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things for him.)

17 The multitude therefore, that were with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him

18 from the dead, bore witness. And the reason why the multitude went to meet him was that

19 they heard he had wrought this sign. The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Ye see that ye

do no good ; behold, the world hath gone away after him.

20 Now there were certain Greeks among them that were going up to worship at the festival ; these

men, therefore, went up to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and began to ask him, saying,

22 Sir, we would see Jesus.—Philip goeth and telleth Andrew ; Andrew goeth, and Philip, and they tell

23 Jesus. But Jesus answered them, saying, The hour hath come that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth by itself

25 alone ; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. He that loveth his life loseth it ; and he that hateth his life

26 in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. If any one serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am,

27 the Father will honour him. Now my soul is troubled ; and what am I to say ? Father, bring

me safe out of this hour. Nay, this is why I came

28 unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name.—There came therefore a voice out of heaven, I both have

29 glorified it, and will glorify it again.—The multitude

as light into the world, that whosoever believeth on
 47 me may not abide in the darkness. And if any one
 heareth my sayings, and observeth them not, I judge
 him not myself; for I came not that I might judge
 48 the world, but that I might save the world. He that
 rejecteth me, and receiveth not my sayings, hath one
 that judgeth him; the word that I spoke, the same
 49 will judge him at the last day. For I spoke not from
 myself; but the Father who sent me, hath himself
 given me commandment, what I should say, and
 50 how I should speak.¹ And I know that his command-
 ment is eternal life; therefore the things that I speak,
 even as the Father hath said to me, so I speak.

13 Now—it was before the festival of the Passover—
 Jesus knowing that his hour had come that he should
 depart out of this world unto the Father, having
 loved his own who were in the world, loved them
 2 to the end. And during supper (the devil having
 already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot,
 3 Simon's son, to betray him), Jesus, knowing that
 the Father had given him all things into his hands,
 and that from God he came forth, and unto God
 4 he is going, riseth from supper and layeth aside
 his upper garments; and taking a towel he girded
 5 himself. Then he poureth water into the basin, and
 began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them
 6 dry with the towel wherewith he was girded. So
 he cometh unto Simon Peter. He saith to him,
 7 Lord, dost thou wash my feet!—Jesus answered and
 said to him, What I do, thou knowest not now; but
 8 thou shalt learn hereafter.—Peter saith to him, Thou
 shalt never wash my feet!—Jesus answered him,
 If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.—
 9 Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, not my feet only,
 10 but also my hands and my head.—Jesus saith to
 him, He that hath bathed needeth not to wash, except
 his feet,² but is altogether clean; and you are clean,
 11 but not all.—For he knew who was his betrayer;
 this was why he said, Ye are not all clean.
 12 So when he had washed their feet, and had put on
 his garments, and had sat down again, he said to
 them, Understand ye what I have done to you?

¹ Ce que je dois dire, et comment je dois parler (De Genoude).
² Some MSS. omit the last three words.

You call me, Master and Lord ; and ye say well ; 13
 for so I am. Therefore, if I have washed your feet, 14
 I, the Lord and the Master, you also ought to wash
 one another's feet ; for I have given you an example, 15
 that, even as I have done to you, you also should do.
 Verily, verily, I say to you, there is no bondman 16
 greater than his lord, nor apostle¹ greater than he
 that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are 17
 ye if ye do them. Not of you all am I speaking ; 18
 I know whom I chose ; but it was that the scripture
 may be fulfilled, ' He that feedeth on my bread²
 lifted up his heel against me.' Henceforth I tell 19
 you before it³ comes to pass, that, when it hath
 come to pass, ye may believe that I AM.⁴ Verily, 20
 verily, I say to you, he that receiveth whomsoever
 I send receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me
 receiveth him that sent me.

When Jesus had said these things, he was troubled 21
 in spirit, and bore witness, and said, Verily, verily,
 I say to you, one of you will betray me. The 22
 disciples began to look one on another, wondering
 of whom he spoke. There was at the table, re- 23
 clining on Jesus' bosom, one of his disciples, the one
 that Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoneth 24
 to him, and saith to him, Tell us who it is of whom
 he speaks.—He leaning back, as he was, on to Jesus' 25
 breast, saith to him, Lord, who is it?—Jesus there- 26
 fore answereth, He it is, for whom I shall dip the
 sop, and give it him.—So having dipped the
 sop, he taketh and giveth it to Judas, son of 27
 Simon Iscariot. And, after the sop, then Satan
 entered into him. Jesus therefore saith to him, 28
 What thou doest, hasten it on.—Now no one of
 those at the table knew with what intent he said this 29
 to him. For some thought, inasmuch as Judas
 kept the box, that Jesus said to him, ' Buy the things
 that we need for the festival ' ; or, that he should
 give something to the poor. So he, having taken 30
 the sop, went out straightway ; now it was
 night.

Therefore, when he had gone out, Jesus saith, 31
 Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified

¹ Or messenger ; but see the same titles in 2 Peter 1². ² Some MSS.
 ' He that eateth bread with me ' ; Psalm 41⁹. ³ The betrayal and its
 consequences. ⁴ See note to 8¹⁴.

JOHN 13, 14

32 in him. If God is glorified in him,¹ God will also glorify him in himself; and straightway he will
 33 glorify him. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye will seek me; and even as I said to the Jews, 'Whither I go, you cannot come,' so now
 34 I say to you. A new commandment² I give you, that ye love one another; even as I have loved you, that
 35 you also love one another. By this all will perceive that ye are my disciples; if ye have love one to another.
 36 Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, whither goest thou?—Jesus answered, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now, but thou shalt follow later.—
 37 Peter saith to him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee even now? I will lay down my life for thee.—
 38 Jesus answereth, Wilt thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say to thee, a cock will not crow, until thou hast disowned me thrice.

14 Let not your hearts be troubled; believe in God,
 2 believe also in me. In my Father's house are many abiding-places;³ if it were not so, would I have told
 3 you that I go to prepare a place for you?⁴ and if I go and prepare a place for you, I am coming back, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am,
 4 you also may be. And whither I go, ye know the
 5 way.⁵—Thomas saith to him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; how do we know the way?—
 6 Jesus saith to him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one cometh unto the Father but through
 7 me. If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also; henceforth ye know him, and have
 8 seen him.—Philip saith to him, Lord, show us the
 9 Father, and it sufficeth us.—Jesus saith to him, Have I been so long time with you, and dost not thou know me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; how sayest thou, 'Show us the Father'?
 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I say to you, I speak not from myself; but the Father abiding in
 11 me doeth his works. Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me; or else believe for

¹ Some MSS. omit the last six words, reading in him; 82 and God will glorify him in himself. ² Leviticus 19²⁸. ³ Mansions (A.V.). ⁴ Or I would have told you; for I go, etc. (R.V.). ⁵ Some MSS., 'And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.'

JOHN 14

the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say to you, 12
 he that believeth on me, the works that I do he also
 shall do ; and greater works than these he shall do,
 because I go unto the Father. And whatsoever ye 13
 shall ask in my name, that I will do, that the Father
 may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask me¹ 14
 anything in my name, I will do it.

If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments ; 15
 and I will request the Father, and he will give you 16
 another Advocate,² to be with you for ever, the 17
 Spirit of truth ; whom the world cannot receive,
 because it beholdeth him not, neither knoweth him.
 You know him, because he abideth with you and
 will be in you. I will not leave you fatherless ;³ I am 18
 coming unto you. Yet a little while, and the 19
 world no longer beholdeth me, but you behold me ;
 because I live, you also shall live. In that day you 20
 will know that I am in my Father, and you in me,
 and I in you. He that hath my commandments, 21
 and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me ; but he
 that loveth me will be loved by my Father, and I will
 love him, and will manifest myself unto him.

Judas (not Judas Iscariot) saith to him, Lord, and 22
 how cometh it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto
 us, and not unto the world?—Jesus answered and 23
 said to him, If any one loveth me, he will keep my
 word ; and my Father will love him, and we will
 come unto him, and make our abode with him. He 24
 that loveth me not keepeth not my words ; and the
 word that ye hear is not mine, but the word of the
 Father who sent me.

These things I have spoken to you, while yet 25
 abiding with you. But the Advocate, the Holy 26
 Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he
 will teach you all things, and will bring to your
 remembrance all things that I have said to you.
 Peace I leave with you ; my peace I give unto you ; 27
 not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not
 your hearts be troubled, neither let them be afraid.
 Ye heard that I said to you, ' I go away, and I come 28
 unto you.' If ye loved me, ye would have rejoiced
 that I am going unto the Father ; because the

¹ Some MSS. omit, 'me.' ² Greek, Paraclete, ³ Or bereaved (*ill.*
 orphans) ; see 13²², and St. James 1¹⁷.

JOHN 14, 15

29 Father is greater than I. And now I have told you
 before it comes to pass ; that, when it hath come to
 30 pass, ye may believe. No longer will I talk much
 with you, for the prince of the world cometh, and
 31 in me he hath nothing ; but he cometh that the
 world may know that I love the Father, and that,
 as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do.
 Arise, let us go hence.¹

15 I am the vine, the true vine, and my Father is
 2 the husbandman. Every branch in me, not bearing
 fruit, he taketh it away ; and every branch bearing
 fruit, he cleanseth² it, that it may bear more fruit.
 3 Already you are clean because of the word that I have
 4 spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you.³ Even
 as the branch cannot bear fruit from itself, unless it
 abide in the vine ; so neither can you, unless ye abide
 5 in me. I am the vine, you are the branches. He
 that abideth in me, and I in him, he beareth much
 6 fruit ; for without me ye can do nothing. If any
 one abideth not in me, he is cast outside as a branch,
 and is withered ; and they⁴ gather them together,
 7 and cast them into the fire, and they are burnt. If
 ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask
 whatsoever ye will, and it shall come to pass for you.
 8 In this is my Father glorified, that ye may bear
 much fruit ; and ye shall become my disciples.
 9 Even as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved
 10 you ; abide in my love. If ye keep my command-
 ments, ye will abide in my love ; even as I have kept
 my Father's commandments and abide in his love.
 11 These things I have spoken to you, that my joy
 may be in you, and that your joy may be made full.
 12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another,
 13 even as I have loved you. Greater love hath no one
 than this, that one lay down his life for his friends.
 14 You are my friends, if ye do what I command you.
 15 No longer do I call you Bondmen ; because the
 bondman knoweth not what his lord doeth. But
 I have called you Friends ; because I made known
 unto you all things that I heard from my Father.

¹ Some think that the contents of chaps. 15-17 were spoken before they left the upper room ; others that they are discourses uttered on the way to Gethsemane or in the Temple. ²=prunes. ³=admit me to abide in you. ⁴ The pronoun is here used impersonally, as the French 'on,' there being no reason for defining the gatherers ; cf. St. Luke 12²⁴, and many other places.

JOHN 15, 16

You did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain ; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye may love one another. If the world hateth you, know¹ that it hath hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love its own ; but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said to you, There is no bondman greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will persecute you also ; if they kept my word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have had no sin ; but now they have no excuse for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them works such as none other did, they would have had no sin ; but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. But they do it that the word written² in their law may be fulfilled, ' They hated me without a cause.' When the Advocate hath come, whom I will send to you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father, he will bear witness of me ; yea, you also bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

These things I have spoken to you, that ye may not be made to stumble. They will excommunicate you ; yea, an hour cometh for every one who killeth you to think that he is offering service unto God. And these things they will do, because they knew not the Father, nor me. But these things I have spoken to you, that when their hour hath come, ye may remember that I told you of them. Yet, because I was with you, I told you not these things until now. But now I am going unto him that sent me ; and not one of you asketh me, ' Whither goest thou ? ' But because I have spoken these things to you, sorrow hath filled your hearts. But I tell you the truth ; It is expedient for you that I go

¹ Or ye know. ² Psalm 69 ⁴.

away ; for if I go not away, the Advocate will not come unto you ; but if I go, I will send him
 8 unto you. And he, when he hath come, will convict the world in respect of sin, and of righteousness, and
 9 of judgement ; of sin, because they believe not on me ; of righteousness, because I go to the Father,
 10 and ye behold me no longer ; of judgement, because the prince of this world hath been judged.

12 Many things yet I have to say to you, but ye
 13 cannot bear them now. But when he, the Spirit of truth, hath come, he will guide you into all the truth ; for he will not speak from himself, but whatsoever things he heareth he will speak, and he will de-
 14 clare unto you the things to come. He will glorify me ; for he will take of what is mine, and
 15 will declare it unto you. All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine ; this is why I said that he taketh of what is mine and will declare it unto
 16 you. A little while, and ye behold me no longer ;
 17 and again a little while, and ye shall see me.—Some of his disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he saith to us, ‘ A little while, and ye behold me not ; and again a little while, and ye shall see me,’ and ‘ Because I go to the Father ’?—
 18 They said therefore, This ‘ little while ’ that he saith, what is it? We know not what he speaketh.
 19 —Jesus perceived that they wanted to ask him, and he said to them, Is it of this that ye are inquiring one of another, my saying, ‘ A little while, and ye behold me not ; and again a little while, and ye shall see me ’? Verily, verily, I say to you, you will weep and lament, but the world will rejoice ; you will be brought to sorrow, but your sorrow shall
 20 be turned into joy. A woman, when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour hath come ; but when she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no longer the anguish, for her joy that a man is
 21 born into the world. And you therefore have sorrow now ; but I will see you again, and your hearts shall rejoice, and your joy no one taketh from
 22 you. And in that day ye will ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say to you, if ye shall ask the Father
 23 for anything, he will give it you in my name. Hitherto ye have asked for nothing in my name ; ask,
 24 and ye shall receive, that your joy may be made full.

These things I have spoken to you in proverbs ;¹ 25
 an hour is coming when I will no longer speak to you
 in proverbs, but will tell you plainly of the Father.
 In that day ye shall ask in my name ; and I say not 26
 to you, that I will request the Father for you ; for 27
 of himself the Father loveth you, because you have
 loved me and have believed that I came forth from
 God. I came forth from the Father, and have come 28
 into the world ; again, I leave the world, and go
 unto the Father.—His disciples say, Lo, now thou 29
 speakest plainly, and speakest no proverb ; now we 30
 know that thou knowest all things, and needest not
 that any one should ask thee ;² herein we believe that
 thou camest out from God.—Jesus answered them, 31
 Do ye now believe ? Behold, an hour is coming, yea, 32
 hath come, for you to be scattered, each to his own
 home, and to leave me alone ; yet I am not alone,
 because the Father is with me. These things I have 33
 spoken to you, that in me ye may have peace. In the
 world ye have tribulation ; but be of good cheer,
 I have overcome the world.

These things Jesus spoke ; and lifting up his eyes 17
 to heaven, he said,

Father, the hour hath come ; glorify thy Son,³ that 2
 the Son may glorify thee, even as thou gavest him
 authority over all mankind, that whatsoever⁴ thou
 hast given him, he should give to them eternal life.
 But the eternal life is this, that they may know thee, 3
 the only true God, and him whom thou didst send,
 Jesus Christ. I glorified thee on the earth, in accom- 4
 plishing the work that thou hast given me to do. And 5
 now glorify thou me, Father, with⁵ thine own self,
 with the glory that I had with⁵ thee before the world
 was.

I manifested thy name to the men that thou 6
 gavest me out of the world ; thine they were, and
 thou gavest them to me, and they have kept thy
 word. Now they know that all things whatsoever 7
 thou hast given me are from thee ; for the words 8
 that thou gavest me I have given unto them ; and
 they received them, and knew of a truth that I came

¹ Or allegories. ² Almighty God, who knowest our necessities before we ask—(Collect, Communion Service). ³Cf. 11⁴⁰, ⁴¹. ⁴The Greek here is in the singular. Believers are given as an united whole. ⁵Apud (Vulgate), as in 1⁴⁰ ; 8⁴⁰ ; 14²², etc ; 'with' i.e., in one's house, town, society.

forth from thee, and they believed that thou didst
 9 send me. It is for them I make request ; not for
 the world I make it, but for them whom thou
 10 hast given me ; because they are thine. And all
 things that are mine are thine, and thine are mine ;
 11 and I have been glorified in them. And no longer
 am I in the world, and these are in the world, and
 I am coming unto thee. Holy Father, keep them in
 thy name, which thou hast given me, that they may
 12 be one,¹ even as we are one. While I was with them,
 I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me ;
 and I guarded them, and not one of them perished,
 except the son of perdition ; that the scripture might
 13 be fulfilled. But now I am coming unto thee ; and
 these things I speak in the world, that they may have
 14 my joy made full in themselves. I have given them
 thy word ; and the world hated them, because they
 are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.
 15 I request not that thou wouldst take them out of the
 world but that thou wouldst keep them from the
 16 evil one. They are not of the world, even as I am not
 17 of the world. Consecrate them in the truth ; thy
 18 word is truth. Even as thou didst send me into the
 19 world, so also I sent them into the world. And for
 their sakes I consecrate myself, that they also may
 be consecrated in truth.
 20 Yet not for these only I make request, but for
 them also that believe on me through their word,
 21 that they all may be one ;² even as thou, Father,
 in me, and I in thee, that they also may be in us ;
 that the world may believe that thou didst send me.
 22 And the glory that thou hast given me I have given
 to them, that they may be one³ even as we are one ;¹
 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be per-
 fected into one ; that the world may know that
 thou didst send me, and lovedst them, even as
 24 thou lovedst me. Father, that which² thou hast
 given me, I would that, where I am, they also may
 be with me, that they may behold my glory, which
 thou hast given me, because thou lovedst me before
 25 the foundation of the world. Righteous Father, the
 world indeed knew thee not ; but I knew thee, and
 26 these knew that thou didst send me ; and I made

¹ Lit. one being (as in 10²⁰). ² The Greek is in the singular, as in verse 2.

thy name known to them, and will make it known ;
that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in
them, and I in them.

After saying these words, Jesus went forth with 18
his disciples over the brook of the Cedars, where
was a garden, into which he went himself and his
disciples. Now Judas also, his betrayer, knew the 2
place ; because Jesus and his disciples often
met together there. Judas therefore, taking the 3
battalion,¹ and officers from the high priests and
from the Pharisees, goeth thither with lanterns and
torches and weapons. Jesus therefore, knowing all 4
that was coming upon him, went forth, and saith
to them, Whom seek ye?—They answered him, 5
Jesus, the Nazorean.—He saith to them, I am he.—
Now Judas also, his betrayer, was standing with
them. Therefore when he said to them, ' I am he,' 6
they drew back and fell to the ground. So he asked
them again, Whom seek ye?—And they said, Jesus, 7
the Nazorean.—Jesus answered, I told you that I am
he ; therefore, if ye seek me, let these go their way— 8
that the word that he had spoken might be fulfilled, 9
' Of them that thou hast given me I lost not one.'

Simon Peter therefore, having a sword, drew it, 10
and struck the high priest's bondman, and cut off his
right ear. Now the bondman's name was Malchus.
Jesus therefore said to Peter, Put up thy sword into 11
its sheath ; the cup that the Father hath given me,
shall I not drink it?

So the battalion and the commandant² and the 12
officers of the Jews seized Jesus, and bound him, and 13
led him unto Annas first ; for he was father-in-law
to Caiaphas, who was high priest that year. Now 14
Caiaphas was he that counselled the Jews, that it
was expedient that one man should die for the people.

Now Simon Peter was following Jesus, and so was 15
another disciple. But that disciple was known unto
the high priest, and went with Jesus into the high
priest's court ; but Peter was standing outside at the 16
door. So the other disciple, the one known unto the

¹ The Roman garrison, or part of it. A similarly strong escort was sent with St. Paul, Acts 23^{al}. See also St. Matthew 26^{sa}. Jerusalem was crowded at this feast. ² A Roman military tribune, commander of a cohort, our 'colonel.'

high priest, went out and spoke to her that kept the
 17 door, and he brought in Peter. So the maid-
 servant that kept the door saith to Peter, Art thou
 also one of this man's disciples?—He saith, I am
 18 not.—Now the bondmen and the officers had made
 a charcoal fire (because it was cold) and were stand-
 ing and warming themselves; but Peter also was
 with them, standing and warming himself.

19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus about his
 20 disciples, and about his teaching. Jesus answered
 him, I have spoken openly to the world; I always
 taught in synagogue and in the temple, where all
 the Jews come together; and in secret I spoke
 21 nothing. Why askest thou me? ask them that
 have heard me, what I spoke to them; behold,
 22 these know what I said.—Now when he had said
 these things, one of the officers, who was standing
 by, struck Jesus with his hand, saying, Answerest
 23 thou the high priest so?¹—Jesus answered him, If
 I spoke evil, bear witness of the evil; but if rightly,
 24 why smitest thou me?—Annas therefore sent him
 bound to Caiaphas the high priest.

25 But Simon Peter was standing and warming
 himself. So they said to him, Art thou also one of
 his disciples?—He denied, and said, I am not.—
 26 One of the high priest's bondmen, being a kinsman
 of him whose ear Peter cut off, saith, Did not I see
 27 thee with him in the garden?—Peter therefore
 denied again; and straightway a cock crew.

28 So they led Jesus from Caiaphas's house into the
 palace;² now it was early, and they themselves
 went not into the palace, that they might not be
 29 defiled, but might eat the Passover. Pilate there-
 fore went forth outside to them, and saith, What
 30 accusation bring ye against, this man?—They
 answered and said to him, Had not this man been
 doing evil,³ we should not have delivered him to
 31 thee.—Pilate therefore said to them, Take him your-
 selves, and judge him according to your own law.—
 The Jews said to him, It is not lawful for us to put
 32 any one to death—that the word of Jesus might be
 fulfilled, which he spoke, signifying by what manner
 of death he should die.

¹ Acts 23². ² *Lit.* the *prætorium* (*prætor's house*). ³ Some MSS.,
 'been an evil-doer.'

So Pilate went back into the palace, and called 33
 Jesus, and said to him, Art thou indeed the king of
 the Jews?—Jesus answered, Of thyself sayest thou 34
 this? or did others tell it thee of me?—Pilate 35
 answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the
 high priests delivered thee to me; what hast thou
 done?—Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this 36
 world; if my kingdom were of this world, my
 officers would fight, that I should not be delivered
 to the Jews; but, as it is, my kingdom is not of
 this kind.¹—Pilate therefore saith to him, Thou art 37
 a king, then!—Jesus answered, Thou speakest truly;
 I am a king. The reason why I have been born,
 and why I have come into the world, is that I may
 bear witness to the truth; every one who holds to
 the truth hearkeneth to my voice.—Pilate saith to 38
 him, What is truth?—And having said this, he went
 out again unto the Jews, and saith to them, I find in
 him no fault. But ye have a custom that I should 39
 release unto you one at the—Passover; will ye
 therefore that I release unto you the king of the
 Jews?—They shouted therefore again, saying, 40
 Not this man, but Barabbas!—Now Barabbas was a
 robber.

Thereupon Pilate took Jesus; and scourged him. 19
 And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put 2
 it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple cloak;
 and they kept going unto him, and saying, Hail! 3
 King of the Jews!—And they struck him with their
 hands. And Pilate again went forth outside, and 4
 saith to the Jews, Behold, I bring him out to you,
 that ye may know that I find in him no fault.—
 Jesus therefore went forth outside, wearing the 5
 crown of thorns and the purple cloak. And Pilate
 saith to them, Behold, the man!—Therefore, when 6
 the high priests and the officers saw him, they
 shouted, saying, Crucify him, crucify him!—Pilate
 saith to them, Take him yourselves, and crucify
 him; for I find in him no fault.—The Jews answered 7
 him, We have a law, and according to that law he
 ought to die, because he made himself God's Son
 —Pilate therefore, when he heard that saying, was the 8
 more afraid; and he went back into the palace, and 9

¹ *Lit.* is not from here.

saith to Jesus, Whence art thou?—But Jesus made
 10 him no answer. Pilate therefore saith to him,
 Speakest thou not to me? knowest thou not that
 I have authority to release thee, and have authority
 11 to crucify thee?—Jesus answered, Thou wouldst
 have no authority at all over me, had it not been
 given thee from above ; therefore he¹ that delivered
 me to thee hath greater sin.

12 Hereupon Pilate sought to release him ; but the
 Jews shouted, saying, If thou release this man, thou
 art no friend of Cæsar ; every one that maketh
 himself a king setteth himself² against Cæsar.—
 13 Pilate therefore, when he heard these words, brought
 Jesus outside, and sat down³ on the judgement-seat
 at a place called the Pavement (but in Hebrew,
 14 Gabbatha). Now it was the Preparation for the
 Passover ; it was about the sixth hour. And he
 15 saith to the Jews, Behold, your king !—Therefore
 they shouted, Away with him, away with him ;
 crucify him !—Pilate saith to them, Shall I crucify
 your king?—The high priests answered, We have
 16 no king but Cæsar.—Thereupon he delivered him
 to them to be crucified.

17 So they took Jesus with them ; and he went forth,
 carrying the cross for himself, unto the place called
 The place of a skull (which in Hebrew is called
 18 Golgotha) ; where they crucified him, and with him
 two others, on this side and on that side, but Jesus
 19 in the midst. Moreover Pilate wrote a notice, and
 put it on the cross ; and there was written,

JESUS THE NAZOREAN, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This notice therefore many of the Jews read ; for the
 place where Jesus was crucified was near the city ;
 and the writing was in Hebrew, in Latin, and in
 21 Greek. The high priests of the Jews said therefore
 to Pilate, Write not, ' The king of the Jews ' ; but
 22 ' He said, I am king of the Jews.'—Pilate answered,
 What I have written, I have written.

23 The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified
 Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, for
 each soldier a part ; and also the coat. Now the
 coat⁴ was without seam, woven from the top through-
 24 out. They said therefore one to another, Let us

¹ Caiaphas (18th). ² Lit. speaketh. ³ Or set him (Jesus) down. ⁴ Or tunic.

not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be— that the scripture might be fulfilled 'They divided my garments among themselves, and upon my vesture they cast lots.' These things therefore the soldiers did.

Now there were standing by the cross of Jesus 25
his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife 26
of Clopas, and Mary of Magdala. Jesus therefore, 26
seeing his mother, and the disciple standing by, the 27
one he loved, saith to his mother, Woman, behold, 27
thy son!—Then he saith to the disciple, Behold, 27
thy mother!—And from that hour the disciple took 27
her to his home.

After this, knowing that all things are now 28
finished, Jesus, that the scripture may be fulfilled,¹ 28
saith, I thirst.—There was standing a vessel full 29
of vinegar; so placing upon a hyssop-stem² a 29
sponge full of the vinegar, they put it to his mouth. 29
Therefore, when Jesus had received the vinegar, 30
he said, It is finished—and bowing his head he gave 30
up his spirit.

The Jews therefore, because it was the Prepara- 31
tion, that the bodies might not remain upon the 31
cross on the sabbath (for that sabbath-day was a 31
high day), asked Pilate that their legs might be 31
broken and they taken away. The soldiers therefore 32
came and broke the legs of the first, and of the other 32
that was crucified with him; but when they came 33
to Jesus, and saw that he was already dead, they 33
broke not his legs; but one of the soldiers stabbed 34
his side with a spear, and straightway there came 34
out blood and water. And he that hath seen hath 35
borne witness (and his witness is true, and he 35
knoweth that he saith what is true), that you also 35
may believe. For these things came to pass, that the 36
scripture might be fulfilled, 'A bone of him shall not 36
be broken.'³ And, further, another scripture saith 37

¹ Psalm 69 ¹¹. ² Hyssop is perhaps the caper-plant, the stem of which, two or three feet long, would be sufficient for the purpose. In this case it is the same as the 'reed' of St. Matthew and St. Mark. By an ingenious conjecture some scholars give 'upon a javelin,' reading in the Greek 'husso' for 'hussopo' (the next Greek word beginning with 'p,' the syllable 'op' might by error have been written twice, there being in oldest MSS. no spaces between words). ³ Os non comminuetis ex eo (Vulgate).

- ‘They shall look upon him¹ whom they pierced.’
- 38 But after these things, Joseph of Arimathæa (being a disciple of Jesus, but for fear of the Jews a secret one) asked Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus ; and Pilate gave him leave. He went therefore
- 39 and took away his body. And Nicodemus (who at the first came unto him by night) also went, carrying a mixture² of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds.
- 40 So they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen cloths with the spices, even as is usual with the
- 41 Jews in burying. Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a
- 42 new tomb, wherein no one had yet been laid. So there, because of the Jews’ Preparation (for the tomb was nigh at hand), they laid Jesus.
- 20 Now on the first day of the week Mary of Magdala goeth early, while it is still dark, to the tomb, and seeth the stone, that it had been taken away out of
- 2 the tomb. So she runneth, and cometh unto Simon Peter, and unto the other disciple, the one who was dear to Jesus ; and she saith to them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know
- 3 not where they have laid him.—Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they went their
- 4 way to the tomb. Now they began to run, the two together ; and the other disciple ran on before,
- 5 faster than Peter, and came first to the tomb ; and looking in he seeth the linen cloths lying ; yet
- 6 he went not in. Simon Peter therefore also cometh, following him, and he went into the tomb ; and he
- 7 beholdeth the linen cloths lying, and the napkin that had been over his head, not lying with the linen
- 8 cloths, but folded in a place by itself. Thereupon the other disciple also, who had come first to the
- 9 tomb, went in ; and he saw, and believed. For not yet had they understood the scripture, that he must
- 10 rise from the dead. The disciples therefore went back to their own homes.
- 11 But Mary was standing outside at the tomb, weeping ; so, as she wept, she looked into the tomb,
- 12 and she beholdeth two angels in white, sitting, one at the head and one at the feet, where the

¹ This supports the reading ‘him’ (for ‘me’) in Zechariah 12¹⁰.
² Some MSS., ‘a roll.’

body of Jesus had lain. And they say to her, 13
 Woman, why art thou weeping?—She saith to them,
 They have taken away my Lord, and I know not
 where they have laid him.—Having said this, she 14
 turned round, and beholdeth Jesus standing, and
 she knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith to her, 15
 Woman, why art thou weeping? whom seekest thou?
 —She, thinking that it was the gardener, saith to
 him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where
 thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.—
 Jesus saith to her, Mary!—Turning, she saith to 16
 him in Hebrew, Rabbuni!—which is to say, Master!
 Jesus saith to her, Hold me not; for I have not yet 17
 ascended unto the Father; but go unto my brethren,¹
 and say to them, I am ascending unto him that is my
 Father and your Father, and my God and your God.
 —Mary of Magdala goeth and telleth the disciples, 18
 ‘I have seen the Lord’; and that he had said these
 things to her.

So, when it was evening on that day, the first 19
 day of the week, and the doors, where the disciples
 were, had been shut for fear of the Jews, Jesus came
 and stood in the midst and saith to them, Peace be
 unto you!—And when he had said this, he showed 20
 them his hands and also his side. The disciples
 therefore rejoiced² when they saw the Lord. Jesus 21
 therefore said to them again, Peace be unto you!
 even as the Father hath sent me forth, so send I you.
 —And when he had said this, he breathed on them, 22
 and saith to them, Receive the Holy Spirit; whose- 23
 soever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven to them;
 whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained.

But Thomas, who is called Didymus,³ one of the 24
 twelve, was not with them when Jesus came. The 25
 other disciples therefore said to him, We have seen
 the Lord.—But he said to them, Unless I see in his
 hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into
 the place⁴ of the nails, and put my hand into his
 side, I will not believe.

And eight days afterwards his disciples were again 26
 within, and Thomas was with them. Jesus cometh,
 the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and
 said, Peace be unto you!—Then he saith to Thomas, 27

¹ Or brothers (St. Matthew 28 10). ² See 16 22. ³ i. e., Twin. ⁴ Some MSS., ‘print.’

Bring hither thy finger, and see my hands ; and bring thy hand, and put it into my side ; and become, not
 28 faithless, but believing.—Thomas answered and said
 29 to him, My Lord and my God !—Jesus saith to him, Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed ; happy they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

30 Many other signs, therefore, Jesus wrought in the presence of the disciples, signs that are not written
 31 in this book ; but these are written that ye may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God ; and that, believing, ye may have life in his name.

21 After these things Jesus manifested himself again to the disciples, by the sea of Tiberias ; and this is
 2 how he manifested himself. There were together Simon Peter and Thomas, who is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of
 3 Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith to them, I am going fishing.—They say to him, We also are going with thee.—They went out, and got into the boat ; and that night they caught
 4 nothing. But when day was now breaking, Jesus came and stood on the beach ; the disciples however
 5 knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus therefore said to them, Children, have ye taken any fish?¹—They
 6 answered him, No—And he said to them, Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye will find.—So they cast it ; and now, for the multitude of the
 7 fishes, they were not able to draw it up. Therefore, that disciple whom Jesus loved saith to Peter, It is the Lord !—Simon Peter therefore, hearing that it was the Lord, girded his outer garment about him (for he was stripped), and threw himself into the sea ;
 8 but the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the net with the fishes.
 9 So, when they had landed, they see a charcoal fire there, and fish lying thereon, and bread. Jesus saith to them, Bring some of the fishes that ye caught
 10 just now.—Simon Peter went on board, and drew the net to land, full of large fishes, a hundred and fifty-three ; and though there were so many, the net was
 11 not rent. Jesus saith to them, Come and breakfast.—

¹ Have ye aught to eat ? (R.V.). *Lit.*, anything extra to eat, pulmenarium (Vulgate).

Not one of the disciples durst inquire of him, Who art thou?—knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus cometh, and taketh the bread, and giveth to them, and the fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after he had risen from the dead.

So, when they had breakfasted, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of John, lovest thou me more than these love?¹—He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest thou art dear to me.—He saith to him, Feed my lambs.—He saith to him again, a second time, Simon, son of John, lovest thou me?—He saith to him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest thou art dear to me.—He saith to him, Be shepherd to my sheep.—He saith to him, the third time, Simon, son of John, am I dear to thee?—Peter was grieved that he said to him, at the third time, Am I dear to thee? and he said to him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou seest thou art dear to me.—Jesus saith to him, Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say to thee, when thou wast younger, thou girdedst thyself and walkedst whither thou wouldst; but when thou hast grown old, thou wilt stretch forth thy hands, and another will gird thee, and will take thee whither thou wouldst not.—Now this he said, signifying by what manner of death he shall² glorify God. And having said this, he saith to him, Follow me.—Peter, turning round, seeth following them the disciple whom Jesus loved, who leant back also on his breast at the supper and said, Lord, who is he that betrayeth thee? Peter therefore, seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what of this man?—Jesus saith to him, If I will that he abide while I am coming, what is it to thee? follow thou me.—There went forth therefore this saying unto the brethren, that that disciple dieth not; yet Jesus said not to him, that he dieth not, but said, 'If I will that he abide while I am coming, what is it to thee?'

This is the disciple who beareth witness of these things, and wrote these things; and we know that his witness is true.

But there are also many other things which Jesus did, such that, if they should be written one by one, I think that even the world itself would not have room for the books that would be written.

¹ See St. Matthew 28²². ² should (A.V.).

ACTS OF APOSTLES

- 1 The former narrative that I composed, O Theophilus, had to do with all that Jesus began both to do
2 and to teach, until the day in which he was received up, after he had given commandment through the
3 Holy Spirit to the apostles whom he had chosen ; to whom, after he had suffered, he presented himself alive, by many proofs ; appearing to them during forty days, and speaking about the kingdom of God.
- 4 And, joining their company, he charged them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for what was promised by the Father, Which promise ye heard
5 from me, that, whereas John baptized with water, you shall be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many
6 days hence.—So when they had come together they began to ask him, saying, Lord, dost thou at this
7 time restore the kingdom to Israel?—He said unto them, It is not for you to know times or seasons
8 which the Father set within his own authority ; but ye shall receive power by the Holy Spirit coming upon you ; and ye shall be witnesses to me in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa and Samaria, and unto
9 the utmost part of the earth.—And having said these things, he was taken up while they were looking ;
10 and a cloud withdrew him from their eyes. And while they were gazing into the heaven as he went, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel ;
11 who also said, Men of Galilee, why stand ye looking into the heaven ? this Jesus, who was received up from you into the heaven, will come in like manner as ye saw him going into the heaven.
- 12 Then they returned to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a sabbath
13 day's journey. And when they had come in, they went up into the upper chamber where they were staying ; Peter and John and James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew,

ACTS 1, 2

James, son of Alphæus, and Simon the Zealot, and Judas, son of James. These all with one accord continued steadfastly in prayer with certain women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers. 14

And in these days Peter stood up in the midst of the brethren (there was also a multitude of persons met together, about a hundred and twenty), and he said, Brethren, it was necessary that the scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit through the mouth of David spoke beforehand concerning Judas, who became guide to them that seized Jesus; inasmuch as he had been numbered among us, and was allotted his portion in this ministry. (Now¹ this man purchased a field with the reward of his iniquity, and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. And it became known to all the dwellers in Jerusalem, so that the field was called in their own language 'Akeldama,' that is to say, 'Field of blood.'² For it is written in the book of Psalms, 15 16 17 18 19 20

'Let his habitation become desolate,
And let there be no one dwelling therein';

and,

'His overseership let another take.')

Therefore of the men who were in our company all the time that the Lord Jesus came in and went out over us, beginning with John's baptism, unto the day that he was received up from us, of these one must become a witness with us of his resurrection. —And they put forward two, Joseph, called Barsabbas (who was also called Justus), and Matthias. And they prayed and said, Thou, Lord, who knowest the hearts of all men, point out³ him whom thou hast chosen, one of these two, to take the place in this ministry and apostleship from which Judas fell away, to go to his proper place.—And they gave them lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles. 21 22 23 24 25 26

And when the day of Pentecost⁴ had now come, they were all together in one place. And there came suddenly out of the heaven a sound as of a

¹ Verses 18–20, author's parenthetic comment. ² Explained for Theophilus and others ignorant of Hebrew. ³ Same word as in St. Luke 10¹. ⁴ Deuteronomy 16^{9–11}; Tabit 2¹.

ACTS 2

mighty wind rushing on, and it filled the whole house
 3 where they were dwelling. And there appeared
 unto them tongues, as it were of fire, parting them-
 4 selves; and it settled upon each of them. And
 they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began
 to speak in strange tongues,¹ even as the Spirit
 gave them utterance.

5 Now there were dwelling in Jerusalem, Jews,
 devout men, from every nation under the heaven.
 6 But when this sound was heard, the multitude came
 together, and were confounded, because each heard
 7 them speaking in his own language. But they were
 amazed and marvelled, saying, Behold, are not all
 8 these that speak Galilæans? And how hear we, each
 9 in his own language wherein he was born? Parthians
 and Medes and Elamites, and dwellers in Meso-
 potamia, in Judæa and Cappadocia, in Pontus and
 10 the province of Asia,² in Phrygia and Pamphylia, in
 Egypt and the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and
 sojourners from Rome (both Jews and their con-
 11 verts³), Cretans and Arabians, we hear them speaking
 12 in our tongues the mighty works of God.—And
 they were all amazed, and were much perplexed,
 13 saying one to another, What meaneth this?—But
 others mocking said, They are filled with new wine.
 14 —But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up
 his voice and spoke out to them;

Men of Judæa, and all ye that are dwelling in
 Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and give ear
 15 to my words. These men surely are not drunk, as
 you suppose, seeing that it is but the third hour
 16 of the day. But this is what hath been spoken
 through the prophet Joel:

17 ‘And it shall be in the last days, saith God,
 I will pour out of my Spirit upon all mankind;
 And your sons and your daughters shall
 prophesy,
 And your young men shall see visions,
 And your older men shall dream dreams;

¹ See Appendix VI. ² Asia in the N.T. denotes the Roman province of that name, which was roughly the Western third of what is now called Asia Minor; Mysia, Phrygia, Lydia, and Caria, with adjacent islands, Ephesus being the capital. The words ‘the province of’ are not in the Greek, but are needed in the English to avoid error. ³ Or proselytes.

ACTS 2

Yea, and on my bondmen and on my bond- 18
 women
 In those days I will pour out of my Spirit,
 And they shall prophesy.
 And I will show wonders in the heaven above, 19
 And signs on the earth beneath,
 Blood and fire and vapour of smoke ;
 The sun shall be turned into darkness, 20
 And the moon into blood,
 Before the day of the Lord come, the great
 and notable day ;
 And it shall be that whosoever shall call on the 21
 name of the Lord shall be saved.¹
 Men of Israel, hear these words ; Jesus the Nazorean, 22
 a man attested unto you from God by mighty works
 and wonders and signs, which God wrought through
 him in the midst of you, even as ye yourselves know ;
 him, delivered up by the settled purpose and fore- 23
 knowledge of God, ye by the hand of lawless men¹
 crucified and slew ; whom God raised up, relieving 24
 the birth-pangs of Death,² because it was not possible
 that he should be held fast by it. For David saith 25
 concerning him,
 ‘ I saw the Lord before my face continually,
 Because he is at my right hand, that I may not
 be moved ;
 This is why my heart made merry, and my 26
 tongue rejoiced ;
 Moreover my flesh also shall rest upon hope,
 Because thou wilt not abandon my soul unto 27
 Hades,
 Neither wilt thou give thy Holy One to see
 corruption.
 Thou madest known to me ways of life, 28
 Thou wilt make me full of mirth in thy
 presence.’
 Brethren, I may say unto you freely of the patriarch 29
 David, that he both died and was buried, and his
 tomb is with us unto this day. Therefore, prophet 30
 as he was, and knowing that God had sworn to him
 with an oath that of the fruit of his loins he would set
 one on his throne, he, foreseeing it, spoke of the 31

¹ Gentiles (the Romans). ² Death (personified) in travail till delivered by the Lord's resurrection.

ACTS 2

resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he
 abandoned unto Hades, nor did his flesh see corrup-
 32 tion. This Jesus, God raised up; whereof¹ we all
 33 are witnesses. Therefore, exalted by the right hand
 of God, and receiving from the Father what had been
 promised, the Holy Spirit, he hath poured out
 34 this which you both see and hear. For David
 ascended not into the heavens, but he saith himself,
 'The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right
 hand,
 35 Until I make thine enemies a footstool under
 thy feet.'
 36 Therefore let every household² of Israel know
 assuredly that God hath made him both Lord and
 Christ, this Jesus whom you crucified.
 37 Now when they heard, they were pricked to their
 hearts, and said unto Peter and the rest of the
 38 apostles, Brethren, what are we to do?—But Peter
 said unto them, Repent, and be baptized each of
 you, in the name of Jesus Christ, unto forgiveness
 of your sins, and ye will receive the gift of the Holy
 39 Spirit. For to you is the promise, and to your
 children, and to all that are far off, as many as the
 40 Lord our God shall call to himself.—And with many
 other words he testified, and exhorted them, saying,
 Save yourselves from this perverse generation.
 41 Therefore they that received his word were
 baptized, and on that day there were added to them
 42 about three thousand souls. And they continued
 steadfastly in the apostles' teaching and in the
 fellowship, the breaking of the bread³ and the
 43 prayers. And fear came upon every soul, and many
 wonders and signs came to pass by means of the
 44 apostles.⁴ And all that believed had all things in
 45 common together, and would sell their possessions
 and goods, and distribute them among all, according
 46 as any had need. And continuing daily steadfastly
 with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread at
 home, they took their food with gladness and sim-
 47 plicity of heart, praising God, and being in favour

¹ Or of whom. ² All the house (A.V.). ³ The Vulgate combines the last two clauses thus, 'et communicatione fractionis panis'; the 'fellowship' is manifested in the bread broken and in the common prayers. ⁴ Some MSS. add, 'in Jerusalem, and great fear was upon all'

ACTS 2, 3

with all the people. And the Lord increased day by day the number of those that were in the way of salvation.

Now Peter and John were going up into the temple for the hour of prayer, the ninth hour. And a certain man, lame from his very birth, was being carried, whom they laid daily at the door of the temple, the door called Beautiful, to ask for alms from them that went into the temple. And he, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, begged for alms. But Peter, gazing upon him, with John, said, Look on us.—And he gave heed to them, expecting to receive something from them. But Peter said, Silver and gold I have none; but what I have, that I give thee. In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazorean, walk.—And taking him by the right hand, he raised him up; and immediately his feet and his ankle-bones were strengthened. And leaping up he stood, and began to walk, and went with them into the temple, walking and leaping, and praising God. And all the people saw him walking and praising God; and they recognised him as the man who used to sit for alms at the Beautiful Gate of the temple; and they were filled with wonder and amazement at what had happened unto him.

Now as he clung to Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them, in the cloister called Solomon's, greatly wondering. But when Peter saw it, he made answer unto the people, Men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why gaze ye upon us, as if by any power or godliness of our own we had made him walk? The God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our forefathers, hath glorified his Servant Jesus; whom you delivered up, and disowned in the presence of Pilate, when he had decided to release him. But you disowned the Holy and Righteous One, and asked that a man, a murderer, should be granted to you; but the Prince of life ye killed, whom God raised from death; whereof¹ we are witnesses. And by faith in his name, his name hath made strong this man, whom ye behold and know; yea, the faith that comes

¹ Or of whom.

through him hath given him this perfect soundness
 17 in the presence of you all. And now, brethren, I
 know that in ignorance ye acted, even as did also
 18 your rulers.¹ But the things that God through the
 mouth of all the prophets announced beforehand
 that his Christ should suffer, he thus fulfilled.
 19 Repent therefore, and turn back, that your sins may
 be blotted out, that so there may come from the
 20 face of the Lord seasons of refreshing, and that he
 may send the Christ who hath been appointed for
 21 you, even Jesus; whom heaven must receive until
 the times of restoration of all things, times whereof
 God spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets
 22 who have been from of old. Moses indeed said,
 'The Lord God will raise up to you from among
 your brethren a prophet, as he raised up me; to
 him ye shall hearken in all things whatsoever he
 23 shall speak unto you. And it shall be that every
 soul that will not hearken to that prophet shall be
 24 utterly destroyed from among the people.' Yes,
 and all the prophets, from Samuel and them that
 followed after, as many as have spoken, they also
 25 announced these days. You are the sons of the
 prophets, and of the covenant that God made with
 your forefathers, saying unto Abraham, 'And in
 thy offspring all the families of the earth shall be
 26 blessed.' To you first, God, raising up his Servant,
 sent him to bless you, in turning you away, each,
 from your iniquities.

4 Now while they were speaking unto the people,
 the priests² and the captain of the temple³ and the
 2 Sadducees came upon them, being sore troubled
 that they were teaching the people and proclaiming
 3 in Jesus the resurrection from the dead. And they set
 hands on them, and had them placed in custody until
 4 the morrow; for it was now evening. But many of
 them that heard the word became believers; and the
 number of the men increased to about five thousand.
 5 But it came to pass on the morrow, that there
 gathered together in Jerusalem their rulers² and
 6 elders and scribes, with Annas the high priest, and
 Caiaphas and John and Alexander, and as many as

¹ See note to St. Luke 23¹². ² Some MSS. 'The high priests.' ³ The commander of the guard of Levites, who was responsible for keeping order in the Temple.

ACTS 4

were akin to the high priest. And when they had set them in the midst, they began to inquire, You ! by what power or in what name did you this?— Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said unto them, Rulers of the people, and elders ! if we this day are examined about a benefit done to an impotent man, by whom it is he hath been saved ; be it known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazorean, whom you crucified, whom God raised from death, even in this name doth this man stand here before you, sound. He is the stone that was despitefully treated by you the builders, the stone that became the corner-stone. And in none other is our salvation ; for there is no other name under the heaven, given among men, wherein we must be saved.

But beholding the boldness of Peter and John, and finding that they were illiterate and common men, they began to marvel, and to recognise them as having been with Jesus. And seeing the man who had been cured standing with them, they could say nothing against them. But ordering them to go aside out of the council, they conferred one with another, saying, What are we to do with these men ? for that indeed a notable miracle¹ has come to pass through them, is manifest to all who dwell in Jerusalem ; and we cannot deny it. But that it spread no farther among the people, let us threaten them, that henceforth they speak to no one about this name.—And summoning them, they charged them not to utter a word, nor to teach at all, about the name of Jesus. But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it is right in the sight of God to hearken to you rather than to God, judge ye ; for, as to us, we cannot but speak the things we saw and heard.—But they, after further threatening them, released them, finding no way of punishing them, because of the people ; for all were glorifying God for what had come to pass. For the man on whom this miracle¹ of healing had come to pass was more than forty years old.

But being released, they went unto their own company, and reported all that the high priests and

¹ Lit. sign.

ACTS 4

- 24 the elders had said unto them. But they, when they heard, lifted up their voices unto God with one accord, and said, Master, thou that madest the heaven and the earth and the sea and all that is in
- 25 them ; who through the Holy Spirit, through the mouth of our forefather David, thy servant, saidst,¹
- ‘ Why did Gentiles rage,
And peoples imagine vain things ?
- 26 The kings of the earth presented themselves,
And the rulers gathered together,
Against the Lord and against his Anointed ’ ;²
- 27 for, of a truth, there gathered together in this city against thy holy Servant Jesus, whom thou didst anoint, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with Gentiles
- 28 and peoples³ of Israel, to do whatsoever thy hand
- 29 and counsel foreordained to come to pass. And now, Lord, look upon their threatenings, and grant to thy bondmen to speak thy word with all boldness,
- 30 while thou stretchest forth thy hand for healing ; and that signs and wonders may come to pass
- 31 through the name of thy holy Servant Jesus.— And when they had prayed, the place wherein they had gathered together was shaken ; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God with boldness.
- 32 Now the community of them that believed were of one heart and soul ; and not one of them said that any of the things he possessed was his own ;
- 33 but they had all things in common. And with great power the apostles rendered their witness to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus ;⁴ and great
- 34 grace was upon them all. For there was not even any one in want among them ; for as many as were owners of lands or houses would sell them,
- 35 and bring the prices of what was sold, and lay them by the apostles’ feet ; and distribution was made to each, according as any had need.
- 36 Now Joseph, who by the apostles was also called Barnabas (which is, being translated, Son of exhortation), a Levite, a man of Cyprus by birth,

¹ The text and translation here are doubtful. A.V. has, ‘ Who by the mouth of thy servant David didst say ’ (following a shorter, clearer, and perhaps the original text). ² Or Christ. ³ The plural is taken on from the quotation ; it seems to be equivalent to ‘ tribes ’ ; cf. Genesis 28³. ⁴ Some MSS. add, ‘ Christ.’

ACTS 4, 5

having a field, sold it and brought the money and laid it at the apostles' feet. 37

But a certain man, Ananias by name, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, and kept back part of the price, his wife also being aware of it; and he brought a certain part, and laid it by the apostles' feet. But Peter said, Ananias, why did Satan fill thy heart to deceive the Holy Spirit and to keep back part of the price of the land? While it remained as it was, remained it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? What made thee conceive this thing in thy heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.—And Ananias hearing these words fell down and expired; and great fear came upon all that heard. But the younger men arose and wrapped him round, and carrying him out buried him. Now there was an interval of about three hours, and his wife, not knowing what had happened, came in. And Peter spoke unto her, Tell me, whether ye sold the land for so much.—And she said, Yea, for so much.—But Peter said unto her, What made you agree to try the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them that buried thy husband are at the door, and they will carry thee out.—And she fell down immediately at his feet, and expired; and the young men, coming in, found her dead, and carrying her out they buried her beside her husband. And great fear came upon the whole church, and upon all that heard these things. 5 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11

Now by the hands of the apostles many signs and wonders came to pass among the people; and with one accord they all used to meet¹ in Solomon's cloister. But of the rest no one durst associate with them; yet the people magnified them. And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and of women;—insomuch that they even used to carry out the sick into the streets, and lay them on pallets and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter as he went by might overshadow some one of them. Nay, the multitude also from the cities round about Jerusalem used to come together, bringing sick folk, and any that were 12 13 14 15 16

¹ 'Et tous s'assembloient' (De Genoude); *lit.* used to be.

ACTS 5

troubled by unclean spirits ; and these were every one cured.

- 17 But, rising up, the high priest and all his company
 (they were the party of the Sadducees) were filled¹
 18 with jealousy, and set hands upon the apostles,
 19 and had them placed in public custody. But
 during the night an angel of the Lord opened the
 20 prison doors, and led them out, and said, Go, stand
 and speak in the temple to the people all the words
 21 of this Life.—And when they heard, they went into
 the temple, about daybreak, and began to teach. But
 the high priest and his company went and called
 the council together and all the senate of the children
 of Israel, and sent to the jail to have them brought.
 22 But the officers who went did not find them in the
 23 prison, but returned and reported, saying, The jail
 we found shut in all safety, and the warders standing
 at the doors ; but on opening, we found no one
 24 within.—Now when the captain of the temple and
 the high priests heard these words, they were much
 perplexed about them, what this might come to.
 25 But one came and brought them word, Behold, the
 men whom ye placed in the prison are in the temple,
 26 standing and teaching the people.—Then the captain
 went off with the officers, and brought them, without
 violence ; for they feared the people, lest they should
 27 be stoned. And having brought them, they set
 them before the council. And the high priest
 28 questioned them, saying, We strictly charged you
 not to teach about this name ; and, behold, ye have
 filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and want to
 29 bring this man's blood upon us.—But Peter and the
 other apostles answered and said, We must obey
 30 God rather than men. The God of our forefathers
 raised up Jesus, whom you slew, hanging him on a
 31 tree. Him God exalted with his right hand to be a
 Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance to Israel,
 32 and forgiveness of sins. And we are witnesses of
 these things ; and so is the Spirit, the Holy Spirit,
 33 whom God hath given² to them that obey him.—But

¹ An ingenious conjecture gives 'But Annas the high priest and all that held with him (it was the sect of the Sadducees) were filled, etc.' (the word for 'rose up' is spelt 'anastas'). ² Some MSS., 'and God hath given the Holy Spirit.'

ACTS 5, 6

they, when they heard, were cut to the heart, and determined to kill them.

But there stood up one in the council, a Pharisee, 34
 Gamaliel by name, a doctor of the Law, held in
 honour by all the people ; and he ordered that the
 men be put outside a little while. And he said unto 35
 them, Men of Israel, take heed to yourselves con-
 cerning these men, what ye are going to do. For, 36
 some time ago, there rose up Theudas, giving himself
 out to be someone of note ; and to him a number
 of men, about four hundred, attached themselves ;
 he was killed, and all, as many as listened to him,
 were dispersed and came to nothing. After him 37
 rose up Judas the Galilaean, in the days of the
 registration, and drew away some of the people
 after him ; he also perished, and all, as many as
 listened to him, were scattered abroad. And now 38
 I say to you, Refrain from these men, and let them
 alone, lest haply ye find yourselves fighting even
 against God ; for should this counsel or this work
 be of men, it will be overthrown ; but if it is of God, 39
 ye will not be able to overthrow them.—And they 40
 were persuaded by him, and after calling for the
 apostles and beating them, they charged them not
 to speak about the name of Jesus, and released
 them. So they departed from the presence of the 41
 council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy
 to suffer dishonour for the Name. And they ceased 42
 not, in the temple and at home, daily to teach, and
 to proclaim the gospel of Jesus the Christ.

But in these days, as the number of the disciples 6
 was increasing, there arose a murmuring of the
 Grecian Jews¹ against the Hebrews, that their
 widows were being overlooked in the daily ministra-
 tion. And the twelve called unto themselves the 2
 community of the disciples, and said, It is not our
 pleasure that we should forsake the word of God, and
 minister at tables. But look out, brethren, from 3
 among yourselves seven men of good report, full of
 the Spirit and of wisdom, whom we may appoint
 over this business ; but, as for us, we will continue 4
 steadfastly in prayer and in the ministry of the word.
 —And the saying pleased the whole community, and 5

¹ *Lit.* Hellenists (Greek speaking, and therefore of foreign birth).

ACTS 6, 7

they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolaus of Antioch, a convert of the Jews.¹ And these they set before the apostles; and after they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of the Lord spread, and the number of the disciples increased exceedingly in Jerusalem; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 Now Stephen, full of grace and power, was working great wonders and signs among the people.

9 But there arose certain of the members of the synagogue called The Synagogue of the Freedmen,² Cyrenians also, and Alexandrians, and some men of Cilicia and the province of Asia,³ disputing with Stephen. And they were not able to withstand the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke.

11 Then they suborned⁴ men, who said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words about Moses and about God.—And they stirred up the people and the elders and the scribes, and set upon him and

13 seized him and led him into the council. And they put forward false witnesses, who said, This man never ceaseth speaking words against the holy place

14 and the Law; for we have heard him say that Jesus, this Nazorean, will destroy this place, and will change the customs which Moses handed down to

15 us.—And all that sat in the council, gazing upon him, saw his face as it had been the face of an

7 angel. And the high priest said, Are these things

2 so?—But Stephen said,
Men, brethren and fathers, hearken; The God of the Glory⁵ appeared to our forefather Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia (before he settled in Haran);

3 and said unto him, 'Get thee out of the land that is thine and thy kindred's, and come into whatever

4 land I shall show thee.' Then he went forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and settled in Haran; and thence, after his father died, God removed

¹ Or a proselyte. ² *i. e.*, manumitted slaves. The Latin word 'Libertini' (like 'denarius' and 'census,' St. Matthew 22¹⁹) was transliterated into Greek. Some take the word to mean, men of Libertum, an African town. ³ See note to 2⁹. ⁴ Or bribed. ⁵ The Shekinah, Exodus 24^{16, 17}; verse 55, and Romans 9⁴.

ACTS 7

him into this land, wherein you now dwell. And he 5
 gave him no inheritance in it, no, not so much as
 to set his foot on ; and he promised to give it for a
 possession to him and to his offspring after him,
 when as yet he had no child. But God spoke on 6
 this wise, that his offspring should sojourn in a land
 not their own, and that they should be brought into
 bondage and oppressed, four hundred years. ' And 7
 the nation to which they shall be in bondage, I will
 judge,' said God, ' and afterwards they shall come
 forth, and shall serve me in this place.' And he 8
 gave him a covenant, even circumcision ; and so
 he begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth
 day ; and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob the twelve
 patriarchs. And the patriarchs, moved with 9
 jealousy, sold Joseph into Egypt ; and God was with
 him, and delivered him out of all his affliction, and 10
 gave him favour and wisdom before Pharaoh, king
 of Egypt ; and he made him governor over Egypt
 and all his household. Now there came a famine 11
 over all Egypt and Canaan, and great tribulation ;
 and our forefathers found no sustenance. But 12
 Jacob, hearing that there was food in Egypt, sent
 forth our forefathers a first time. And at the 13
 second time Joseph made himself known to his
 brothers ; and Joseph's race became clear unto
 Pharaoh.¹ But Joseph sent and called to him Jacob 14
 his father, and all his kindred, three score and
 fifteen souls. And Jacob went down into Egypt, 15
 and died, he and our forefathers ; and they were
 taken away to Shechem, and laid in the tomb that
 Abraham bought at a price, in silver, from the sons
 of Hamor in Shechem. But as the time of the 17
 promise that God had given unto Abraham drew
 nigh, the people increased and multiplied in Egypt,
 till there rose up another king over Egypt, who knew 18
 nothing of Joseph.² This man dealt craftily with
 our race, and oppressed our forefathers, that they
 should cast out their babes, to the end that they
 might not be preserved alive. At which time Moses 20
 was born, and was beautiful before God ;³ and he
 was brought up for three months in his father's
 house. But when he was cast out, Pharaoh's 21

¹ Pharaoh is strictly a title, not a personal name. ² So rendered in
 Caxton's *Golden Legend*. ³ Or divinely fair ; lit. fair unto God.

ACTS 7

daughter took him up, and reared him for herself as
 22 a son. And Moses was instructed in all the wisdom
 of the Egyptians, yet was mighty in his words and
 23 deeds. But when he was nearly forty years old,
 it came into his heart to visit his brethren, the
 24 children of Israel. And seeing one of them suffer
 wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was
 25 hard pressed, smiting the Egyptian. Now he
 thought that his brethren understood that by his
 hand God was giving them salvation; but they
 26 understood not. And the next day he appeared to
 them as they strove, and would have reconciled
 them, saying, 'Men, ye are brothers: wherefore
 27 do ye wrong to each other?' But he that was doing
 his neighbour wrong thrust him aside, saying, 'Who
 28 made thee ruler and judge over us? Surely thou
 wouldst not kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian
 29 yesterday?' But at that saying Moses fled, and
 became a sojourner in the land of Midian, where
 30 he begat two sons. And at the end of forty years,
 there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount
 31 Sinsi an angel in a flame of fire in a bush. But
 when Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight; but
 as he drew near to look, there came the voice of
 32 the Lord, 'I am the God of thy forefathers, the
 God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob.' But
 33 Moses trembled, and durst not look. And the Lord
 said to him, 'Loose thy shoes from thy feet; for
 34 the place whereon thou standest is holy ground. I
 have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people
 who are in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning,
 and I have come down to deliver them. And now
 35 come, let me send thee into Egypt.' This Moses
 whom they disowned, saying, 'Who made thee ruler
 and judge?' this same, God hath sent to be both
 ruler and deliverer with the hand of the angel that
 36 appeared to him in the bush. This same led them
 out, working wonders and signs in the land of Egypt
 and in the Red Sea, and in the wilderness, forty
 37 years. This is the Moses that said to the children
 of Israel, 'God will raise up to you a prophet out of
 38 your brethren, as he raised up me.' This is he that
 in the congregation¹ in the wilderness had to do

¹ Or church (ecclesia); on the verse cf. Galatians 3¹⁸.

ACTS 7

with the angel who spoke to him on Mount Sinai, and
 with our forefathers ; who received living oracles
 to give to you ; to whom our forefathers would not 39
 be obedient, but thrust him aside, and turned in
 their hearts unto Egypt, saying to Aaron, ' Make us 40
 gods to go before us ; for as to this Moses, who led
 us forth out of the land of Egypt, we know not what
 hath become of him.' And they made a calf in those 41
 days, and offered up sacrifice to the idol, and made
 merry in the works of their own hands. But God 42
 turned and gave them up to serve the host of heaven,
 even as it is written in the book of the prophets,

' Did ye offer unto me victims and sacrifices,
 Forty years in the wilderness, O house of
 Israel ?¹

Nay, and ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, 43
 And the star of the god Rompha,²

The figures that ye made to worship them ;
 And I will remove you beyond Babylon.'

Our forefathers had in the wilderness the tabernacle³ 44
 of the testimony, even as he appointed that spoke
 unto Moses to make it according to the pattern that
 he had seen. Which tabernacle also our forefathers 45
 inherited and brought in with Joshua, while the
 Gentiles were in possession (whom God thrust out
 before the face of our forefathers) ; until the days 46
 of David, who found favour in the sight of God and
 asked that he might provide a tabernacle for the
 house⁴ of Jacob. But Solomon built him a house. 47
 Yet not in houses made by hands doth the Highest 48
 dwell ; even as the prophet saith,

' The heaven is for me a throne, 49
 But the earth is a footstool under my feet ;
 What manner of house will ye build for me,
 saith the Lord ;

Or what is the place of my rest ?

Did not my hand make all these things ? ' 50

Stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears ! 51
 you ever resist the Holy Spirit ; as your forefathers
 did, so you do. Which of the prophets did not 52
 your forefathers persecute ? and they killed them

¹ See Amos 5²⁴ ; Jeremiah 7²² ; sacrifices not offered in the wilderness, therefore not indispensable. ² Some MSS., ' Rephan,' or, ' Remphan.' ³ Containing the Law of God ; Exodus 31¹⁸. ⁴ Some MSS., ' God.'

ACTS 7, 8

that made announcement beforehand of the coming of the Righteous One, of whom you but now
 53 became betrayers and murderers ; you who received the Law as it was appointed by angels, and observed it not !—

54 Now, as they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and gnashed on him with their teeth.
 55 But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, gazing into the heaven, saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at
 56 the right hand of God ; and he said, Lo, I behold the heavens opened wide, and the Son of man standing
 57 at the right hand of God.—But they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and rushed upon
 58 him with one accord, and cast him forth out of the city, and proceeded to stone him ; and the witnesses
 59 put off their garments at the feet of a young man called Saul. And they stoned Stephen, while he
 60 called upon the Lord and said, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. And kneeling down he cried with a loud
 voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And
 8 when he had said this, he fell asleep. And Saul was approving of his murder.¹

Now there broke out on that day a great persecution against the church which was in Jerusalem ; and all, except the apostles, were scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judæa and Samaria.
 2 And devout men took up Stephen, and made great
 3 lamentation over him. But Saul made havoc of the church, entering house after house ; and dragging out men and women he committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went
 5 about, preaching the gospel of the word. But Philip went down to the city² of Samaria, and
 6 proclaimed to them the Christ. And the multitude with one accord gave heed to what was spoken by
 Philip, hearing him, and seeing the miracles that he
 7 wrought. For out of many of such as had unclean spirits they came forth, crying with a loud voice ;
 and many paralysed persons and lame were cured.
 8 And there was much joy in that city.
 9 But a certain man, Simon by name, had been

¹ *Lit.* taking off (as in *Macbeth*, I. 7 ²⁰). ² *Or* (with another reading) a city ; Samaria was a name of a town and of a district (county).

ACTS 8

before him in the city, practising sorcery, and
 astounding the Samaritan nation, saying that he
 himself was some great one ; to whom they all gave
 heed, from least to greatest, saying, This man is the
 power of God, the power called Great. Now they
 gave heed to him, because for a long time he had
 astounded them with his sorceries. But when they
 believed Philip as he preached the gospel concerning
 the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ,
 they were baptized, both men and women. And
 Simon also himself believed ; and having been bap-
 tized, he attached himself to Philip ; and beholding
 signs and great works of might coming to pass, he
 was astounded.

But the apostles in Jerusalem, hearing that
 Samaria had received the word of God, sent unto
 them Peter and John ; who, when they had come
 down, prayed for them that they might receive the
 Holy Spirit (for he had as yet fallen upon none of
 them ; they had simply been baptized into the name
 of the Lord Jesus). Then they laid their hands on
 them ; and they received the Holy Spirit. But
 Simon, seeing that through the laying on of the
 apostles' hands the Spirit was given, offered them
 money, saying, Give to me also this power, that on
 whomsoever I lay my hands, he may receive the
 Holy Spirit.—But Peter said unto him, Thy money
 perish with thee, because thou thoughtest to
 purchase the gift of God with money. Thou hast
 neither part nor portion in this matter ; for thy heart
 is not upright in the sight of God. Repent therefore
 of this thy wickedness, and pray the Lord, if haply
 the thought of thy heart shall be forgiven thee. For
 I see that thou art in the gall of bitterness and in the
 bond of iniquity.¹—And Simon answered and said,
 Pray ye unto the Lord for me, that none of the things
 ye have spoken may come upon me.

So they, after testifying and speaking the word
 of the Lord, set out to return to Jerusalem, and
 preached the gospel to many villages of the Samaritans.

But an angel of the Lord spoke unto Philip, saying,
 Arise, and go at noon along the way that goeth down
 from Jerusalem to Gaza.—It is a desert road. And

¹ Or as gall of bitterness and a bond of iniquity.

ACTS 8, 9

he arose and went ; and, behold, a man of Ethiopia,
 a eunuch, a high officer of Candace, queen of the
 Ethiopians, who had charge of all her treasure, who
 28 had gone to Jerusalem to worship, but was now
 returning and sitting in his chariot, and was reading
 29 the prophet Isaiah. And the Spirit said to Philip,
 30 Go near, and keep close to this chariot.—And Philip
 running up heard him reading Isaiah the prophet ;
 and he said, Understandest thou what thou art
 31 reading?—And he said, Why, how can I, unless
 some one shall guide me?—And he besought Philip
 32 to get up and sit with him. Now the passage of
 the scripture he was reading was this ;

‘ He was led as a sheep to be slaughtered ;
 And as a lamb dumb before its shearer,
 So he openeth not his mouth ;
 33 By his humbling himself the judgement on
 him was taken away ;¹

Who shall describe his generation?
 For his life is taken from the earth.’

34 And the eunuch answered Philip and said, I pray
 thee, of whom doth the prophet say this ? of himself ?
 35 or of some other?—And Philip opened his mouth,
 and beginning at this scripture preached to him the
 36 gospel of Jesus. Now as they went on the way, they
 came to some water ; and the eunuch saith, See,
 here is water ; what doth hinder my being baptized ?²
 38 —And he ordered the chariot to stop ; and they
 both went down into the water, both Philip and the
 39 eunuch ; and he baptized him. But when they
 came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord
 caught away Philip, and the eunuch saw him no
 40 more ; for he went on his way rejoicing. But Philip
 was found at Azotus, and passing through he preached
 the gospel to all the cities, till he came to Cæsarea.

9 But Saul, still breathing threatening and murder
 against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high
 2 priest, and asked him for letters to Damascus, unto
 the synagogues, so that if he should find any belong-
 ing to the Way, whether men or women, he might
 3 bring them in bonds to Jerusalem. But as he went, it

¹ Phil. 2^o, 8. ² Some authorities insert verse 37 : ‘ And Philip said, If thou believest with all thy heart, thou mayest ; and he answered and said, I believe Jesus Christ to be the Son of God.’

ACTS 9

came to pass that he drew nigh to Damascus ; and suddenly there shone round about him a light out of the heaven ; and falling to the earth, he heard 4
 a voice saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?—And he said, Who art thou, Lord?— 5
 And he said, I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest ;¹ but rise and go into the city, and it shall be told thee 6
 what thou must do.—Now the men who were journey- 7
 ing with him stood speechless, hearing indeed the voice, but seeing no one. And Saul arose from the 8
 earth ; but when his eyes were opened, he could see² nothing ; and leading him by the hand, they brought him into Damascus. And he was three 9
 days without sight, and neither ate nor drank.

Now there was in Damascus a certain disciple 10
 named Ananias ; and the Lord said unto him in a vision, Ananias !—And he said, Behold, I am here, 11
 Lord.—And the Lord said unto him, Rise, and 12
 go along the street called Straight Street, and inquire at the house of Judas for one named Saul, of 13
 Tarsus ; for, behold, he prayeth ; and he hath seen 14
 a man named Ananias come in, and lay his hands on him, that he may recover his sight.—But Ananias 15
 answered, Lord, I have heard from many about this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at 16
 Jerusalem ; and here he hath authority from the 17
 high priests to bind all that call upon thy name.—But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way ; for this 18
 man is a chosen vessel unto me, to hold up my name before Gentiles and kings, and children of Israel ; for I will show him how much he must suffer 19
 for my name's sake.—And Ananias went his way, and entered the house ; and laying his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, who appeared to thee in the way thou wast coming, hath sent me, that thou mayest recover thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Spirit.—And straightway 18
 there fell off from his eyes as it were scales, and he recovered his sight ; and he arose and was baptized. 19
 And he took food, and gained strength.

Now for some days he joined the disciples who were

¹ Late authorities insert here, 'It is hard for thee to kick against the goads. 6 And he, trembling and amazed said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Rise and go . . .' (See 26²⁴). ² Lit. was seeing.

ACTS 9

- 20 at Damascus ; and straightway in the synagogues he began to preach Jesus, that he is the Son of God.
- 21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he that in Jerusalem made havoc of them that call upon this name, and had come hither with this intent, that he might take them in bonds unto the
- 22 high priests?—But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews who dwelt in Damascus, proving that this is the Christ.
- 23 But as time passed on, the Jews took counsel
- 24 together to kill him ; but their plot was made known to Saul. And they watched the gates also both day
- 25 and night that they might kill him. But his¹ disciples took him by night, and let him down over the wall, lowering him in a basket.
- 26 Now when he had come to Jerusalem, he endeavoured to associate with the disciples ; and they all were afraid of him, not believing that he
- 27 was a disciple. But Barnabas took him, and brought him unto the apostles, and declared to them how on the way he had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken to him ; and how in Damascus he had spoken boldly
- 28 in the name of Jesus. And he was with them, coming
- 29 in and going out at Jerusalem, speaking boldly in the name of the Lord ; and he spoke and disputed with the Grecian Jews ; but they made attempts to
- 30 kill him. But the brethren, getting to know it, took him down to Cæsarea, and sent him away to Tarsus.
- 31 So the church throughout the whole of Judæa and Galilee and Samaria continued in peace, being built up ; and walking in the fear of the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit was multiplied.²
- 32 But it came to pass that, as Peter was going throughout all parts, he went down also unto the
- 33 saints who dwell in Lydda. And he found there a certain man, Ænëas by name, who had kept his
- 34 bed eight years, having been paralysed. And Peter said to him, Ænëas, Jesus Christ healeth thee ; arise, and make thine own bed.—And straightway he
- 35 arose. And all that dwell in Lydda and in the Sharon saw him, as many as had turned to the Lord.³

¹ Some MSS., 'the.' ² Some authorities have, 'Now the churches . . . were multiplied.' ³ And they turned to the Lord (A.V.).

ACTS 9, 10

Now there was in Joppa a certain disciple named 36
 Tabitha (whose name, translated, is Dorcas) ; this
 woman was full of good works and almsdeeds
 which she did. And it came to pass in those days 37
 that she fell sick and died ; and they washed her
 and laid her in an upper chamber. And as Lydda 38
 was near Joppa, the disciples, hearing that Peter
 was there, sent two men unto him, beseeching him,
 Delay not to come through to us.—And Peter arose 39
 and went with them. And when he had come, they
 took him into the upper chamber ; and all the
 widows stood by him, weeping, and exhibiting coats
 and cloaks, whatever Dorcas had made while she
 was with them. But Peter, putting all the company 40
 out, knelt down and prayed ; and turning to the
 body, he said, Tabitha, arise ! And she opened
 her eyes ; and seeing Peter, she sat up. And giving 41
 her his hand, he raised her up ; and calling the saints
 and the widows he presented her alive. And it 42
 became known throughout all Joppa ; and many
 believed on the Lord. And it came to pass, that 43
 he stayed some time in Joppa with one Simon a
 tanner.

Now a certain man in Casarea, Cornelius by name, 10
 a centurion of the regiment¹ called the Italian, a 2
 pious man, and one that feared God² with all his
 household, giving much alms to the people, and
 praying to God continually, saw clearly in a vision, 3
 about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of the
 Lord come in unto him, and say to him, Cornelius !
 —And he, gazing on him, was affrighted and said, 4
 What is it, Lord?—And he said to him, Thy prayers
 and thine alms have gone up for a memorial before
 God. And now send men to Joppa, and fetch 5
 one Simon, who is also called Peter ; he is guest to 6
 one Simon a tanner, who hath a house by the sea-
 side.—Now when the angel who spoke to him had 7
 departed, he called two of the household servants,
 and a devout soldier, one of his constant attendants ;
 and having related to them the whole matter, he sent 8
 them to Joppa.

¹ Or battalion ; the cohort, the tenth part of a Roman legion, from 300 to 600 men. ² One of the 'fearers of God' (13²⁸, 34 ; etc.) = 'the worshippers' ; see note on 13⁴².

ACTS 10

9 Now on the morrow, as they were on their journey
 and drew near the city, Peter went up to the roof
 10 to pray, about the sixth hour ; but he grew hungry
 and would have eaten ; but while they made ready,
 11 he fell into a trance. And he beholds the heaven
 standing open, and a certain vessel coming down,
 like a great sheet, let down upon the earth by four
 12 corners ; and in it were all the fourfooted creatures
 and creeping things of the earth and birds of the air.
 13 And there came a voice unto him, Rise, Peter ; kill
 14 and eat.—But Peter said, Not so, Lord ; for never
 have I eaten anything unhallowed¹ and unclean.—
 15 And there came a voice again, a second time, unto
 him, What God hath cleansed, call² not thou un-
 16 hallowed.¹—Now this happened thrice, and straight-
 way the vessel was taken up into the heaven.

17 Now while Peter was much perplexed in himself
 as to what the vision he had seen might import, lo,
 the men sent by Cornelius, having by inquiry found
 18 Simon's house, had come up to the porch ; and they
 called and began asking whether Simon, who was
 19 also called Peter, was there as guest. But while
 Peter was considering the vision, the Spirit said,
 20 Behold, two³ men seeking thee. But arise, and go
 down, and depart with them, nothing doubting ;
 21 for it is I who have sent them.—So Peter went down
 unto the men, and said, Behold, I am the man ye
 22 seek ; what is the reason of your coming?—And
 they said, Cornelius, a centurion, a righteous man,
 and one that feareth God, and is of good report
 among the whole Jewish nation, was warned by a
 holy angel to have thee fetched to his house, and
 23 to hear words from thee.—So he called them in, and
 entertained them.

But on the morrow he arose and went forth with
 them ; and certain of the brethren from Joppa went
 24 with him. And on the morrow he⁴ entered Cæsarea.
 Now Cornelius was expecting them, and had called
 25 together his kinamen and his intimate friends. And
 as Peter entered, Cornelius met him, and fell down
 26 at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter raised
 him up, saying, Stand up ; I myself also am a man.

¹ Or common. ² Or make. ³ Some MSS., 'three' (including the soldier). ⁴ Some MSS., 'they.'

—And as he talked with him, he went in, and findeth 27
 many who had come together. And he said unto 28
 them, You know that it is unlawful for a man who
 is a Jew to associate with, or come near unto, one
 of another nation; yet God hath shown me that
 I should not call any one unhallowed¹ or unclean.
 Wherefore also, when I was sent for I came without 29
 gainsaying; I ask, therefore, with what intent ye sent
 for me.—And Cornelius said, Four days ago, at this 30
 very hour I was in my house, making the prayer of
 the ninth hour;² and, behold, a man in bright
 apparel stood before me, and saith, 'Cornelius, thy 31
 prayer has been heard, and thine alms have been
 remembered in the sight of God. Send therefore 32
 to Joppa, and call to thee Simon, who is also called
 Peter; he is staying as guest in the house of Simon a
 tanner, by the seaside.' Forthwith therefore I sent 33
 unto thee; and thou hast done well in coming. Now
 therefore we are all present in the sight of God, to
 hear all that hath been commanded thee by the Lord.

But Peter opened his mouth and said, Of a truth 34
 I perceive that God is no respecter of persons;
 but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh 35
 righteousness, is acceptable to him. The word 36
 that he sent to the children of Israel, preaching the
 gospel of peace through Jesus Christ—He is Lord of 37
 all—you know the story that was published through-
 out all Judæa, beginning as he did, from Galilee, after
 the baptism that John preached; even Jesus of
 Nazareth, how God anointed him with the Holy 38
 Spirit and with power; who went about doing good,
 and healing all that were oppressed by the devil;
 for God was with him. And we are witnesses of all 39
 that he did both in the country of the Jews and in
 Jerusalem; whom they slew, hanging him on a tree.
 Him God raised on the third day, and gave him to be 40
 seen openly, not by all the people, but by witnesses, 41
 those chosen before by God, even by us, who ate and
 drank with him, after he rose from the dead.
 And he charged us to preach to the people, and 42
 to testify that this is he that hath been marked
 out by God as judge of living and of dead. To him 43
 all the prophets bear witness, that through his

¹ Or common. ² 3 1.

ACTS 10, 11

name every one who believeth on him receives forgiveness of sins.

- 44 While Peter was yet speaking these words, the
45 Holy Spirit fell on all them that heard the word. And
those of The Circumcision who believed, as many
as had come with Peter, were amazed that on the
Gentiles also the gift of the Holy Spirit had been
46 poured out; for they heard them speaking in
tongues and magnifying God. Then Peter answered,
47 Can any one withhold the water, that these should
not be baptized, seeing they have received the Holy
48 Spirit, even as we?—And he directed that they
should be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.
Then they asked him to tarry some days.
- 11 Now the apostles and the brethren throughout
Judæa heard that the Gentiles also had received the
2 word of God. But when Peter went up to Jerusa-
lem, they that rested on circumcision contended
3 with him, saying, Thou wentest in unto men un-
4 circumcised and didst eat with them. But Peter
began and set forth to them the matter in order,
5 saying, I was in the city of Joppa, in prayer; and in
a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel coming down,
as it were a great sheet let down out of the heaven
6 by four corners; and it came even unto me. And
gazing upon this I began to observe, and I saw the
fourfooted creatures of the earth, and the wild
beasts, and the creeping things, and the birds of the
7 air. And also I heard a voice saying to me, 'Rise
8 Peter; kill and eat.' But I said, 'Not so, Lord;
for any thing unhallowed¹ or unclean hath never
9 entered my mouth.' But a voice answered a second
time² out of the heaven, 'What God hath cleansed,
10 call not thou unhallowed.'¹ Now this happened
thrice, and all were drawn up back into the heaven.
11 And, behold, forthwith three men came up to the
house wherein we were, having been sent from
12 Cæsarea unto me. And the Spirit bade me go with
them, making no distinction. And these six brethren
also went with me, and we entered the man's house;
13 and he told us how he saw the angel standing in his
house, and saying, 'Send to Joppa, and fetch Simon,
14 who is also called Peter; who will speak unto thee

¹ Or common. ² The first voice was an answer to St. Peter's wonderment as to the vision.

ACTS 11

words whereby thou shalt be saved, thou and all thy house.' But when I began to speak,¹ the Holy Spirit fell on them, even as on us at the beginning. But I remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said, 'John indeed baptized with water, but you shall be baptized in the Holy Spirit.' Therefore, if God gave to them the same gift as he gave to us, when we became believers on the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I that I could withstand God?—And when they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then to the Gentiles also God hath given repentance unto life.

Now they that were scattered abroad by reason of the tribulation that arose over Stephen went out as far as Phœnicia and Cyprus and Antioch, speaking the word to none except to Jews only. But some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who, when they had come to Antioch, began to speak unto the Greeks² also, preaching the gospel of the Lord Jesus. And the hand of the Lord was with them; and great was the number that believed and turned to the Lord. Now the report concerning them came to the ears of the church that was in Jerusalem; and they sent forth Barnabas as far as Antioch; who, when he came and saw the grace of God, rejoiced, and exhorted them all to cleave to the Lord with the purpose of their hearts;³ for he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith. And a great multitude was added to the Lord. And he went forth to Tarsus to seek for Saul; and having found him, he brought him to Antioch. And it happened to them that even for a whole year they were brought together in the church, and taught a great multitude, and that the disciples were first called Christians in Antioch.

Now in those days there went down prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. And one of them, named Agabus, stood up and signified through the Spirit that there would be a great famine over all the world; which came to pass in the days of Claudius.⁴

¹ St. Peter (see 10⁴⁰⁻⁴¹) had intended to speak at greater length. ² Some MSS., 'Grecian Jews' (as in 6²). ³ Some MSS., 'cleave to the purpose of their heart in the Lord.' ⁴ Roman Emperor, A.D. 41-54.

ACTS 11, 12

29 And the disciples, even as any one had means, set
 apart, each of them, for a ministration to send relief
 30 to the brethren dwelling in Judæa ; and this they
 did, sending unto the elders¹ by the hands of
 Barnabas and Saul.

12 Now at that time Herod the king set hands on
 2 certain members of the church to oppress them. And
 he killed James the brother of John with the sword.
 3 And seeing that it pleased the Jews, he proceeded
 to seize Peter also (those were the days of the
 4 Unleavened Bread). And when he had apprehended
 him, he had him put into prison, committing the
 custody of him to four guards of soldiers, four in
 5 each guard ; intending to bring him forth to the
 people after the Passover. So Peter was kept in
 prison ; but prayer was made fervently by the
 6 church unto God concerning him. Now when
 Herod was about to bring him forth, that night
 Peter was sleeping, bound with two chains, between
 two soldiers ; and guards before the door kept the
 7 prison. And, lo, an angel of the Lord came and
 stood by him, and a light shone in the building ; and
 he smote Peter on the side, and awoke him, saying,
 Rise up quickly.—And the chains fell off from his
 8 hands. And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself,
 and bind on thy sandals.—And he did so. And he
 saith to him, Wrap thy cloak about thee, and follow
 9 me.—And he went out, and followed, and knew not
 that what the angel was doing was real fact, but
 10 thought he saw a vision. And when they had passed
 through a first and a second ward,² they came to the
 iron gate that leadeth into the city ; and this opened
 to them of its own accord ;³ and they went out, and
 passed on through one street ; and straightway the
 angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter came to himself, he said, Now
 I know of a surety that the Lord hath sent forth his
 angel and delivered me out of the hand of Herod,
 and from all that the Jewish people were expecting.

12 And when he understood it, he went to the house of
 Mary, the mother of John (who was also called

¹ See note to St. Matthew 16²². This is the first use of the word, (presbyteros) for one holding office in the Christian Church. ² Or guard.
³ Lit. automatically.

Mark); where many had gathered together, and were praying. And when he knocked at the door of the porch, a maidservant named Rhoda came near to answer; and recognising Peter's voice, for joy she opened not the porch, but ran in and declared that Peter was standing before the porch. But they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she stoutly maintained that it was even so. But they said, It is his angel. But Peter continued knocking; and when they opened they saw him, and were amazed. But, waving to them with his hand to keep silence, he declared to them how the Lord had brought him forth out of the prison. And he said, Tell these things to James and to the brethren. And he departed and went to another place. Now when day came, there was no small uproar among the soldiers as to what had become of Peter. But when Herod had sought for him, and had not found him, he examined the guards, and ordered that they should be put to death.¹ And having gone down from Judæa to Cæsarea, there he tarried.

Now Herod was highly displeased with the men of Tyre and Sidon; but with one accord they went unto him, and having won over Blastus, the king's chamberlain, they sued for peace, because their country was supplied from the king's country.² And on a set day Herod, having put on royal apparel, sat down upon the judgement-seat, and began to harangue them; but the populace³ kept shouting, The voice of a god, and not of a man! But immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory; and he was eaten by worms, and expired. But the word of the Lord⁴ spread and abounded.

Now Barnabas and Saul, when they had fulfilled their ministrations, returned from⁵ Jerusalem; and they took with them John (who was also called Mark).

Now there were in Antioch, in the church of that time, prophets and teachers, Barnabas and Symeon (who was called Niger), and Lucius the Cyrenian, and Manaen (an intimate friend⁶ of Herod

¹ *Lit.* should be led away (euphemism). See Esther 12³ (Apocrypha).
² 1 Kings 5⁸⁻¹¹. ³ *Lit.* *demos* (only occurs in Acts). ⁴ Some MSS. 'word of God.' ⁵ Some MSS., 'to.' ⁶ Foster brother (R.V.).

ACTS 13

- 2 the tetrarch), and Saul. But as they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, Come, set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work
 3 whereunto I have called them.—Then having fasted and prayed and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.
- 4 So they, sent forth by the Holy Spirit, went down
 5 to Seleucia ; and thence they sailed for Cyprus. And having arrived at Salamis, they began to proclaim the word of God in the synagogue of the Jews ; and
 6 they had also John as assistant. But when they had gone through the whole island unto Paphus, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew,
 7 whose name was Barjesus, who was with the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, a man of discernment. The same called to him Barnabas and Saul, and
 8 sought to hear the word of God. But Elymas (‘ the sorcerer ’—for this is the translation of his name) withstood them, seeking to turn aside the proconsul
 9 from the faith. But Saul (who is also called Paul),¹ filled with the Holy Spirit, gazed upon him, and said,
 10 O full of all guile and all villainy, son of the devil, enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to
 11 pervert the straight ways of the Lord? And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season.—And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness ; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the
 12 hand. Then the proconsul, seeing what had happened, believed, being astonished at the teaching of the Lord.
- 13 Now Paul and his company putting to sea from Paphus came to Perga in Pamphylia ; but John withdrew from them and returned to Jerusalem.
- 14 But they, passing through from Perga, came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue
 15 on the sabbath day, and sat down. And after the reading of the law and the prophets the wardens of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.
- 16 And Paul stood up, and waving with his hand said,
 Men of Israel, and ye that fear God,² hearken.

¹ A primo ecclesie spolio, proconsule Sergio Paulo (Jerome) ; but, as a Roman Citizen, he may have had the name already. ² See note to 10¹.

ACTS 13

The God of this people Israel made choice of our 17
 forefathers, and lifted up the people when they were
 sojourners in the land of Egypt, and with uplifted
 arm led them forth out of it. And for about the 18
 time of forty years he bore patiently with¹ them in
 the wilderness. And after overthrowing seven 19
 nations in the land of Canaan, he gave them their land
 for an inheritance, in about four hundred and fifty
 years.² And after these things he gave them judges 20
 until Samuel the prophet. And afterwards they 21
 asked for a king; and God gave them Saul, son of
 Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, for forty years.
 And when he had removed him, he raised up to them 22
 David to be their king; to whom he bore witness
 also, saying, 'I have found David the son of Jesse,
 a man according to my heart, who will do all that
 I will.' Of this man's offspring God according to 23
 promise hath brought unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus;
 John having first preached, before his coming, a 24
 baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.
 Now as John was fulfilling his course, he said, 'What 25
 think ye that I am? I am not he; but, behold,
 there cometh one after me, the shoes of whose feet
 I am not worthy to untie.' Brethren, children of 26
 the race of Abraham, and those among you who
 fear God, to us was the word of this salvation sent
 forth. For they that dwell in Jerusalem, and their 27
 rulers,³ not knowing him, nor yet the utterances of
 the prophets, which are read every sabbath, fulfilled
 them in sentencing him. And though they found 28
 nothing that deserved death, they asked Pilate that he
 should be slain. And when they had brought to a finish⁴ 29
 all that had been written concerning him, they took
 him down from the tree, and laid him in a tomb. But 30
 God raised him from the dead; and he appeared 31
 some days longer to them that went up with him
 from Galilee to Jerusalem, men who are now his
 witnesses unto the people. And we bring you good 32
 tidings of the promise made unto our forefathers,
 that God hath fulfilled it to our children,⁵ in raising 33
 up Jesus; as also it is written in the second psalm,
 'Son of mine thou art, I this day have begotten thee.'

¹ Some MSS., 'he nourished.' ² *i.e.*, it took 450 years (Moses to David) to complete the conquest. ³ See note, St. Luke 23¹². ⁴ See St. John 10²⁰ (same word). ⁵ Some MSS., 'to us their children.'

ACTS 13

34 And as to his raising him up from the dead, now
 no more to return to corruption, he hath said on
 this wise, ' I will give you the holy, the sure, blessings
 35 of David.' Because he saith also in another psalm,
 ' Thou wilt not give thy Holy One to see corruption.'
 36 For David, after he had in his own generation served
 the counsel of God, fell asleep, and was gathered
 37 unto his forefathers, and saw corruption; but he
 38 whom God raised saw no corruption. Be it known
 unto you therefore, brethren, that through this man
 39 forgiveness of sins is proclaimed to you; and of all
 things of which, under the law of Moses, ye could not
 be acquitted,¹ in him every one who believeth is
 40 acquitted.¹ Beware, therefore, lest that come upon
 you which is spoken in the prophets;

41 ' Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and vanish
 away;

For I work a work in your days,

A work which ye will not believe, though one
 should declare it to you.'

42 Now as they went out, the people besought that
 these words might be spoken to them the next
 43 sabbath. But when the congregation broke up,
 many of the Jews and of their worshipping² converts³
 followed Paul and Barnabas; who, speaking to
 them, urged them to cleave to the grace of God.

44 Now on the following sabbath almost the whole
 city gathered together to hear the word of God.
 45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were
 filled with jealousy, and contradicted whatever was
 46 spoken by Paul, and reviled him. And Paul and
 Barnabas spoke out boldly, and said, It was necessary
 that the word of God should first be spoken to
 you. Seeing that ye thrust it from you, and judge
 yourselves unworthy of the life eternal, lo, we turn
 47 to the Gentiles. For so the Lord hath commanded us,
 I have appointed thee for a light to the Gentiles,
 That thou shouldst be for salvation unto the
 end of the earth.'

48 Now the Gentiles, as they heard, rejoiced, and
 glorified the word of the Lord; ⁴ and as many as had

¹ Or pronounced righteous. ² The class known as 'Worshippers' (colentes, Vulg.), who attended synagogue services without formally joining the Jewish church (the proselytes of the gate). ³ The devout proselytes (A.V.). ⁴ Some MSS., 'of God.'

ACTS 13, 14

been appointed¹ unto eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was carried about throughout all the region. But the Jews incited the worshipping women of rank and the chief men of the city, and stirred up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them from their district. But they shaking off the dust on their feet against them went to Iconium. And the disciples were filling with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

Now it came to pass in Iconium that they went together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke that a great multitude both of Jews and of Greeks believed. But the Jews that were disobedient stirred up the souls of the Gentiles, and embittered them against the brethren. A long time therefore they stayed, speaking boldly of the Lord, who bore witness to the word of his grace, granting signs and wonders to come to pass by their hands. But the multitude of the city were divided; and some held with the Jews, some with the apostles. But when a rush was made by the Gentiles and Jews also, with their rulers, to treat them shamefully, and to stone them, they getting aware of it, fled² unto the cities of Lycaonia, even unto Lystra and Derbe, and the region round about; and there they stayed, preaching the gospel.

And in Lystra there was sitting a certain man, impotent in his feet, lame from his very birth, never having walked. This man was hearkening to Paul as he spoke; who, gazing on him, and seeing that he had faith to be saved, said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leapt up, and began to walk. And the multitudes, seeing what Paul had done, lifted up their voices, saying in the language of Lycaonia, The gods have come down to us in the likeness of men! And they called Barnabas Jupiter;³ and Paul, Mercury⁴ (because he took the lead in speaking). And the priest of Jupiter, whose temple was at the entrance of the city, brought oxen and garlands to the gates, and would have done

¹ Appendix X. ² St. Matthew 10⁴⁰. ³ Greek, Zeus. ⁴ Greek, Hermes. In a Greek legend Jupiter and Mercury are represented as visiting Phrygia in the likeness of men, and being hospitably received in the dwelling of Philemon and Baucis (Jupiter huc SPECIE MORTALI, cumque parente Venit Atlantiades positus caducifer alis). This may have suggested the naming of the apostles after these gods (Ovid, *Metamorphoses*, 8⁴⁶⁶).

ACTS 14, 15

14 sacrifice with the multitudes. But the apostles Barnabas and Paul, hearing of it, rent their garments, and sprang out among the multitude, crying out
15 and saying, Men, why do ye these things? We also are men of like nature with yourselves, and bring you good tidings, that ye should turn from these vanities unto a living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all things that are
16 in them; who in the generations that are past suffered all the nations to walk in their own ways;
17 and yet he left not himself without witness, in that he doeth good, giving you from heaven rains and fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and
18 gladness.—And saying these things they with difficulty restrained the multitudes from sacrificing to them.

19 But there came thither Jews from Antioch and Iconium; and having won over the multitudes, they stoned Paul, and dragged him outside the city, thinking he was dead. But when the disciples came round about him, he rose up and went into the city; and on the morrow he departed with Barnabas
20 to Derbe. And, after preaching the gospel to that city, and making many disciples, they turned back
21 to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antioch, strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that through many tribulations we must enter into the kingdom of God.
22 And when they had appointed for them elders in every church, and had prayed with fastings, they committed them to the Lord, on whom they had
23 come to believe. And passing through Pisidia, they
24 went into Pamphylia. And after speaking the
25 word in Perga, they went down to Attalia; and from there they sailed for Antioch, whence they had
26 been commended to the grace of God for the work
27 they had fulfilled. And when they had come, and had gathered the church together, they began to rehearse all that God, working with them, had done; and how he had opened to the Gentiles a door of
28 faith. And they stayed no little time with the disciples.

15 And certain men having come down from Judæa were teaching the brethren, Unless ye be circumcised

according to the custom of Moses, ye cannot be
 saved. But when Paul and Barnabas had had no
 little contention and debate with them, they
 appointed that Paul and Barnabas, and certain others
 of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles
 and elders about this question. So they, sent on
 their way by the church, passed through Phœnicia
 and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gen-
 tiles ; and they caused great joy to all the brethren.

Now when they arrived in Jerusalem, they were
 received by the church and the apostles and the
 elders, and rehearsed all that God, working with
 them, had done. But there rose up some of the
 Pharisees' party, who had accepted the faith, saying
 that it was necessary to circumcise them, and to
 charge them to keep the law of Moses. And the
 apostles and the elders gathered together to consider
 this matter. But after much debate Peter stood up
 and said unto them,

Brethren, you know that in early days God made
 choice among you that through my mouth the
 Gentiles should hear the word of the gospel, and
 believe. And God, who knoweth the heart, bore
 witness to them, giving them the Holy Spirit even
 as he gave to us ; and he made no distinction between
 us and them, cleansing their hearts by faith. Why
 then, do ye now make trial of God, by putting
 upon the necks of the disciples a yoke which neither
 our forefathers nor we were able to bear? But we
 believe that we are saved in like manner as they,
 through the grace of the Lord Jesus.

Now the whole assembly kept silence ; and they
 hearkened unto Barnabas and Paul, while they
 related what signs and wonders God had wrought
 through them among the Gentiles. But after these
 had finished speaking, James made answer, saying,

Brethren, hearken unto me ; Symeon hath related
 how at the first God visited the Gentiles, to take
 out of them a people for his name. And with this¹
 agree the words of the prophets, even as it is
 written,

' After these things I will return,
 And will rebuild the tabernacle of David,

¹ Or him.

ACTS 15

- which hath fallen ;
 And the ruins thereof I will rebuild,
 And I will set it up again ;
- 17 That the residue of mankind may seek after
 the Lord,
 Even all the Gentiles over whom my name hath
 been invoked,¹
- 18 Saith the Lord, doing these things which were
 known from of old.²
- 19 Wherefore my own judgement is, not to disturb them
 that from among the Gentiles are turning to God,
 20 but to send them written instructions to abstain from
 things polluted through idols, and from fornication,
 21 and from anything strangled, and from blood. For
 Moses from generations of old hath in every city
 them that preach him, being read in the synagogues
 every sabbath.
- 22 Then the apostles and the elders, with the whole
 church, decided to choose out men from among
 themselves, and to send them to Antioch with Paul
 and Barnabas ; namely, Judas (called Barsabbas)
 and Silas, men taking lead among the brethren ;
- 23 sending by them this letter ;³
 ‘ The brotherhood of apostles and elders⁴ wisheth
 joy to the brethren of Gentile origin throughout
 24 Antioch and Syria and Cilicia ;—Forasmuch as we
 heard that certain persons from our company
 troubled you with arguments, unsettling your souls ;
 25 persons to whom we had given no instructions ; we
 decided, after coming to one accord, to choose out
 men and send them unto you, with our beloved
 26 Barnabas and Paul, men who have given up their
 27 lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. We
 have therefore sent Judas and Silas, who themselves
 are taking you the same message by word of mouth.
 28 For the Holy Spirit and we have decided to lay
 upon you no greater burden than these necessary
 29 things ; that ye abstain from things sacrificed to

¹ Or who are called by my name. ² A.V. (other MSS.) has ‘ Saith the Lord, who doeth all these things. Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.’ ³ *Lit.* writing by means of their hand. ⁴ The apostles and the elder brethren (the mother church), R.V. The apostles and the elders, brethren (American Standard Version). The Greek is doubtful, but ‘elders’ (a title), not ‘elder’ (adjective) seems required by the context.

ACTS 15, 16

idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication ; from which things keeping yourselves carefully ye will prosper. Fare ye well.¹

So they, having been dismissed, went down to Antioch ; and gathering the community together they delivered the letter. And they, having read it, rejoiced at the comfort. And Judas and Silas, being themselves also prophets, exhorted the brethren with many words, and strengthened them. And after spending some time there, they were dismissed in peace from the brethren unto those that had sent them.² But Paul and Barnabas tarried in Antioch, instructing, and preaching the good tidings of the word of the Lord, with many others also.

Now some days afterwards Paul said unto Barnabas, Come, let us go back and visit the brethren in every city wherein we proclaimed the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

Now Barnabas was minded to take with them John (who was called Mark). But Paul thought it best not to take with them him that withdrew from them, from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work. And a sharp contention sprang up, so that they parted asunder, one from the other ; and Barnabas, taking Mark with him, sailed for Cyprus. But Paul chose Silas for himself, and went forth, commended by the brethren to the grace of the Lord. And he passed through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches. And he arrived at Derbe also, and Lystra ; and, behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, son of a believing Jewess, hut of a Greek father ; and he was well reported of by the brethren in Lystra and Iconium. Him Paul wished to go forth with him ; and he took and circumcised him because of the Jews that were in those parts ; for they all knew that his father was a Greek. And as they went through the cities, they delivered to the brethren for their observance the decisions arrived at by the apostles and elders in Jerusalem.

So the churches grew firmer in the faith, and increased in numbers daily. But they, withheld by the Holy Spirit from speaking the word in the

¹ On this Decree see Appendix VII. ² Verse 34, 'It seemed good, however, to Silas to abide there' is not in the best MSS.

ACTS 16

- province of Asia,¹ passed through the region of
7 Phrygia and Galatia. But having gone towards
Mysia, they made attempts to enter Bithynia; and
8 the Spirit of Jesus suffered them not. But passing
9 by Mysia they went down to Troas. And a vision
appeared to Paul in the night; a man of Macedonia
was standing, and beseeching him, and saying,
10 Come over into Macedonia, and help us. And when
he had seen the vision, straightway we sought to
set out for Macedonia, concluding that God had
called us to preach the gospel to them.
- 11 Now putting to sea from Troas, we ran a straight
course to Samothrace, and the next day to Neapolis;
12 and thence to Philippi, it being the chief city of
Macedonia in the district, a Roman colony. And
13 we stayed some days in this city. And on the
sabbath day we went forth outside the gate, by a
river side, where we understood there was a place
of prayer; and sitting down, we spoke to the women
14 that had come together. And a certain woman
named Lydia, a seller of purple stuffs, of the city of
Thyatira, a worshipper of God, was a hearer; whose
heart the Lord opened to give heed to what was
15 spoken by Paul. And when she and her household
had been baptized, she besought us, saying, If ye
have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come
into my house, and abide. And she constrained us.
- 16 Now it came to pass, as we were going to the place
of prayer, a certain maid possessed by a spirit of
divination² met us, one who brought her owners
17 much business by soothsaying. She, following after
Paul and us, kept crying, saying, These men are ser-
vants of the Most High God, men who proclaim to
18 you a way of salvation. And this she did for many
days. But Paul, sore troubled, turned and said to the
spirit, In the name of Jesus Christ I charge thee to
come out of her. And it came out that very hour.
- 19 But when her owners saw that the hope of their
business had gone out, they laid hold on Paul and
Silas, and dragged them into the market-place unto
20 the rulers. And having brought them to the magis-
trates, they said, These men, Jews as they are, are
21 greatly troubling our city and setting forth customs

¹ See note on 2¹. ² *Lit.* a spirit, a Python.

ACTS 16

which it is not lawful for us, who are Romans, to receive or to observe. And the multitude also rose up together against them; and the magistrates,¹ tearing their garments off them, gave orders to beat them with rods. And after laying many stripes upon them, they put them into prison, charging the jailer to keep them safely. And he, having received such a charge, put them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

But at midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the prisoners were listening to them. And suddenly there came a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the jail were shaken; and immediately all the doors flew open, and every one's bonds were loosed. But the jailer, roused out of sleep, and seeing that the prison doors were open, drew his sword and was about to kill himself, thinking that the prisoners had escaped. But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm; for we are all here.—But calling for lights he sprang in, and trembling for fear fell down before Paul and Silas; and bringing them out, he said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?—And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be saved, thou and thy household.—And they spoke the word of God to him, and to all that were in his house. And he took them the same hour of the night and cleansed them from their stripes; and they were baptized, he and all his, immediately. And taking them up into his house, he set food before them, and rejoiced greatly with all his household, that he had believed God.

But when day came, the magistrates sent the sergeants,² saying, Let those men go. And the jailer reported these words unto Paul, saying, The magistrates have sent orders to let you go; now therefore come forth, and go in peace. But Paul said unto them, After beating us publicly, though without trial, Romans as we are, they put us into prison; and do they now put us out secretly? nay, verily; but let them come themselves, and take us out.—And the sergeants³ reported these words to the magistrates.

¹ ² *Lit.* prætors, and in 20, 35, 36, 38. ³ *Lit.* the rod-bearers (*Lat.* *lictores*).

ACTS 16, 17

But they feared on hearing that they were Romans,
 39 and went and entreated them, and taking them out
 40 requested them to leave the city. And coming out
 from the prison they went into Lydia's house ; and
 after seeing the brethren and exhorting them, they
 departed.

17 Now after journeying through Amphipolis and
 Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica,¹ where there
 2 was a synagogue of the Jews. And Paul, as was
 his custom, went in unto them, and on three sabbaths²
 3 reasoned with them from the scriptures, opening
 them and explaining that it was necessary that the
 Christ should suffer and should rise from the dead ;
 and that ' this Jesus, whom I proclaim to you, is
 4 the Christ.' And some of them were persuaded and
 attached themselves³ to Paul and Silas ; and of the
 worshipping⁴ Greeks a great company, and of the
 chief women not a few. But the Jews, moved with
 jealousy, took to themselves certain base fellows of
 the market-loungers, and gathering a crowd set
 the city in an uproar ; and attacking the house of
 Jason, they sought to bring them out to the populace.
 6 But not finding them, they dragged Jason and
 certain brethren before the rulers of the city,⁵
 crying, ' These men who have turned the world upside
 7 down have come hither also ; and Jason hath
 welcomed them ;—and they are all acting contrary
 to the decrees of Cæsar,⁶ saying that there is some
 8 other king, one Jesus.—But the multitude and the
 rulers of the city,⁵ hearing these things, were
 9 troubled ; and having admitted to bail Jason and
 the others, they released them.

10 But the brethren straightway conducted Paul and
 Silas away to Berea by night ; and they, on their
 arrival, went off to the synagogue of the Jews.
 11 Now the men here were better disposed than those
 in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with
 all readiness of mind, examining the scriptures daily
 12 whether these things were so. Wherefore many of
 them became believers ; also of the Greek women of
 13 rank and of men, not a few. But when the Jews of
 Thessalonica knew that in Berea also the word of
 God had been proclaimed by Paul, they went thither,

¹ Now Saloniki. ² Or for three weeks. ³ Or were assigned. ⁴ See note to 13¹⁸. ⁵ Lit. politarchs. ⁶ The Roman Emperor.

ACTS 17

there also stirring up and troubling the multitudes.
 Thereupon the brethren straightway sent Paul forth 14
 to go as far as¹ the sea ; and both Silas and Timothy
 remained there. But they that escorted Paul took 15
 him as far as Athens ; and receiving directions for
 Silas and Timothy to come to him as quickly as
 possible, they departed.

Now while Paul was waiting for them in Athens, 16
 his spirit was stirred within him as he noticed that
 the city was full of idols. He reasoned therefore 17
 in the synagogue with the Jews and the worshippers,
 and in the market-place every day with such as
 happened to be there. But certain also of the 18
 Epicurean and Stoic philosophers conferred with
 him ; and some said, What would this babbler say ?
 others, He seems to be a setter-forth of foreign deities
 —because he preached the gospel of Jesus and the
 resurrection. And they took him, and led him before 19
 the Areopagus,² saying, May we know what this new
 teaching is, whereof thou speakest ?—for thou bringest 20
 to our ears some strange matters. We would know
 therefore what these things mean.—Now Athenians,
 one and all, and the strangers sojourning there,
 spent their leisure in nothing else than either telling
 or bearing the last new thing.³ But Paul took his 22
 stand in the midst of the Areopagus, and said,

Men of Athens, I perceive that in every respect
 ye are unusually religious.⁴ For as I was going 23
 about and observing the objects of your worship,
 I found also an altar with this inscription, ‘ To an
 unknown god.’ Therefore what ye worship without
 knowing it, this I set forth to you. The God that 24
 made the world and all that is therein, he, seeing
 that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in
 sanctuaries made by hands ; neither is he tended 25
 by men’s hands, as if he needed anything more, he
 himself being to all the giver of life and breath and
 all things. And he made from one man every 26
 nation of men to dwell on all the face of the earth,
 determining appointed seasons, and the bounds of
 their habitations, that they should seek God, if 27

¹ Some MSS., ‘go as it were to.’ ² The court of that name, held normally in the Areopagus (Mars’ Hill). ³ *Lit.* something still newer.
⁴ Too superstitious (A.V.), *lit.* reverencing the deities more than others.

ACTS 17, 18

- haply they might feel after him and find him,¹
 28 though indeed he is not far from each of us ; for in
 him we live, and move, and have our being ; as
 indeed some of your own poets have said,
 ' For we are also his offspring.'
 29 Therefore, offspring as we are of God, we ought not
 to imagine that the Deity is like unto gold, or silver,
 or stone, a thing graven by craft and device of man.
 30 The times, therefore, of ignorance God having over-
 looked, he now announceth to² men that they should
 31 all everywhere repent ; inasmuch as he hath fixed
 a day in which he will judge the world in righteous-
 ness by a man whom he hath appointed ; whereof
 he hath given assurance to all, by raising him from
 the dead.
 32 But hearing of a resurrection of dead men, some
 began to mock ; others said, We will hear thee yet
 33 again on this matter. Thus Paul went forth from
 34 among them. But there joined him, and became
 believers, certain men, among whom were Dionysius
 the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and
 others with them.
 18 After these things he left Athens, and went to
 2 Corinth. And finding a certain Jew named Aquila,
 a man of Pontus by birth, lately come from Italy
 with his wife Priscilla (because Claudius³ had
 given orders that all Jews should leave Rome),
 3 he went to them ; and because he was of the same
 craft, he abode with them, and they set to work ;
 4 for by their craft they were tent-makers. And every
 sabbath he discoursed in the synagogue, and sought
 5 to persuade both Jews and Greeks. But when Silas
 and Timothy came down from Macedonia, Paul was
 wholly occupied with the word, testifying to the
 6 Jews that Jesus is the Christ. But when they set
 themselves against him and reviled him, he shook
 out his garments,⁴ and said unto them, Your blood
 be upon your own heads ; I am innocent ; hence-
 7 forth I will go to the Gentiles.—And he withdrew
 thence, and went into the house of one named Titius
 Justus, a worshipper of God ; his house adjoined
 8 the synagogue. But Crispus, the warden of the

¹ See Romans 1st. ² Some MSS., 'commands.' ³ Roman Emperor A.D. 41-54. ⁴ See 13th.

synagogue, with all his household, believed the Lord ;
 and many of the Corinthians, as they heard, believed
 and were baptized. But the Lord said to Paul by 9
 night through a vision, Be not afraid, but go on
 speaking, and hold not thy peace ; for I am with 10
 thee, and no one shall set on thee to harm thee ; for
 I have a numerous people in this city.—And he 11
 settled there a year and six months, teaching the
 word of God among them.

But (Gallio¹ being at the time proconsul of 12
 Achaia) the Jews with one accord rose up against
 Paul, and took him before the judgement-seat,
 saying, This fellow incites men to worship God 13
 contrary to the law.—But as Paul was about to open 14
 his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were
 some wrong-doing or wicked villainy, O ye Jews,
 reason would that I should bear with you ; but if it 15
 is questions of doctrine and names and your own
 law, look to them yourselves ; I have no wish to be
 judge of these matters.—And he drove them from 16
 the judgement-seat. Then they all laid hold of 17
 Sosthenes, the warden of the synagogue, and beat
 him before the judgement-seat. And Gallio cared
 nothing about these things.

But Paul, after tarrying there some time longer, 18
 bade the brethren farewell, and sailed thence for
 Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila, having
 shorn² his head in Cenchreæ ; for he was under a
 vow.³ And they arrived at Ephesus, and there he 19
 left them ; but he himself went into the syna-
 gogue and reasoned with the Jews. But when 20
 they asked him to stay some time longer, he con-
 sented not ; but bidding them farewell, and saying,⁴ 21
 ' I will come back to you, if God will,' he put to sea
 from Ephesus. And, landing at Cæsarea, he went 22
 up⁵ and saluted the church, and then went down to
 Antioch. And after spending some time there, he 23
 departed and passed through the region of Galatia,
 and Phrygia, in order, strengthening all the disciples.

Now a certain Jew, named Apollos, an Alexandrian 24

¹ Of whom his brother Seneca wrote, *Nemo mortalium uni tam dulcit est quam hic omnibus.* ² Vulgate reads, 'who had shorn their heads at Cenchreæ ; for they were under a vow.' ³ Numbers 6², 5, 18, 19. ⁴ Some MSS. add (after 'saying'), 'I must by all means keep in Jerusalem the coming festival, but . . . ' ⁵ To Jerusalem.

by birth, a learned¹ man, who was mighty in the
 25 scriptures, arrived at Ephesus. He had been
 instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent
 in spirit spoke and taught precisely whatever had
 to do with Jesus, knowing John's baptism only ;
 26 and he began to speak boldly in the synagogue. But
 Priscilla and Aquila, after hearing him, took him
 unto them and expounded to him the way of God
 27 more precisely. And when he was minded to pass
 into Achaia, the brethren encouraged him, and
 wrote to the disciples to welcome him. And, when
 he had come, he through grace helped much them
 28 that had believed ; for he vigorously confuted the
 Jews, and that publicly, proving through the
 scriptures that Jesus is the Christ.

19 Now it came to pass, while Apollos was in Corinth,
 Paul, after passing through the inland parts, came
 2 to Ephesus and found certain disciples ; and he said
 unto them, Received ye the Holy Spirit when ye
 became believers?²—But they said unto him, Nay,
 we did not so much as hear whether there is a Holy
 3 Spirit.—And he said, Into what then were ye
 baptized?—And they said, Into John's baptism.—
 4 And Paul said, John baptized with a baptism of
 repentance, telling the people that they were to
 believe on him that was coming after him, that is,
 5 on Jesus.—And when they heard, they were baptized
 6 into the name of the Lord Jesus. And after Paul
 had laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came
 upon them ; and they began to speak in tongues,
 7 and to prophesy. And in all the men were about
 twelve.

8 Now for three months he used to go into the
 synagogue and speak boldly, discoursing and seeking
 to persuade them concerning the kingdom of God.
 9 But when some grew hardened and disobedient,
 speaking evil of the Way before the community, he
 withdrew from them, and separated the disciples,
 10 discoursing daily in the school³ of Tyrannus. Now
 this continued for two years ; so that all the inhabit-
 ants of the province of Asia,⁴ both Jews and Greeks,
 11 heard the word of the Lord. And God wrought

¹ Or an eloquent. ² Or accepted the faith. ³ Or lecturers-room. ⁴ See note to 2°.

extraordinary mighty works through the hands of Paul ; so that even handkerchiefs or aprons were carried from his body to such as were sick, and they were released from their diseases, and the evil spirits went out.

But certain also of the itinerant Jews, exorcists, took upon themselves to name over such as were possessed by evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, I adjure you by that Jesus whom Paul preaches.—And a certain Sceva, a Jew, a high priest, had seven sons who did this. But the evil spirit answered and said to them, Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know ; but who are you?—And the man, in whom the evil spirit was, leapt upon them, and mastered them both,¹ and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house stripped and wounded. And this became known to all who dwelt in Ephesus, both Jews and Greeks, and fear fell on them all ; and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. And many of them that had believed kept coming, confessing, and declaring their practices. And not a few of them that practised magical arts would collect their books and burn them in the sight of all ; and they reckoned up the value of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. Thus, by the Lord's might, the word spread and prevailed.

Now when these matters were ended, Paul settled in his spirit that, after passing through Macedonia and Achaia, he would go to Jerusalem ; And said he, after I have been there, I must also visit Rome. And sending into Macedonia two of his assistants, Timothy and Erastus, he himself stayed for a while, with a view to the province of Asia.²

Now at that time there arose no small uproar about the Way. For a certain man, named Demetrius, a silversmith, by making silver shrines of Diana³ brought no little work unto the craftsmen. And these he gathered together, and the workmen of like occupation, and said, Men, ye know that out of this work we have our prosperity. And ye see and hear, that not only at Ephesus, but almost

¹ A. V., following inferior MSS., omits 'both.' Probably an abridgement of an original document accounts for the unexplainable 'both'; and for 'that house.' ² See note to 2°. ³ Greek, Artemis.

throughout the whole province of Asia,¹ this Paul hath persuaded and turned away a great multitude, saying that those that are made by hand are no gods.

27 Now we are in danger not only of this our trade coming into disrepute, but also of the temple of the great goddess Diana being counted as nothing; yea, and of there being put down some of the magnificence of her² whom the whole province of Asia and the

28 world³ worshippeth.—And hearing this they were filled with wrath, and kept crying out, saying, Great

29 Diana of the Ephesians! And the city was filled with the confusion; and they rushed with one accord into the theatre, having seized Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's fellow-travellers.

30 But when Paul was minded to go in unto the populace, the disciples would not allow him to do so.

31 Nay, certain also of the presidents of the province of Asia,⁴ being friendly to him, sent unto him, and besought him not to venture into the theatre.

32 Some therefore were crying one thing, and some another; for the assembly was in confusion, and most of them knew not why they had come together.

33 But they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews pushing him forward; and Alexander, waving his hand, would have defended himself before the

34 populace. But finding that he was a Jew, they all with one voice for about two hours cried out, Great

35 Diana of the Ephesians! But the town-clerk having quieted the multitude saith, Men of Ephesus, what man indeed is there who knoweth not that the city of the Ephesians is temple-warden of the great Diana, and of the image that fell down from heaven?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be gainsaid, ye ought to keep yourselves quiet and to do nothing

37 rash. For ye have brought hither these men who are neither robbers of temples nor blasphemers of our

38 goddess. Therefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen with him have a complaint against any one, court days are kept, and there are proconsuls; let them

39 take proceedings against one another. But if ye want anything further, it shall be determined in

¹ See note to 2^o. ² Or and that she should be deposed from her magnificence (R.V.); cf. St. Luke 1²². ³ *Lit.* the inhabited (earth); for the grammar, see note to 1 Corinthians 13²². ⁴ *Lit.* the Asiarchs, officers in charge of the public games in the province of Asia.

a lawful assembly. For we are even in danger of 40
 being accused of riot concerning to-day's assembly,
 there being no occasion for it ; as to which matter
 we shall not be able to give an account of this
 concourse.¹—And, having thus spoken, he dismissed 41
 the assembly.

Now after the uproar had ceased, Paul, having 20
 sent for the disciples and exhorted them, took leave
 of them, and set out to go into Macedonia. But 2
 when he had passed through these parts, and had
 given them much exhortation, he went into Greece.
 And having spent three months there, he resolved 3
 to return through Macedonia, the Jews having laid
 a plot against him as he was about to put to sea for
 Syria. Now there accompanied him,² Sopater of 4
 Beroea, son of Pyrrhus ; and of the Thessalonians,
 Aristarchus and Secundus ; and Gaius of Derbe,
 and Timothy ; and of the province of Asia,³ Tychicus 5
 and Trophimus. But these had gone in advance,
 and were waiting for us in Troas.— But we ourselves 6
 sailed from Philippi after the days of the Unleavened
 Bread ; and in five days we joined them at Troas,
 and there we stayed seven days.

Now on the first day of the week, when we had 7
 gathered together to break bread, Paul discoursed
 with them, intending to depart on the morrow ; and
 he prolonged his address until midnight. Now 8
 there were many torches⁴ in the upper chamber
 where we had gathered together. And there was 9
 sitting at the window a certain young man, named
 Eutychus, sinking into a deep sleep ; who, as Paul
 was discoursing at further length, sank by reason of
 his sleep, and fell from the third storey, and was
 taken up dead. But Paul went down, and fell on 10
 him, and embracing him said, Make no ado ; for his
 life is in him. And when he had gone up, and had 11
 broken the bread, and eaten, and had conversed
 a good while, even till daybreak, so he departed.
 And they took the lad away alive, and were not a 12
 little comforted.

But we, going in advance to the ship, set sail for 13
 Assus, intending to take Paul on board there ; for

¹ Or there being no one guilty ; as to which (text and translation are uncertain). ² Some MSS. add, 'as far as Asia.' ³ See note to 2^o.
⁴ Or lamps.

ACTS 20

so he had appointed, intending himself to go by
 14 land. But on his way to meet us at Assus, we took
 15 him on board and came to Mitylene. And sailing
 thence, we arrived the following day off Chios ; and
 the next day we crossed over to Samos, and¹ the day
 16 after we came to Miletus. For Paul had decided
 to sail past Ephesus, that he might not have to spend
 time in the province of Asia ; for he was hastening
 to be in Jerusalem, if it were possible for him, on the
 day of Pentecost.

17 But from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called
 18 to him the elders² of the church. And when they
 had come unto him, he said to them,

You know how, from the first day that I came into³
 the province of Asia, I bore myself among you the
 19 whole time, serving the Lord with all humility, and
 with tears, and with trials which befell me by the
 20 plots of the Jews ; how I shrank not from declaring
 unto you anything that was profitable, or from
 teaching you publicly, and from house to house,
 21 testifying both to Jews and to Greeks of repentance
 towards God and faith towards our Lord Jesus.
 22 And now, behold, I am going, bound in my spirit,
 to Jerusalem, not knowing what things will befall
 23 me there ; save that the Holy Spirit testifieth to
 me, in city after city, saying that bonds and
 24 afflictions await me. But I reckon my life of no
 value to myself, provided I may accomplish my
 course, and the ministry which I received from
 the Lord Jesus, to testify to the gospel of the
 25 grace of God. And now, behold, I know that you
 all, among whom I went about, proclaiming the
 26 kingdom, will see my face no longer.⁴ Wherefore
 I protest to you this day that I am innocent of
 27 the blood of any man. For I shrank not from
 28 declaring unto you the whole counsel of God. Take
 heed to yourselves and to all the flock, in which the
 Holy Spirit set you as overseers,⁵ to shepherd the

¹ Some MSS. add, 'after tarrying in Trogyllium.' ² Or presbyters.
³ Or took ship for. ⁴ See Romans 15²¹ ; he must remain no longer in
 those parts of Greece and Asia Minor where he had spent the greater
 part of the last ten years. ⁵ The Greek word here (and in Philippians
 1¹² ; 1 Timothy 3² ; Titus 1⁷ ; and 1 Peter 2²⁵) is episcopus (whence
 'bishop' is derived), and denotes one who has 'oversight' upon others,
 these others being within his scope or view (see Nehemiah 11², in
 the Greek).

church of God,¹ which he made his own possession
 through his own blood.² I know that after my
 departure³ grievous wolves will come in among you,
 not sparing the flock; and from among your own
 selves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to
 draw away the disciples after them. Wherefore
 watch, remembering that for three years I ceased
 not night and day to admonish every one with tears.
 And now I commit you to the Lord⁴ and to the word
 of his grace, to him that is able⁵ to build you up and
 to give you the inheritance among all them that are
 sanctified. No one's silver or gold or apparel have
 I coveted. Ye yourselves know that these hands
 ministered to my own needs, and to my companions.
 In all things I have shown to you that so labouring
 ye ought to help the weak, and to remember the
 words of the Lord Jesus, that he himself said, 'It is
 greater happiness to give than to receive.'

And having thus spoken, he knelt down and
 prayed with them all. And they all wept sore, and
 fell on Paul's neck and kissed him, sorrowing most
 of all over the word he had spoken, that they would
 behold his face no longer. And they brought him
 on his way to the ship.

Now when we had parted from them, and had
 put to sea, we ran a straight course to Cos, and the
 next day to Rhodes, and thence to Patara; and
 finding a ship crossing over to Phoenicia, we went on
 board and put to sea. But when we had sighted
 Cyprus, leaving it to the left we sailed for Syria, and
 landed at Tyre; for there the ship discharged her
 cargo. And having found out the disciples, we
 tarried there seven days; and they, through the
 Spirit, told Paul not to go on board for Jerusalem.
 But when we came to the end of the days, we
 departed and went our way, they all, with wives and
 children, bringing us on till we were out of the city;
 and kneeling down on the beach we prayed, and
 bade each other farewell. And we went on board
 the ship, but they returned home.

¹ Some MSS., 'the Lord.' ² Malachi 3¹¹; regere ecclesiam Dei quam adquisivit sanguine sua (Vulgate). ³ Discessionem (Vulgate). The word would naturally be rendered 'arrival,' but seems to have been loosely used in late Greek. ⁴ Some MSS., 'to God.' ⁵ Or his grace, which word is able; but see Jude 24 (in each passage, 'God able to maintain and to reward').

ACTS 21

7 But we, continuing our voyage from Tyre, arrived
at Ptolemais, and saluted The Brethren, and stayed
8 with them one day. But on the morrow we departed
and came to Cæsarea ; and entering the house of
Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven,
9 we stayed with him. Now he had four daughters,
10 unmarried, who prophesied.¹ But while we were
staying on there for some days, there came down
from Judæa a certain prophet, named Agabus.
11 And coming unto us, and taking Paul's girdle, he
bound his own feet and hands, and said, Thus saith
the Holy Spirit, The man, whose girdle this is, the
Jews will thus bind in Jerusalem, and will deliver
12 him into the hands of the Gentiles.—And when we
heard these things, both we ourselves and they of
that place besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.
13 Then Paul answered, What do ye, weeping and
breaking my heart? for I am ready not only to be
bound, but even to die, in Jerusalem, for the name
14 of the Lord Jesus.—And as he would not be per-
suaded, we stopped speaking, saying, The Lord's
will be done !

15 Now at the end of these days we got ourselves
16 ready, and went our way up to Jerusalem. And
there went with us some of the disciples from
Cæsarea, conducting us to one Mnason, of Cyprus,
a disciple from the first, whose guests we were to be.
17 But when we had come to Jerusalem, The Brethren
18 received us gladly. And the day following, Paul
went in with us unto James ; and all the elders were
19 present. And after saluting them he related one by
one the things that God had wrought among the
20 Gentiles through his ministry. And they, when
they heard it, glorified God ; and they said to Paul,
Thou seest, brother, how many tens of thousands
there are, among the Jews, of them that have become
believers ; and they are all zealous for the Law.
21 But they have been informed about thee that thou
teachest all the Jews that are among the Gentiles
to fall away from Moses, telling them not to circum-
cise their children, neither to observe our customs,
22 How stands it then? They will certainly hear that

¹ See note, St. Matthew 7th.

thou art come ; therefore do this that we tell thee. 23
 We have four men who are under a vow ; take
 them, and purify thyself along with them, and bear 24
 their expenses, that they may shave their heads ;¹
 and all will know that there is no truth in what they
 have been informed about thee, but that thou thyself
 walkest orderly, observing the Law. But as for the 25
 Gentiles that have become believers, we ourselves
 sent written instructions,² determining that they
 are to keep themselves from what is sacrificed to
 idols, and from blood, and from anything strangled,
 and from fornication.—Then Paul, taking the men 26
 the next day, and purifying himself along with them,
 went into the temple, to notify the fulfilling of the
 days of their purification, until the offering should be
 offered³ for each of them.

But when the seven days were almost completed, 27
 the Jews from the province of Asia,⁴ seeing him in
 the temple, began to stir up all the multitude ; and
 they set hands on him, crying out, Men of Israel, 28
 help ! This is the man that teacheth all men
 everywhere against the people and the law and this
 place ; and moreover he brought Greeks also into
 the temple, and hath profaned this holy place,—
 For they had previously seen with him in the city 29
 Trophimus the Ephesian, and they thought that Paul
 had taken him into the temple. And the whole city 30
 was moved, and the people ran together ; and laying
 hold of Paul they proceeded to drag him out of the
 temple ; and straightway the doors were shut. And 31
 while they were seeking to kill him, tidings came up
 to the commandant⁵ of the battalion, that all Jerusa-
 lem was getting astir. And he, forthwith taking 32
 with him soldiers and centurions,⁶ ran down upon
 them ; but they, seeing the commandant and the
 soldiers, left off beating Paul. Then the command- 33
 ant drew near and laid hold of him and ordered him
 to be bound with two chains, and inquired who he
 was, and what he had done. But some among the 34
 multitude were shouting one thing, some another ;
 and the commandant, being for the tumult unable
 to ascertain the truth of the matter, ordered him to

¹ Cf. 18¹⁸. ² Some MSS., 'sent.' ³ Was offered (R.V.); donee offeretur (Vulgate). ⁴ See note to 2⁹. ⁵ *Litt.* officer over a thousand ; our 'colonel.' ⁶ Our 'captains.'

35 be taken into the barracks. But when he came to
 the stairs, he was actually being carried by the
 36 soldiers, owing to the violence of the crowd ; for the
 multitude of the people followed, crying out, Away
 with him !

37 And as Paul was about to be taken into the
 barracks, he saith to the commandant, May I say
 something unto thee?—And he said, Dost thou
 38 speak Greek? thou art not then the Egyptian, who
 some time ago stirred up to sedition and led out into
 39 the wilderness the four thousand Brigands.—But
 Paul said, I am a Jew, of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen
 of no mean city ; but I pray thee, give me leave to
 40 speak unto the people.—And when he had given
 leave, Paul, standing on the stairs, waved with his
 hand to the people ; and when silence was in large
 measure obtained, he addressed them in the Hebrew
 language, saying,

22 Men, brethren and fathers, hearken to the defence
 2 I now make unto you.—But when they heard that
 he was addressing them in the Hebrew language,
 they kept the quieter ; and he saith,

3 I am a man, a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but
 brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel,
 instructed according to the strict letter of the law of
 our forefathers, being zealous for God, even as you all
 4 are this day. And I persecuted this Way unto death,
 binding and committing to prisons both men and
 5 women ; as both the high priest and the whole
 college of elders bear me witness, from whom I
 received letters unto the brethren ; and I was on my
 way to Damascus, to bring in bonds to Jerusalem,
 that they might be punished, such also as had gone
 6 thither. But it came to pass, as I was on my way and
 drawing nigh unto Damascus, suddenly, about noon,
 7 a great light out of the heaven shone round about me,
 and I fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to
 8 me, ' Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me ? ' But I
 answered, ' Who art thou, Lord ? ' And he said
 unto me, ' I am Jesus the Nazorean, whom thou
 9 persecutest.' Now they that were with me saw
 indeed the light, but they heard not the voice of
 10 him that spoke to me. And I said, ' What shall I do,
 Lord ? ' And the Lord said unto me, ' Arise, and
 go into Damascus ; and there thou shalt be told of

ACTS 22

all things that have been appointed for thee to do.'
 But when, for the glory of that light, I could not see, 11
 being led by the hand by them that were with me
 I went into Damascus. And one Ananias, a man 12
 devout according to the law, of good report among
 all the Jews dwelling there, came unto me, and stood 13
 near, and said to me, 'Brother Saul, look up!'
 And I looked up to him that very hour. And he 14
 said, 'The God of our fathers hath appointed thee
 to learn his will, and to see the Righteous One, and
 to hear a voice from his mouth, saying that thou 15
 shalt be a witness for him unto all men of what thou
 hast seen and heard. And now, why tarriest thou? 16
 arise and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling
 on his name.' And it came to pass, that, when I had 17
 gone back to Jerusalem, and while I was praying in
 the temple, I fell into a trance, and saw him as he 18
 said to me, 'Make haste, and go quickly out of
 Jerusalem; because they will not receive witness of
 thine concerning me.' And I said, 'Lord, they 19
 know that I used to imprison and beat, in one syna-
 gogue after another, them that believe on thee; and 20
 when the blood of Stephen thy witness was shed,
 I was standing by, approving, and minding the gar-
 ments of them that killed him.' And he said unto me, 21
 'Depart; for unto nations far hence I will send thee
 forth.'—

Now, till he said this, they were listening to him; 22
 and they lifted up their voices, saying, Away with
 such a fellow from the earth! for it was not fit that
 he should live.¹ And as they cried out, and threw 23
 off² their garments, and cast dust into the air, the
 commandant ordered him to be taken into the 24
 barracks, bidding that he be examined by scourging,
 that he might get to know for what reason they
 shouted so against him. But when they had 25
 stretched him out with the thongs, he said unto the
 centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for you to
 scourge a man that is a Roman,³ and without trial?
 —But when the centurion heard, he went and took 26
 word to the commandant, saying, What art thou
 going to do? for this man is a Roman.—And the 27

¹ See 21²¹. ² Some render 'shook.' ³ *i. e.*, a citizen of the Roman Empire, by birth or by grant.

commandant came and said to him, Tell me, art
 28 thou indeed a Roman?—And he said, Yes.—And the
 commandant answered, I with a great sum purchased
 this citizenship.—And Paul said, But I am a citizen
 29 by birth.—Straightway therefore they that had been
 going to examine him stood back from him; and
 the commandant also was afraid, when he knew that
 he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

30 But on the morrow, wishing to learn for certain
 of what Paul was accused by the Jews, he loosed him,
 and ordered that the high priests and all the council
 should come together; and he took Paul down, and
 23 set him before them. And Paul gazing upon the
 council, said,

Brethren, as for me, in all good conscience I have
 2 conducted myself before God up to this day.—But
 the high priest, Ananias, commanded them that stood
 3 by him to smite him on the mouth. Then said Paul
 unto him, God will smite thee, thou whited wall;
 and sittest thou to judge me according to the law,
 and breaking the law orderest me to be smitten?—
 4 But they that stood by said, Revilest thou God's
 5 high priest?—And Paul said, I knew not, brethren,
 that it was the high priest; for it is written,¹ 'Of a
 ruler of thy people thou shalt not speak evil.'—
 6 But Paul, perceiving that the one part were Saddu-
 cees, and the other Pharisees, began to cry out in the
 council, Brethren, I am a Pharisee, a son of Pharisees;
 touching hope for the dead and their resurrection
 7 I am called in question.—And while he was so speak-
 ing, there arose a contention among the Pharisees
 and Sadducees; and the multitude was divided.
 8 (For Sadducees say that there is no resurrection;
 nor angel, nor spirit; whereas Pharisees acknow-
 9 ledge them both.²) And there arose a great clamour;
 and some of the scribes belonging to the Pharisees'
 party stood up and began to dispute, saying, We
 find no evil in this man; but what if a spirit spoke
 10 to him, or an angel?—But as a great contention was
 rising, the commandant, fearing that Paul would be
 torn asunder by them, ordered that the soldiers
 should come down, and take him by force from
 among them, and conduct him into the barracks.

¹ Exodus 22²⁸. ² A resurrection, and existence of spiritual beings.

ACTS 23

But, the night following, the Lord came and stood 11
by him, and said, Be of good cheer ! for as thou hast
borne witness concerning me in Jerusalem, so must
thou testify in Rome also.

But when day came, the Jews formed a compact, 12
and bound themselves under a curse, saying that
they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed
Paul. And they were more than forty who made 13
this conspiracy ; and they went to the high priests 14
and the elders, and said, We have bound ourselves
under a curse, to taste nothing until we have
killed Paul. Now therefore on your part, with the 15
council, notify the commandant that he bring him
down to you, as if ye would ascertain his case more
precisely. But we, before he come nigh, are ready
to kill him.—But Paul's sister's son, hearing of 16
their lying in wait, went and entered the barracks,
and told Paul. And Paul called one of the centurions 17
to him, and said, Take this young man to the com-
mandant ; for he hath something to tell him.—
So he took him with him, and led him to the com- 18
mandant, and saith, The prisoner Paul called me to
him, and asked me to bring to thee this young man,
who hath something to say to thee.—And the 19
commandant took him by the hand, and, going
aside, asked him privately, What is it thou hast to
tell me?—And he said, The Jews have agreed 20
to ask thee to bring down Paul to-morrow unto
the council, as if thou wouldst¹ inquire somewhat
more precisely about him. Do not let them per- 21
suade thee on these grounds ; for of them there
are lying in wait for him more than forty men, who
have bound themselves under a curse neither to eat
nor to drink until they have killed him ; and now
they are ready, looking for the promise from thee.—
So the commandant let the young man go, charging 22
him not to divulge to any one that 'thou hast
informed me of these things,' And calling unto him 23
some two or so of the centurions, he said, Make ready
two hundred soldiers to go as far as Cæsarea, and
seventy cavalry, and two hundred spearmen, at 24
the third hour of the night ;²—and they were also
to provide beasts, that they might mount Paul and

¹ Some MSS., 'as if they would.' ² At 9 p.m.

take him safely through to Felix the governor.

25 And he wrote a letter after this fashion :—

26 ' Claudius Lysias to the most excellent governor

27 Felix sendeth greeting :—This man had been seized by the Jews, and was about to be killed by them, when I came upon them with the soldiery, and rescued him, having learnt that he was a Roman.

28 And wishing to know the offence of which they

29 accused him, I took him down unto their council, and found that he was accused about questions of their law, but had nothing laid to his charge deserving of death or of bonds. But when it was reported to me that there would be a plot against the man, forthwith I sent him unto thee, charging his accusers also to state his case before thee.'

31 So the soldiers, in accordance with their instructions, took Paul and conducted him by night to

32 Antipatris. But on the morrow they returned to the barracks, leaving the cavalry to go on with him ;

33 and these, on their arrival at Cæsarea, delivered the letter to the governor, and set Paul also before him.

34 And he, having read it, asked to what province he belonged ; and understanding that he was from

35 Cilicia, ' I will hear thee fully,' he said, ' when thy accusers also have come ' ;—ordering him to be kept in Herod's palace.

24 Now five days afterwards Ananias the high priest went down with certain elders and an orator named Tertullus ; and they laid information against Paul

2 before the governor. And when he had been summoned, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that through thee we enjoy much peace, and that reforms are in progress for this nation in all

3 ways and in all places through thy providence, we receive it, most excellent Felix, with all thankfulness.

4 But that I may not further detain thee, I beseech thee of thy kindness to hear us briefly. For having

5 found this man a pestilent fellow and a promoter of seditions among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazoreans—

6 and he even attempted to profane the temple—we laid hold of him ;¹ from whom, by examining him

¹ Some MSS. add, ' and would have judged him according to our law.
7 But the commandant Lysias came, and with great violence took him out of our hands, 8 commanding his accusers to go to thee.'

thyself, thou wilt be able to get knowledge of all these things whereof we accuse him.—And the Jews joined in the charge, affirming that these things were so. 9

And Paul, when the governor had beckoned to him to speak, made answer, 10

Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been for many years judge unto this nation, I cheerfully make my defence, seeing that thou canst ascertain that it is not more than twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem to worship; and that not in the temple did they find me disputing with any one, or collecting a crowd; nor in the synagogues, nor about the city; neither can they prove to thee the things whereof they now accuse me. But this I acknowledge to thee, that according to the Way, which they call a Sect, so I serve the God of our forefathers, believing all things that are contained in the Law or written in the prophets; having a hope towards God, which these men themselves also accept, that there is to be a resurrection, both of righteous and of unrighteous. Herein I also endeavour to have always a conscience clear of offence towards God and men. Now, after some years, I went to present alms to my nation, and offerings; and with these they found me, purified, in the temple, not with any crowd nor with tumult. But there are certain Jews of the province of Asia, who ought to be here before thee and to bring accusation, if they have anything against me. Or else let these men themselves say what wrongdoing they found when I stood before the council, unless it be as to this one exclamation, which I made while standing among them, Concerning the resurrection of the dead I am called in question before you this day. 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21

But Felix, having fairly precise knowledge concerning the Way, adjourned their case, saying, When Lysias the commandant has come down, I will determine your case—instructing the centurion to have him kept in charge, and to let him have some liberty, and not to hinder any of his company from ministering to him. 22 23

Now some days later, Felix came with Drusilla, his wife, a Jewess, and sent for Paul, and heard him 24

- 25 concerning the faith in Christ Jesus. But as he reasoned about righteousness, and self-control, and the judgement to come, Felix, being affrighted, answered, Go thy way for the present ; but when
- 26 I get an opportunity, I will send for thee—hoping at the same time that money would be given him by Paul ; for which reason he sent for him the oftener, and conversed with him.
- 27 But when two years had passed, Porcius Festus succeeded Felix ; and Felix, wishing to gain favour with the Jews, left Paul bound.

- 25 Festus accordingly entered upon his province, and three days afterwards went up from Cæsarea to
- 2 Jerusalem. And the high priests and the chief men of the Jews laid information before him against
- 3 Paul, and besought him, asking it as a favour against Paul, that he would have him fetched to Jerusalem ; they laying an ambush to kill him on the way.
- 4 Festus thereupon made answer that Paul was being kept in charge at Cæsarea, but that he himself would
- 5 be setting out shortly ; ‘ Let, therefore, the men of influence among you,’ saith he, ‘ go down with me ; and if there is anything amiss in the man, let them accuse him.’
- 6 And after staying among them not more than eight or ten days, he went down to Cæsarea ; and on the morrow he sat down on the judgement-seat, and
- 7 ordered Paul to be fetched. And when he had come, the Jews that had come down from Jerusalem stood round about him, bringing against him many and weighty charges, which they could not prove ;
- 8 while Paul defended himself, saying, Not against the law of the Jews, nor against the temple, nor
- 9 against Cæsar, have I committed any offence.—But Festus, wishing to gain favour with the Jews, answered Paul and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be tried before me as to
- 10 these things?—But Paul said, I am standing at Cæsar’s judgement-seat, where I ought to be tried ; to Jews I have done no wrong, as thou also very well
- 11 knowest. Therefore, if I do wrong, and have committed anything deserving of death, I do not object to die ; but if there is no ground for the charges these men bring against me, no one may give me up

to them ; I appeal unto Cæsar.—Then Festus, after 12
 conferring with the council, answered, Unto Cæsar
 thou hast appealed ; unto Cæsar thou shalt go.

Now after an interval of some days Agrippa the 13
 king and Bernice arrived at Cæsarea, paying their
 respects¹ to Festus. But as they were staying there 14
 several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the king,
 saying, There is a certain man left a prisoner by
 Felix ; as to whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the 15
 high priests and the elders of the Jews laid informa-
 tion, asking for sentence against him. Unto whom 16
 I made answer that Romans are not accustomed
 to give up any man, before the accused have his
 accusers face to face, and have had opportunity to
 answer for himself as touching the matter brought
 against him. Therefore, when we met together 17
 here, I lost no time, but, the next day, sat down
 on the judgement-seat, and ordered the man to be
 fetched. As to whom, when the accusers stood up, 18
 they brought no charge of such evil deeds as I had
 in mind ; but they had against him certain questions 19
 about their own religion,² and about a certain Jesus,
 who had died, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. But 20
 being at a loss how to inquire into these matters,
 I asked whether he was willing to go to Jerusalem
 and there be tried about these things. But when 21
 Paul appealed to be reserved for the decision of His
 Majesty,³ I ordered him to be kept till I might remit
 him unto Cæsar.—And Agrippa said unto Festus, 22
 I myself also was wishing to hear the man.—To-
 morrow, saith he, thou shalt hear him.

So on the morrow when Agrippa and Bernice 23
 had come, with great pomp, and had entered the
 audience-hall, with commandants and the principal
 men of the city, Paul was brought in by order of
 Festus. And Festus saith, King Agrippa, and all 24
 men here present with us, ye see this man, about
 whom all the multitude of the Jews pleaded with me,
 both in Jerusalem and here, crying out that he ought
 not to live any longer. But I, for my part, found 25
 that he had committed nothing deserving of death ;
 and as he himself appealed to His Majesty, I decided

¹ Same construction as at end of 9th ; 10th. ² Superstition (A.V.).
³ Lit. The Augustus (Greek, Sebastos, cf. Sebastopol).

ACTS 25, 26

- 26 to send him. Of whom I have nothing definite to write to my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and especially before thee, king Agrippa, that after examination held I may find
 27 something to write. For it seems to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, without at the same time signifying the charges brought against him.
- 26 And Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself—Then Paul stretched forth his hand, and began his defence :—
- 2 As to all the matters whereof I am accused by Jews, I think myself fortunate, king Agrippa, that
 3 I am to defend myself before thee this day, especially in that thou art well-versed in all customs and controversies among the Jews ; wherefore I beseech
 4 thee to hear me patiently. My manner of life, then, from my youth up, such as it was from the beginning among my own nation and in Jerusalem, every Jew
 5 knoweth ; having knowledge of me from the first, if only they would bear witness, that according to the strictest party of our religion I lived a Pharisee.
 6 And now I stand to be tried, in hope of the promise
 7 made by God unto our forefathers ; unto which promise our twelve tribes, earnestly serving God night and day, hope to attain ; concerning which
 8 hope I am accused by Jews, O king. Why is it deemed incredible with you, if God doth raise the
 9 dead? I verily thought to myself that I ought to commit many things contrary to the name of Jesus
 10 the Nazorean. And this indeed I did in Jerusalem ; and I both shut up many of the saints in prisons, having received from the high priests authority to do so, and when they were put to death I gave my
 11 vote¹ against them. And in all the synagogues punishing them often I was forcing them to blaspheme ; and being exceedingly mad against them I set about persecuting them even unto foreign
 12 cities. But while I was journeying to Damascus on this business, with authority and commission from the high priests, at midday, O king, I saw on the
 13 way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shine round about me and them that were

¹ *Lit.* pebble (Rev. 2⁴¹) ; method of condemning by black pebbles, acquitting by white.

journeying with me. And when we had all fallen to 14
 the earth, I heard a voice saying unto me in the
 Hebrew language, 'Saul, Saul! why persecutest
 thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the
 goads.' And I said, 'Who art thou, Lord?' And the 15
 Lord said, 'I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest. But
 rise and stand upon thy feet; for I have appeared 16
 to thee for this purpose, to appoint thee to be a
 minister and a witness, both of the things wherein thou
 hast seen me, and of the things wherein I shall appear
 unto thee; choosing¹ thee out of the people and out 17
 of the Gentiles, unto whom I send thee, to open their 18
 eyes, that they may turn from darkness to light and
 from the power of Satan unto God, that they may
 receive forgiveness of sins and a portion among them
 that are sanctified by faith in me.' Wherefore, king 19
 Agrippa, I showed myself not disobedient to the
 heavenly vision, but set about declaring, first to those 20
 in Damascus, and also to Jerusalem, and throughout
 all the country of Judæa, and to the Gentiles, that
 they should repent and turn to God, doing works
 worthy of their repentance. For these reasons a 21
 band of Jews seized me in the temple and made
 attempts to kill me. So having obtained help, the 22
 help that God gives, I stand unto this day; protesting
 to both small and great, saying nothing beyond what
 the prophets and Moses said would come to pass;
 whether the Christ is subject to suffering; whether, 23
 as first to rise from the dead, he should proclaim
 'Light' both to the people and to the Gentiles.²
 But as he thus defended himself, Festus, raising 24
 his voice, saith, Paul, thou art mad; thy great
 learning doth drive thee mad.—But Paul saith, I am 25
 not mad, most excellent Festus, but utter words of
 truth and soberness. For the king knoweth of these 26
 things, unto whom also I speak freely, for I am
 persuaded that none of these things has escaped his
 notice; for this hath not been done in a corner.
 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know 27
 that thou believest.—And Agrippa said unto Paul, 28
 With little pains thou wouldst persuade me, to

¹ Delivering (A.V.); but it does not meet the facts of St. Paul's life; whereas the text word is borne out by his Jewish birth and Roman citizenship; see 9¹⁵, 'a chosen vessel.' ² Cf. St. Luke 2³².

ACTS 26, 27

29 make me a Christian !¹—But Paul said, I would to God that, whether with little or with much, not only thou, but even all that hear me this day, might become such as I am, except for these bonds.

30 And the king rose up, and the governor, and
31 Berrnice, and they that sat with them ; and having withdrawn they spoke one to another, saying, This man committeth nothing deserving of death or of
32 bonds.—And Agrippa said to Festus, This man might have been released, had he not appealed unto Cæsar.

27 Now when it was determined that we should sail for Italy, they put Paul and some other prisoners in charge of a centurion named Julius, of the

2 Augustan battalion. And going on board a vessel of Adramyttium, which was about to sail to the coasts of the province of Asia,² we put to sea, Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with

3 us. And the next day we touched at Sidon ; and Julius treated Paul kindly, and gave him leave to
4 go to The Friends³ and receive attention. And putting to sea thence, we sailed under the lee of

5 Cyprus, the winds being contrary. And when we had sailed across the sea that lies off Cilicia and

6 Pamphylia, we landed at Myra, in Lycia. And there the centurion found an Alexandrian vessel sailing for
7 Italy, and put us on board. But sailing slowly for

some time, and with difficulty having come off Cnidus, the wind not allowing us to make way beyond, we sailed under the lee of Crete, off Salmone ; and

8 with difficulty coasting along it, we came to a place called Fair Havens, near which was the city of Lasea.

9 But as much time had been spent, and the voyage was now dangerous (because the Fast⁴ also had now
10 gone by), Paul admonished them, saying, Men, I can

see that this voyage will be with injury and much damage, not only of the cargo and the ship, but
11 also of our lives. But the centurion paid more heed to the pilot and to the master of the ship than to

12 what was said by Paul. And as the harbour was not convenient to winter in, the majority advised

¹ *Lit.* In (with) little me thou wouldst persuade a Christian to make (some MSS., 'to become'). In modico suades me Christianum fieri (Vulgate). The text is uncertain. ² See note to 2^o. ³ His friends (A. V.), but see St. John 15^{14, 15}; and 3 St. John 14; the Christian brethren. ⁴ The Day of Atonement, at the end of September; Leviticus 16²⁰⁻²².

ACTS 27

putting to sea thence, if by any means they might reach Phoenix, a harbour of Crete, facing south-west and north-west, and there winter. But when a south wind blew softly, thinking they had gained their object, they weighed anchor, and coasted along Crete, closer in shore. But not long afterwards there beat down from it a tempestuous wind, called Euraquilo; ¹ and when the ship was caught, and could not face the wind, we let her go, and drove on. And running under the lee of a small island, called Clauda, ² we had much ado to get hold of the boat. And when they had hoisted it up, they used cables, under-girding the ship; and fearing lest they should strike upon the Syrtis, ³ they lowered the gear, and so drove on. But as we were grievously storm-tossed, they began next day to throw the cargo overboard; and the third day they flung out with their own hands the fittings of the ship. And when for several days neither sun nor stars shone upon us, and no small tempest was beating on us, any hope of our being saved was now almost lost. And as they were taking but little food, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Men! ye should indeed have hearkened to me, and not have put to sea from Crete, and so have saved yourselves this injury and damage. And now I exhort you to be of good courage; for there will be among you no loss of life, but only of the ship. For a messenger of the God whose I am, and whom I serve, stood by me this night, saying, 'Fear not, Paul; thou must stand before Cæsar; and, behold, God hath granted to thee all them that are sailing with thee.' Wherefore, men! take courage; for I believe God, that it will be even as it hath been told me. Howbeit, we must strike upon a certain island.

But when the fourteenth night had come of our drifting to and fro in the Adriatic, about midnight the sailors deemed that they were drawing near to some land. And they sounded, and found twenty fathoms. But when they had gone a little farther, and had sounded again, they found fifteen fathoms. And fearing lest haply we should strike upon rocky

¹ Some MSS., 'Euroclydon.' ² Some MSS., 'Cauda.' ³ A quick-sand on the N. coast of Africa.

ground, they dropped four anchors from the stern,
 30 and longed for day to break. But as the sailors were
 seeking to escape out of the ship, and had lowered
 the boat into the sea (under pretence of laying out
 31 anchors from the forepart), Paul said to the centurion
 and to the soldiers, Unless these remain in the ship,
 32 you cannot be saved.—Then the soldiers cut away
 33 the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off. And until
 day was just breaking, Paul besought them all to
 take some food, saying, This is the fourteenth day
 that ye have continued fasting, on the watch, taking
 34 nothing. Wherefore I beseech you to take some food,
 as this is for your safety ; for there shall not a hair
 35 from the head of any one of you perish.—And when
 he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks
 to God in presence of them all ; and he broke it, and
 36 began to eat. Then they were all encouraged, and
 37 themselves also took food. Now we were in all in the
 38 vessel two hundred and seventy-six souls.¹ And when
 they had eaten enough, they proceeded to lighten the
 ship, by throwing out the wheat into the sea.

39 Now when day came, they could not make out
 the land ; but they noticed a certain creek with a
 beach, upon which they were minded, if they could,
 40 to run the ship up. And cutting away the anchors,
 they left them in the sea ; at the same time, letting
 go the lashings of the rudders,² and hoisting the
 41 foresail to the breeze, they made for the beach. But
 lighting upon a place where two seas met, they ran
 the vessel aground ; and the forepart stuck fast and
 remained immovable, but the stern began to break
 42 up with the shock. Now the soldiers' counsel was
 to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim
 43 away and escape. But the centurion, wishing to
 save Paul, stayed them from their purpose, and
 ordered that such as could swim should throw
 44 themselves overboard first, and get to land ; and
 the rest were to get to it, some on planks, and others
 on some of the things from the ship. And so it
 came to pass that all escaped safe to land.

28 And having escaped, we then made out that it

¹ Some MSS., 'about seventy-six souls.' ² Two paddle-rudders, one on each quarter.

was the island called Malta.¹ And the natives² 2
 showed us no ordinary kindness ;³ for they lit a fire
 and made us all welcome, because of the rain that
 had set in, and because of the cold. But when Paul 3
 had got together some quantity of sticks, and had
 laid them on the fire, a viper came out by reason of
 the heat and fastened on his hand. Now when the 4
 natives saw the creature hanging from his hand,
 they said one to another, Surely this man is a
 murderer, whom, though he escaped the sea, Justice
 did not allow to live. He, however, shook off the 5
 creature into the fire, and took no harm. Now they 6
 were expecting that he would swell, or fall down dead
 suddenly ; but waiting a long time, and seeing
 nothing amiss happen to him, they changed their
 minds, and said that he was a god.

Now in the neighbourhood of that place there 7
 were lands belonging to the Headman of the island,
 whose name was Publius ; who received us and
 entertained us kindly for three days. But it happened 8
 that the father of Publius was keeping his bed,
 suffering from fever⁴ and dysentery ; to whom Paul
 went in, and having prayed and laid his hands upon
 him he healed him. Whereupon the rest of the 9
 islanders who had diseases came and were cured ;
 and these also honoured us with many marks of 10
 honour, and when we put to sea they provided us
 with such things as we needed.

Now after three months we put to sea in a ship 11
 that had wintered in the island, an Alexandrian
 vessel, her figure-head The Twin Brothers.⁵ And 12
 touching at Syracuse, we stayed there three days.
 And thence by tacking we⁶ arrived at Rhegium ; 13
 and one day later a south wind sprang up, and on
 the second day we came to Puteoli, where we found 14
 Brethren, and were entreated to stay with them
 seven days ; and so we came to Rome.

And from Rome The Brethren, hearing of us, came 15
 as far as Appii Forum⁷ and Tres Tabernæ,⁸ to meet
 us ; and when Paul saw them, he thanked God and

¹ Greek, Melita. ² *Lit.* barbarians. ³ *Lit.* philanthropy. ⁴ *Lit.* fevers.
⁵ *Lit.* with the sign Dioscuri. ⁶ Some MSS., 'And thence we cast loose
 and.' ⁷ Or the Market of Appius. ⁸ Or the Three Shops.

16 took courage. And when we entered Rome,¹ Paul was allowed to dwell by himself with the soldier that guarded him.

17 But it came to pass three days afterwards that he called together first those that were of the Jews ;² and when they had come together, he said unto them, I, brethren, though I had done nothing against the people, or the customs of our forefathers, was as a prisoner from Jerusalem delivered into the hands of
18 the Romans ; who indeed, after examining me, were minded to release me, because there was in me
19 nothing that deserved death. But when the Jews spoke against it, I was forced to appeal unto Cæsar ; not that I have anything of which to accuse my
20 nation. This then is why I called for you, to see me and to speak with me ; for on account of the hope of
21 Israel I am girt with this chain.—And they said unto him, Neither have we ourselves received letters from Judæa concerning thee, nor hath any of the brethren
22 in person reported or spoken any evil of thee. But we deem it best to hear from thee what thou thinkest ; for as to this sect, it is known to us that everywhere it is spoken against.

23 But having arranged with him a day, they came in greater numbers to the place where he was entertained ; to whom he expounded the matter, testifying to the kingdom of God, and persuading them concerning Jesus, both from the law of Moses and from the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some were persuaded of the things that were
25 spoken ; and some disbelieved. But, as they agreed not among themselves, they began to depart, after Paul had said one word, Rightly the Holy Spirit spoke through Isaiah the prophet unto your fore-
26 fathers, saying,

' Go unto this people, and say,
By hearing ye will hear, and will not understand ;

27 And seeing ye will see, and will not perceive ;
For this people's hearts have waxed gross,
And with their ears they have grown dull of hearing,

¹ Some MSS. add, 'the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the camp, but.' ² 'Called together those that were the chief of the Jews,' R.V.

ACTS 28

And their eyes they have closed ;
Lest at any time they should perceive with
their eyes,
And hear with their ears,
And understand with their hearts, and turn
back,
And I should heal them.'

Be it known therefore unto you, that this salvation 28
of God was sent to the Gentiles ; they will also
hearken.¹

And he abode two whole years in a hired dwelling 30
of his own, and received all that came in unto him,
proclaiming the kingdom of God and teaching about 31
the Lord Jesus Christ with all boldness, without any
hindrance.

¹ Some MSS. add verse 29 : ' And when he had said these words, the
Jews departed, having great disputation among themselves.'

THE LETTER¹ OF JAMES

- 1 James, bondman of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes in The Dispersion² wisheth joy.
- 2 Count it all joy, my brethren, when ye fall among
3 manifold trials; knowing that the proving of your
4 faith worketh out steadfastness. But let steadfastness have its perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.
- 5 If any of you lacketh wisdom, let him ask of God, who giveth liberally to all and reproacheth not; and it will be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing doubting; for he that doubteth is like a surge of the sea driven by the wind and tossed. For let
8 not that man think that he, a double-minded³ man unstable in all his ways, will receive any thing from the Lord.
- 9 Let the brother of low degree glory in his exaltation: but the rich, in that he is made low; because as
11 a flower of grass he will pass away. For the sun riseth with its scorching heat,⁴ and it withereth the grass, and its flower falleth away, and the beauty of the look thereof perisheth; so the rich man also will waste away as he goes to and fro.⁵
- 12 Happy man is he that endureth trial; for when he hath been approved, he will receive the crown of life, which the Lord⁶ hath promised to them that love him.
- 13 Let no one when he is tempted say, 'It is from God I am tempted'; for God cannot be tempted by evil things, and he himself tempteth no one.⁷

¹ The words, 'The Letter' here and in other titles, are not found in the oldest MSS. ² See note to St. John 7²². ³ Or half-hearted. ⁴ Jonah 4². ⁵ See 4¹⁰, ¹⁶. ⁶ *Lit.* which he. ⁷ Ecclesiasticus 16²¹, ²².

JAMES 1, 2

But each is tempted, drawn away by his own desire 14
 and enticed. Afterwards, the desire, when it hath 15
 conceived, giveth birth to sin ; but the sin, when it
 is fully grown, bringeth forth death. Be not deceived, 16
 my brethren beloved ; all good giving and every
 perfect gift is from above, coming down from the 17
 Father of the lights, with whom there is no variation,
 nor changing shadow. Of his own will he brought 18
 us forth by the word of truth, that we should be as
 it were a first-fruit of his creatures.

Ye know it, my brethren beloved ; but let every 19
 man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to anger ;
 for the anger of man worketh not the righteousness 20
 of God. Wherefore, laying aside all filthiness and 21
 overflow of malice, in meekness receive the im-
 planted word, which is able to save your souls. But 22
 become doers of the word, and not hearers only,
 deluding your own selves. For if any is a hearer of 23
 the word, and not a doer, he is like a man observing
 his natural face in a mirror ; for he observeth him- 24
 self, and goeth away, and straightway forgetteth
 what manner of man he was. But he that looketh 25
 into what is a perfect law, the law of liberty, and
 continueth looking, having become, not a forgetful
 hearer, but an active worker, happy in what he does
 shall this man be. If any thinketh that he is a 26
 religious man, yet he bridleth not his own tongue,
 but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is
 worthless. Religion pure and undefiled with our 27
 God and Father is this, To visit fatherless ones and
 widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself
 unspotted from the world.

My brethren, hold not with respect of persons your 2
 faith in our Lord Jesus Christ, who is 'The Glory,'¹
 For if there comes into an assembly² of yours a man 2
 with gold rings, in fine clothes, and there comes in
 also a poor man in shabby clothes ; and ye pay 3
 regard to the wearer of the fine clothes, and say,
 ' Sit thou here in a good place ' ; and say to the poor
 man, ' Stand thou there,' or ' Sit down by my foot-
 stool '—do ye not doubt in³ yourselves, and become 4

¹ The glory of thy people Israel (St. Luke 2²²). ² *Lit.* synagogue.
³ Or make distinctions among.

JAMES 2

5 judges with evil thoughts? Hearken, my brethren
 beloved; did not God choose them that are poor
 to the world, to be rich in faith, and heirs of the
 kingdom which he hath promised to them that love
 6 him? But you put to shame the poor man. Do
 not the rich oppress you, and themselves drag you
 7 to courts of justice? is it not they who blaspheme
 the excellent name that was invoked upon you?¹
 8 If, however, ye carry out what is a royal law
 (according to the scripture,² 'Thou shalt love
 9 thy neighbour as thyself'), ye do well; but if ye
 have respect of persons, ye commit sin, being
 10 convicted by the law as transgressors. For whoso-
 ever keeps the law as a whole, but stumbles in one
 11 point, he has become guilty of all. For he that
 said, 'Commit not adultery,' said also, 'Murder
 not'; now if thou dost not commit adultery, but
 committest murder, thou hast become a transgressor
 12 of law. So speak, and so act, as men who are to
 13 be judged under a law of liberty. For the judge-
 ment is merciless to him that showed no mercy;
 mercy glorieth over judgement.
 14 What doth it profit, my brethren, if any says he
 has faith, but he has not works? can the faith save
 15 him? If brother or sister be naked and in lack of
 16 the day's food, and one of you say to them, 'Depart
 in peace, be warmed and fed,' yet ye do not give
 them the needs of the body, what doth it profit?
 17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead in itself.
 18 Yea, some one will say, 'Thou hast faith, and I
 have works; show me thy faith without thy works,
 19 and I by my works will show thee my faith. Is
 it thy faith that God is one?'³ thou doest well;
 20 the demons also have that faith and tremble.' But
 art thou willing to learn, O vain man, that faith
 21 without works is barren?⁴ Was not Abraham, our
 forefather, accounted righteous by works, when⁵
 22 he offered up Isaac his son upon the altar? Thou
 seest that his faith wrought with his works, and
 23 by the works his faith was made perfect; and
 the scripture was fulfilled that saith, 'Now, Abraham
 put faith in God, and it was reckoned to him as

¹ 'by which ye are called' (R.V.). ² Leviticus 19¹⁸. ³ Some MSS.,
 'that there is one God.' ⁴ *Id.* workless; idle, unproductive. ⁵ *Or*
 in that.

JAMES 2, 3

righteousness'; and he was called 'Friend of God.'
 Ye see that by works a man is accounted righteous, 24
 and not by faith only. Yea, likewise, was not also 25
 Rahab the harlot accounted righteous by works,
 when¹ she welcomed the messengers and sent them
 out by a different way? For even as a body with- 26
 out breath is dead, so also faith without works is
 dead.

My brethren, do not, many of you, become 3
 teachers; knowing that we shall receive stricter
 judgement. For in many things we stumble, every 2
 one. If any stumbleth not in word, he is a perfect 3
 man, able to bridle even the whole body. Now if we
 put their bits into the horses' mouths, that they may
 obey us, we turn about even their whole bodies.
 Behold, even the ships, great as they are, and driven 4
 by boisterous winds, are turned about by a very
 small rudder, whither the inclination of the steers-
 man willeth. So the tongue also is a little member 5
 and great are its boasts. Behold, how small a fire!
 how great a forest it kindleth! And the tongue is 6
 a fire; the tongue which defileth the whole body,
 and sets on fire the wheel of life, and is itself set
 on fire by hell;² the tongue makes itself a very
 world³ of iniquity among our members. For every 7
 kind of wild beasts and of birds, of creeping things
 and of things in the sea, is tamed and hath been
 tamed by mankind; but the tongue none of men 8
 can tame; it is a restless evil, full of deadly poison.
 With it we bless the Lord and Father; and with it 9
 we curse men, who are made in the likeness of God.
 Out of the same mouth cometh forth⁴ blessing and 10
 cursing. These things, my brethren, ought not so
 to be. Doth the fountain from the same opening 11
 burst forth with sweet water and with bitter? Can 12
 a fig tree, my brethren, yield olives? or a vine,
 figs? neither can salt water yield sweet.

Who is wise and intelligent among you? let him 13
 show by his good behaviour his works in meekness of
 wisdom. But if ye have bitter jealousy and factious- 14
 ness in your hearts, glory not and lie not against the

¹ Or in that. ² Lit. Gehenna. ³ Or adornment; see 1 St. Peter 3²
 (same word, which comes into English as (a) cosmos, and (b) cosmetics).
⁴ For the grammar see note to 1 Corinthians 13²⁰, they come out in
 one breath, one stream.

JAMES 3, 4

15 truth. This wisdom is not one that cometh down
 16 from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For
 where there are jealousy and factiousness, there there
 17 are disorder and every bad deed. But the wisdom
 from above, first it is pure, then peaceable, kindly,
 ready to obey, full of mercy and good fruits, with-
 18 out partiality, sincere. But fruit of righteousness
 is sown in peace for¹ them that make peace.

4 Whence come quarrels, and whence contentions,
 among you? come they not hence, from your
 2 pleasures that war in your members?² Ye lust
 and have not, ye kill; and ye covet and cannot
 obtain, ye contend and quarrel; ye have not, because
 3 ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask
 amiss, that ye may spend it in your pleasures.
 4 Adulteresses! know ye not that the friendship of
 the world is enmity with God? Therefore whoso-
 ever would be a friend of the world maketh himself
 5 an enemy of God. Or think ye that in vain the
 scripture³ saith, 'Jealously doth he long for the
 6 spirit that he made to dwell in us.'⁴ Nay, he
 giveth greater grace; wherefore it saith, 'God
 resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble.'
 7 Be subject therefore unto God; but resist the
 8 devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to
 God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your
 hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye
 9 double-minded. Suffer misery, and mourn, and
 weep; let your laughter be turned into mourning,
 10 and your joy into gloominess. Humble yourselves
 in the sight of the Lord, and he will exalt you.

11 Speak not one against another, brethren. He
 that speaketh against a brother, or judgeth his
 brother, speaketh against the law, and judgeth the
 law; now if thou judgest the law, thou art not
 12 a doer of the law, but a judge. One there is, law-
 giver and judge, he that is able to save and to
 destroy; but thou that judgest thy neighbour, who
 art thou?

13 Come now, ye that say, 'To-day or to-morrow we
 will go to this city, and spend a year there, and

¹ Or by. ² Whence come wars and fightings and factions? whence
 but from the body, and the lusts of the body? Plato, *Phaedo*, chap. 11,
 p. 88, C. ³ Cited from unknown source. ⁴ Or jealousy doth the Spirit
 which he made to dwell in us long for us.

JAMES 4, 5

traffic, and get gain'; ye who know not what
 your life will be on the morrow;¹ for ye are a vapour
 that appeareth for a little while and then vanisheth
 away; whereas ye should say, 'If the Lord will, we
 shall live and also do this or that.' But in fact ye
 glory in your boastings. All such glorying is evil.
 To any one therefore who knoweth how to do what
 is right, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

Come now, ye rich; weep, crying aloud over your
 miseries that are coming upon you. Your riches have
 rotted, and your garments have become moth-eaten;
 your gold and your silver are rusted over,² and the
 rust of them will be for witness unto you, and will
 eat your flesh as fire eateth. Ye have laid up treasure
 in what are last days. Behold, the hire of the
 labourers who mowed your fields, which on your
 part hath been kept back, crieth out; and the
 cries of the reapers have entered the ears of the
 Lord of hosts.³ Ye have revelled on the earth, and
 have lived in luxury; ye have nourished your hearts
 in a day of slaughter. Ye have condemned, ye have
 murdered the righteous;⁴ he doth not resist you.⁵

Be patient therefore, brethren, until the coming
 of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for
 the precious fruit of the earth, being patient over it,
 until it receive the early and the late rain. Be ye
 also patient, strengthen your hearts; for the coming
 of the Lord is at hand. Murmur not, brethren, one
 against another, lest ye be judged. Behold, the
 judge is standing before the doors. Take, brethren,
 for an example of suffering hardship and of patience,
 the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord.
 Behold, we call them happy that endured; ye
 have heard of the endurance of Job, and have seen
 the end that the Lord made,⁶ that the Lord is full of
 pity, and merciful.

Above all else, my brethren, swear not, be it
 by the heaven, or by the earth, or by any other
 oath; but let your Yea be a yea, and your Nay, a nay;
 that ye fall not under judgement.

¹ Some MSS., 'whereas ye know not what will be on the morrow. What is your life?' ² Strictly the precious metals are not rusted, but tarnished. ³ *Lit.* Lord of Sabaoth. ⁴ See Wisdom of Solomon 2¹⁸⁻²⁰. ⁵ *St. Matthew* 5²². ⁶ *Lit.* the end of the Lord.

JAMES 5

- 13 Doth any among you suffer hardship? let him
14 pray. Is any cheerful? let him sing praise. Is any
among you sick? let him call for the elders of the
church, and let them anoint him with oil in the
15 name of the Lord, and pray over him. And the
prayer of faith will save the sufferer, and the Lord
will raise him up; and if he has committed sins,
16 it shall be forgiven him. Confess therefore your sins
one to another, and pray one for another, that ye
may be healed. Greatly availeth a righteous man's
17 supplication in its working.¹ Elijah was a man of
like nature with us, and he prayed fervently that it
might not rain, and no rain fell upon the land for
18 three years and six months; and he prayed again,
and the heaven gave rain, and the land brought
forth its fruit.
- 19 My brethren, if any among you go astray from the
20 truth, and one turn him back; know² that he that
turneth a sinner from the error of his way will save
his soul³ from death, and will cover a multitude
of sins.

¹ *Multum valet deprecatio justi assidue* (Vulgate). Some give 'the
inwrought (inspired) supplication . . . availeth much.' ² Some MSS.,
'let him know.' ³ Some MSS., 'a soul.'

THE FIRST LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

Paul, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church 1
of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the
Lord Jesus Christ ; Grace be to you and peace.

We give thanks to God always for you all, making 2
mention of you in our prayers, unceasingly remem- 3
bering, before our God and Father, your work of
faith, and labour of love, and steadfastness of
hope¹ in our Lord Jesus Christ ; knowing, brethren 4
beloved by God, that you were chosen, in that our 5
gospel came unto you, not in word only, but also in
power, and in the Holy Spirit and much assurance ;
even as ye know what manner of men we showed 6
ourselves among you for your sakes. And you
became imitators of us and of the Lord, by wel-
coming the word in much tribulation, with joy of
the Holy Spirit ; so that ye became an example 7
to all the believers in Macedonia and in Achaia.
For from you the word of the Lord hath sounded 8
forth, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but in
every place your faith towards God hath gone forth ;
so that we need not say anything. For of themselves 9
they report, concerning us, what manner of reception
we had among you ; and how ye turned to God from 10
your idols, to serve a God living and true, and to wait
for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the
dead, Jesus, who delivereth us from the wrath to
come.

For ye yourselves, brethren, know that our recep- 2
tion among you has not been found in vain ; but 2
though we had previously suffered and had been
shamefully treated, even as ye know, in Philippi, we
were bold of speech in our God to speak unto you
the gospel of God in much conflict. For our 3

¹ In natural order ; faith rests on the past ; love works in the present ;
hope looks to the future ; Colossians 1³⁻⁵.

I. THESSALONIANS 2

- exhortation was not prompted by a delusion, nor
4 by uncleanness, nor was it in guile; but even
as we have been approved by God to be entrusted
with the gospel, so we speak; not as seeking to
please men, but to please God who proveth our
5 hearts. For never were we found using words of
flattery, as indeed ye know, nor a cloak for covetous-
6 ness—God is witness—nor seeking honour from
men, either at your or at others' hands, though, as
Christ's apostles, we might have been burdensome.¹
7 But we were gentle² in your midst, as if a nurse were
8 cherishing her own children; so we, being affection-
ately desirous of you, took delight in imparting to
you, not only the gospel of God, but also our very
9 lives, because ye were now beloved by us. For ye
remember, brethren, our labour and toil; working
night and day, that we might not be a burden to
any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.
10 You are witnesses, and God is witness, how piously
and uprightly and unblamably we bore ourselves
11 towards you who believe; even as ye know how
we dealt with each one of you, as a father with his
12 own children, exhorting and encouraging and charg-
ing you, that ye should walk worthily of God, who
calleth³ you into his own kingdom and glory.
13 And this is why we on our part thank God un-
ceasingly, that when ye received from us, even from
God, the word that ye heard, ye welcomed not the
word of men, but (even as it is in truth) the word of
14 God, which also worketh in you who believe. For
you, brethren, became imitators of the churches of
God that are in Judæa in Christ Jesus, in that you
also at the hands of your countrymen suffered the
same things as those churches⁴ suffered at the hands
15 of the Jews; who both killed the Lord, even Jesus,
and the prophets, and drove us out, and please not
16 God, and are hostile to all men, withholding us from
speaking to the Gentiles, that they may be saved; in
order to fill up the measure of their sins always; but
The Wrath has come upon them to the uttermost.
17 But we, brethren, bereaved of you as we were

¹ Claimed authority (American Standard Version); but see verse 9.
² Some MSS., 'babes.' ³ Some MSS., 'called.' ⁴ Lit. they (ambiguous
in English).

I. THESSALONIANS 2, 3

for a short season, in presence not in heart, were the more exceedingly eager with great desire to see you face to face ; because we wanted to get to you, even I, Paul, once and even twice ; and Satan hindered us. For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of glorying? Is it not even you, in the sight of our Lord Jesus, at his coming? You surely are our glory and our joy.

Wherefore, as we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left behind alone in Athens ; and we sent Timothy, our brother and God's minister¹ in the gospel of the Christ, to strengthen you and to encourage you for the furtherance of your faith ; lest in these tribulations any one should be shaken. For ye yourselves know that hereunto we are appointed ; for verily, when we were with you, we told you beforehand that we were to suffer tribulation, as indeed it came to pass and ye know. This is why, no longer able to forbear, I also sent, that I might know your faith, lest haply the tempter might have tempted you, and our labour should prove in vain.

But when Timothy came even now unto us from you, and brought us good tidings of your faith and love, and that ye have a kindly remembrance of us always, longing to see us, even as we also are longing to see you, we were thereby comforted, brethren, over you in all our distress and tribulation, through your faith ; seeing that now we live, if you stand fast in the Lord. For what thanksgiving can we render to God on your account, over all the joy wherewith we rejoice for your sakes before our God, night and day praying exceedingly that we may see you face to face, and may mak good what is lacking in your faith?

Now may our God and Father himself, and our Lord Jesus, direct our way unto you ; but may the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another and towards all, even as we also do towards you ; to the end that he may strengthen your hearts, that they may be unblamable in holiness before our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all his holy ones.²

¹ Some MSS., 'And fellow-worker with God.' ² St. Matthew 25²¹; St. Mark 8²⁸; 2 Thessalonians 1³; Jude 14.

I. THESSALONIANS 4

4 Further then, brethren, we entreat and exhort
you in the Lord Jesus, that, even as ye received from
us the lesson how ye ought to walk and to please
God, even as ye do walk—that ye would abound
2 still more. For ye know what precepts we gave
3 you by authority of the Lord Jesus. For this is
the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye
4 abstain from fornication; that each of you learn
how to get himself a wife for his own¹ in sanctifi-
5 cation and honour, not in lustful passion even as also
6 the Gentiles, who know not God; that no one trans-
gress, and overreach his brother in the matter, inas-
7 much as the Lord is an avenger in all these things, as
also we told you before and testified. For God
called us, not for uncleanness, but in sanctification.
8 Therefore he that rejecteth, rejecteth, not man, but
God, who also giveth his Spirit, the Holy Spirit,
unto you.
9 Now of brotherly kindness ye have no need that one
write to you; for you yourselves have been taught
10 by God to love one another; for indeed ye practise
it towards all the brethren throughout Macedonia.
But we exhort you, brethren, to abound still more,
11 and to endeavour to live quietly and to mind your
own affairs and to work with your hands, even as we
12 charged you; that ye may walk becomingly as
regards outsiders, and may be in need of nothing.
13 Now we would not, brethren, have you ignorant
concerning them that fall asleep, that ye sorrow not,
14 even as also the rest, who have no hope. For if we
believe that Jesus died and rose, even so them also
that have fallen asleep through Jesus will God² bring
15 with him. For this we say to you as a word of
the Lord, that we, the living, who survive unto the
coming³ of the Lord, shall in no wise precede them
16 that have fallen asleep. For the Lord himself, with
shout of command, with voice of archangel and with
trumpet of God, will descend from heaven; and the
17 dead in Christ will rise first; afterwards we, the
living, who survive, shall be caught up together
with them in clouds, into the air, to meet the Lord;

¹ *Lit.* a vessel; perhaps—his own body; but the meaning of the verb (if taken exactly) supports the text. *Cf.* the parallel in 1 Corinthians 7², and the wording of 1 Peter 3². ² *Or* will God through Jesus.
³ *Lit.* presence (parousia).

I. THESSALONIANS 4, 5

and so we shall ever be with the Lord. Wherefore 18
comfort one another with these words.

Now of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye 5
have no need that anything be written to you ; for 2
ye yourselves know precisely that the day of the
Lord cometh even as a thief in the night. When 3
they are saying, ' Peace and safety,' then cometh upon
them sudden destruction, even as her travail upon a
woman with child ; and they will in no wise escape.
But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that the Day 4
should take you by surprise, as a thief doth ;¹ for you 5
all are sons of light and sons of the day ; we belong
not to the night, nor to darkness. So then let us not 6
sleep, as do the rest ; but let us watch and be sober.
For they that sleep sleep in the night ; and they 7
that get drunk are drunk in the night. But we, who 8
belong to the day, let us be sober, having put on a
breastplate of faith and love, and a helmet, the
hope of salvation ; because God appointed us not 9
unto wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord
Jesus Christ, who died for us, that, whether we 10
watch or whether we sleep, we should live together
with him. Wherefore comfort one another, and 11
build up each other, even as indeed ye do.

Now we entreat you, brethren, to respect them 12
that labour among you, and rule you in the Lord,
and admonish you ; and to esteem them exceedingly 13
in love for their work's sake. Be at peace among
yourselves. And we exhort you, brethren ; Admonish 14
the idle, encourage the faint-hearted, support the
weak, be long-suffering towards all. See that no one 15
render evil for evil to any ; but always follow after
that which is good, one towards another, and towards 16
all. Rejoice always, pray without ceasing, in every
thing give thanks ; for this is the will of God in 18
Christ Jesus concerning you. Quench not the 19
Spirit ; despise not prophesyings ; but test all 20,21
things ; hold fast that which is good ; abstain from 22
every form of evil. But may the God of peace 23
himself sanctify you completely ; and may your
spirits and your souls and your bodies be preserved
entire, without blame at the coming of our Lord

¹ Some MSS., ' the day should overtake you, as it does thieves.'

I. THESSALONIANS 5

24 Jesus Christ. Faithful is he that calleth you, and he will also bring it about.

25 Brethren, pray for us.

26 Salute all the brethren with a holy kiss. I adjure
27 you by the Lord that this letter be read to all the^a
brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

^a Some MSS. add, 'holy.'

THE SECOND LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

Paul, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church 1
of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord
Jesus Christ ; Grace be to you and peace from God 2
the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

We are bound to give thanks to God always for¹ 3
you, brethren, even as it is fitting, in that your faith
groweth exceedingly, and the love of each one of you
all one to another increaseth ; so that we on our part 4
take pride in you in the churches of God for your
steadfastness and faith amid all your persecutions and
the afflictions that ye endure ; a manifest token of 5
God's righteous judgement, to the end that ye may
be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for
which ye also suffer ; if indeed it is a righteous thing 6
with God to give in requital affliction to them that
afflict you, and to you the afflicted relief with us, in 7
the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with
angels of his power in flame of fire, inflicting 8
vengeance on them that know not God, and on them
that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus ; and these 9
will pay the penalty, eternal destruction, away from
the face of the Lord and from the glory of his might,
when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and 10
to be marvelled at in all them that believed (because
our testimony unto you was believed)—in that day.
And to this end we pray always for you, that our 11
God may count you worthy of your calling, and
may fulfil every delight in goodness and work of
faith, in power ; that the name of our Lord Jesus 12
may be glorified in you, and you in him, according
to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

¹ Or concerning.

II. THESSALONIANS 2

2 But we entreat you, brethren, regarding the coming
2 of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together
unto him, that ye be not hastily shaken from your
judgement, nor yet be troubled, whether by a spirit,
or by word of mouth, or by letter attributed to us,
3 stating that the day of the Lord is now present. Let
no one beguile you in any wise ; because the Apostasy
must first come,¹ and the Man of lawlessness² be
4 revealed, the son of perdition, he that opposeth and
exalteth himself against every one that is called God
or is worshipped, so that he takes his seat in the
sanctuary of God, proclaiming himself to be God.
5 Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you,
6 I used to tell you these things? And now ye know
what restraineth,³ that he may be revealed in his
7 own season. For the secret power of lawlessness is
already working ; yet only until he that now
8 restraineth, be taken out of the way. And then will
be revealed the lawless one, whom the Lord Jesus
will slay⁴ by the breath of his mouth, and will
do away with by the manifestation of his coming ;
9 even he whose coming is according to the working
of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders,
10 and with all deceit of unrighteousness for them that
perish ; because they welcomed not the love of
11 the truth, that they might be saved. And this is
why God is sending them a delusion working
12 strongly, that they may believe the lie ; in order
that all they that believed not the truth, but took
pleasure in unrighteousness, might be judged.
13 But, as for us, we are bound to give thanks to
God always for you, brethren beloved by the Lord,
because God from the beginning chose you⁵ unto
salvation, in sanctification by the Spirit and belief
14 of the truth ; whereunto he called you, through our
15 gospel, to obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. So
then, brethren, stand fast, and hold the precepts that
ye were taught whether by word or by letter of ours.
16 Now may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God
our Father who loved us and gave us eternal comfort

¹ *Lit.* because (the day will not come) unless the falling away shall first come. ² Some MSS., 'the man of sin.' ³ Generally taken to be the forces of law and order embodied in the Roman Empire (Emperor). ⁴ Some MSS., 'will consume.' ⁵ Some MSS., 'God chose you as a first-fruit.'

II. THESSALONIANS 2, 3

and a good hope, in grace, comfort your hearts and strengthen them in every good work and word. 17

Further, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course and be glorified, even as it is among you; and that we may be delivered from perverse and evil men; for not all have faith. But faithful is the Lord, who will strengthen you, and guard you from the evil one.¹ But we have confidence in the Lord as regards you, that ye are doing and also will do the things that we enjoin. But may the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God and into the steadfastness of Christ. 3 2 3 4 5

Now we charge you, brethren, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to withdraw yourselves from every brother who liveth idly and not according to the precept that ye² received from us. For ye yourselves know how ye ought to imitate us, in that we were not idle among you; neither ate we bread for naught from any one, but with labour and toil, working night and day, that we might not be a burden to any of you; not that we have not a right, but that we might make ourselves an example to you, that ye should imitate us. For also, when we were with you, with this we used to charge you, 'If any will not work, neither let him eat.' For we hear that some are living idly among you, busied not at all, but being busybodies. Now such persons we charge and exhort in the Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. But as for you, brethren, lose not heart in well-doing. But if any obeyeth not our word by this letter, note that man, to keep no company with him, that he may be put to shame; yet regard him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15

Now may the Lord of peace himself give you his peace at all times in all ways.³ The Lord be with you all. 16

The salutation of me Paul by my own hand, which is the token in every letter; thus I write. 17

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. 18

¹ Or from evil. ² Some MSS., 'they.' ³ Some MSS., 'in all places.'

THE LETTER TO THE GALATIANS

1 Paul, an apostle, sent not from men, neither
2 through a man, but through Jesus Christ and God
3 the Father who raised him from the dead ; Paul
4 and all the brethren that are with me, to the churches
5 of Galatia ; Grace be to you and peace from God
6 our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who gave
7 himself for our sins, that he might deliver us out
8 of this present evil world, according to the will of
9 our God and Father ; to whom be the glory for
10 evermore ;¹ Amen.

6 I marvel that ye are going over so hastily from him
7 that called you in the grace of Christ,—over unto
8 a different gospel ; which means simply that there²
9 are some who trouble you and want to pervert the
10 gospel of the Christ. But if even we, or an angel from
11 heaven, should preach to you any gospel other than³
12 that which we preached to you, let him be accursed.⁴
13 As we have said before, so now again I say, If
14 any one preacheth to you any gospel other than that
15 which ye received, let him be accursed. For is it
16 men, or is it God, whose favour I am now seeking?
17 or am I aiming to please men? If I were still
18 pleasing men, I should not be Christ's bondman.
19 For concerning the gospel that was preached by
20 me, I would remind you, brethren, that it is not a
21 gospel according to⁵ man. For neither was it from
22 a man that I myself received it or was taught it, but
23 through revelation of Jesus Christ.⁶ For ye have
24 heard of my manner of life in time past in the Jews'
25 religion, that beyond measure I persecuted the church
26 of God and made havoc of it ; and that I outstripped

¹ *Lit.* unto the ages of the ages. ² *Lit.* which is nothing else except that these . . . ³ Or contrary to. ⁴ Greek, anathema. ⁵ Cf. the titles of the gospels. ⁶ Verse 15.

GALATIANS 1, 2

in the Jews' religion many of my own age in my own race, being, as I was, more exceedingly zealous for the traditions of my forefathers.

But when he¹ who set me apart, from my very birth, and called me through his grace, was pleased to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach good tidings of him among the Gentiles, straightway I consulted not with flesh and blood; neither went I up to Jerusalem unto them that were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia, and afterwards returned to Damascus. Then, at the end of three years, I went up to Jerusalem to get acquainted with Cephas,² and I stayed with him fifteen days. But other of the apostles I saw none, except³ James, the Lord's brother. (Now as to the matter that I am writing to you, behold, before God, I lie not.) Then I went into the regions of Syria and Cilicia. But I remained unknown by face to the churches of Judæa in Christ; only they used to hear that 'our former persecutor is now preaching good tidings of the faith of which once he made havoc'; and they glorified God in me.

Then, with fourteen years' interval, I again went up to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus also with me. Now I went up in accordance with a revelation; and I laid before them the gospel that I preach among the Gentiles (but I did it privately, to those of repute), lest by any means I should be running, or have run, in vain. Yet even Titus, my companion, Greek as he was, was not compelled to be circumcised. But because of the false brethren secretly brought in, men who came in secretly to spy upon our freedom which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage—to whom, not even for an hour, did we yield in subjection, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. But from those reputed to be somewhat (what once they were, it matters nothing to me; God shows favour to no one)—to me, I say, the men of repute imparted nothing fresh; nay, on the con-

¹ Some MSS., 'God.' ² *i. e.*, Peter. ³ Or but only (but the title 'apostle' was not restricted to the first twelve apostles). ⁴ The sentence is incomplete; A.V. gives '... circumcised; and that because of the false . . .'; but the original has nothing answering to the 'that.' If we could omit 'to whom' as an accidental addition in the Greek, the sentence would be clearer.

GALATIANS 2

8 trary, seeing that I had been entrusted with the
 gospel to The Uncircumcision,¹ even as Peter with
 that to The Circumcision (for he that wrought for
 9 Peter unto the apostleship to The Circumcision,
 wrought for me also unto the Gentiles); and per-
 ceiving the grace that had been given me, James and
 Cephas² and John, the men reputed to be pillars,
 gave to me and Barnabas right hands of fellowship,
 that we should go to the Gentiles, but they to The
 10 Circumcision; only we were to remember the poor;
 which very thing I set myself in earnest to do.

11 But when Cephas came to Antioch, I withstood
 him to his face, because he stood self-condemned.
 12 For until certain persons came from James, he used
 to eat with the Gentiles; but when they came, he
 began to draw back and to separate himself, fearing
 13 them that rested on circumcision. And the other
 Jews also played the hypocrite along with him,
 insomuch that even Barnabas was carried away by
 14 their hypocrisy. But when I saw that they were
 not walking in a straight path according to the
 truth of the gospel, I said to Cephas before them all,
 'If thou, Jew as thou art, livest as the Gentiles live,
 and not as the Jews, how is it that thou constrainest
 15 the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?' We who by
 birth are Jews, and not 'sinners from among the
 16 Gentiles'—yet knowing that not by works of law is a
 man accounted righteous, but through faith in Christ
 Jesus—even we ourselves put faith in Christ Jesus,
 that we might be accounted righteous by faith in
 Christ, not by works of law; seeing that by works of
 law not one person will be accounted righteous.

17 But if, while seeking to be accounted righteous
 in Christ, we ourselves also were found to be sinners,
 18 is Christ a minister of sin? God forbid! For if
 I build up again the things that I pulled down, I
 19 prove myself a transgressor. For I through law
 20 died unto law, that I might live unto God. With
 Christ I have been crucified; yea, it is no longer
 I that live, but Christ liveth in me; yea, the life that
 I now live in the flesh, in faith I live, faith in the

¹ The terms 'uncircumcision,' 'circumcision,' sometimes mean 'the uncircumcised,' 'the circumcised'; *i.e.* the Gentiles, or the Jews; just as 'the Dispersion' (St. John 7⁶⁴) means the persons dispersed.

² *i.e.* Peter.

GALATIANS 2, 3

Son of God, in him that loved me and gave himself
 up for me. I do not away with the grace of God ; 21
 for if righteousness comes through law, then Christ
 died without cause.

O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, 3
 you before whose eyes Jesus Christ was portrayed
 as having been crucified? This is all I want you to 2
 tell me ; Was it by works of law that ye received the
 Spirit, or by hearing with faith?¹ Are ye so foolish? 3
 after beginning in the spirit, are ye now making a
 finish in the flesh? Suffered ye so many things in 4
 vain? if it be indeed in vain. He, then, that supplieth 5
 to you the Spirit, and worketh mighty works among
 you—is it by works of law, or by hearing with
 faith? It is even as ' Abraham had faith in God, 6
 and it was reckoned to him as righteousness.' Ye 7
 perceive, therefore, that such as rest on² faith, they
 are sons of Abraham. Yea, the scripture, foreseeing 8
 that God accounteth the Gentiles righteous by faith,
 preached the gospel beforehand unto Abraham, ' In 9
 thee all the nations shall be blessed.' So then
 they that rest on² faith are blessed along with
 Abraham in his faith. For as many as rest on works 10
 of law are under a curse ; for it is written, ' Cursed
 is every one that abideth not by all things that are
 written in the book of the law, to do them.' But 11
 that in law no one is accounted righteous before God,
 is evident ; because ' The righteous shall live by
 faith.' Now the law resteth not on faith ; but, ' He 12
 that doeth them shall live in them.' Christ redeemed 13
 us from the curse of the law, coming under a curse
 for us (for it is written, ' Cursed is every one that
 hangeth on a tree '); that upon the Gentiles the 14
 blessing given to Abraham might come in Jesus
 Christ ; that we through faith might receive what
 was promised, even the Spirit.

Brethren, I am speaking after the manner of men ; 15
 yet even a human covenant, once it hath been ratified,
 no one sets it aside or adds new conditions. Now to 16
 Abraham the promises were spoken, and to his
 offspring. It saith not, ' and to offsprings,' as
 referring to many ; but, as referring to one, ' and

¹ The hearing of faith (A.V.). ² Lit. are out of (having their root in).

GALATIANS 3, 4

17 to thy offspring'; and this is Christ. Now what I mean is this; a covenant ratified beforehand by God, the law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, doth not annul, so as to do away with the
 18 promise. For, if the inheritance depends on law, it no longer depends on promise; but God hath granted it to Abraham by promise.

19 To what purpose then was the law?

It was added to bring out transgressions,¹ till there should come that Offspring to whom the promise hath been made; and it was appointed through
 20 angels by the hand of a mediator.² Now for one person there is no mediator;³ but God is ONE.⁴

21 Is the law then opposed to the promises of God?

God forbid! for had there been given a law that could impart life, verily righteousness would have
 22 depended on law. But the scripture hath shut up together the whole world⁵ under sin, that the promise, depending on faith in Jesus Christ, may be given to them that have faith.

23 But before faith came, we were kept in ward under law, shut up together in view of the faith which was
 24 afterwards to be revealed. So that the law has led us as children⁶ unto Christ, that we may be accounted righteous through faith. But now that
 25 faith has come, we are no longer led as children. For ye all are sons of God, through faith, in Christ
 26 Jesus. For as many of you as were baptized into Christ put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor
 27 Greek, there is neither bond nor free; there are not male and female; for you all are one in Christ
 28 Jesus. But if you are Christ's, then ye are Abraham's offspring, inheritors according to promise.

4 Now the heir, I say, as long as he is a child, differeth in nothing from a bondman, lord though
 2 he is of all, but is under guardians and stewards
 3 until the time appointed by his father. Even so we, when we were children, were kept in bondage under

¹ *Lit.* for the sake of transgressions (favouring them); Romans 3²⁶.
² *i.e.* Moses; and the law was a contract between two parties. ³ Or one person does not have (require) a mediator. ⁴ Therefore the promise is absolute and unconditional; verse 20 may mean that Moses acted as mediator (go-between) for the company of angels; but that God, being one person, needed no intermediary between him and the people. The passage is obscure; cf. Acts 7⁴²; Hebrews 2². ⁵ Or all things. ⁶ *Lit.* has become our pedagogue (*i.e.* child-escort).

GALATIANS 4

the rudiments¹ of the world. But when the fullness 4
of the time came, God sent forth his Son, born of a 5
woman, born under law, that he might redeem them 6
that were under law, that we might receive adoption 7
as sons. But because ye are sons, God sent forth 8
the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, 9
Father ! So that thou art no longer a bondman, 10
but a son ; but if a son, an heir also through 11
God.

But at that time, not knowing God, ye were in 8
bondage to them that by nature are no gods ; but 9
now that ye have come to know God, nay rather 10
to be known by God, how is it that ye are turning 11
back to the weak and beggarly rudiments—a fresh 12
bondage to which ye desire to begin? Ye are 13
observing days and months, and seasons and years. 14
I fear for you, lest haply to no purpose I have 15
bestowed labour upon you. 16

Brethren, I beseech you, become as I am ; for 12
I also became as you were. Ye did me no wrong ; 13
but ye know that by reason of an infirmity of the 14
flesh I aforesime preached the gospel to you. And 15
what was a trial to you in my flesh ye treated not 16
with despite or loathing ; but ye welcomed me as 17
an angel of God, as Christ Jesus. Where then is 18
the happiness you declared to be yours? for I bear 19
you witness that, had it been possible, ye would have 20
plucked out your very eyes and given them to me.
So then have I become your enemy by dealing truly 21
with you? They pay court to you, not honourably ; 22
nay, they desire to exclude you, that ye may have to 23
court them. But in an honourable cause it is
honourable to be courted at all times, and not only
when I am present with you, my children, with
whom I am in travail again, until Christ be formed
in you ; nay, I was wishing to be present with you
now, and to change my tone ; for I am perplexed
about you.

Tell me, ye who would be under the law, do ye 21
not hear the law? For it is written that Abraham 22
had two sons, one by the handmaid, and one by the 23
freewoman. But the son by the handmaid was born

¹ The ordinances and customs of the Jewish religion (see Colossians 2 17) ; some make the word mean the material elements of the universe.

GALATIANS 4, 5

24 in the way of the flesh ; the son by the freewoman,
 by virtue of the promise. And these things have a
 further meaning;¹ for these women represent two
 25 covenants—one from mount Sinai, bearing children
 unto bondage. Now this covenant stands for Hagar
 (and this 'Hagar' for Mount Sinai in Arabia²) and
 it answers to the Jerusalem that now is, seeing that
 26 she is in bondage with her children. But the
 Jerusalem that is above is free, and she is our
 27 mother. For it is written,

' Make merry, thou barren that bearest not ;
 Break forth and cry, thou that travailest not ;
 For many are the children of the desolate,
 rather than of her that hath the husband.'

28 Now you,³ brethren, as Isaac was, are children of
 29 promise. But, as at that time he that was born
 in the way of the flesh persecuted him that was born
 30 in the way of the Spirit, even so it is now. Yet
 what saith the scripture? ' Cast out the handmaid
 and her son ; for the son of the handmaid shall not
 31 inherit with the son of the freewoman.' Wherefore,
 brethren, we are not children of a handmaid, but
 5 of the freewoman. Unto this freedom Christ set
 us free ; stand firm, therefore, and be not again held
 fast under a yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I, Paul, say to you, that, if ye receive
 3 circumcision, Christ will profit you no whit. Nay,
 I protest again to every man that receives circum-
 cision, that he is a debtor, to carry out the whole
 4 law. Ye are released from Christ, all ye that in law
 would be accounted righteous ; ye have fallen from
 5 grace. For we by the Spirit, through faith, are
 6 waiting for the hope belonging to righteousness. For
 in Christ Jesus neither circumcision, nor uncircum-
 cision, but faith only, working through love, is of
 any avail.

7 Ye were running well ; who hindered you from
 8 obeying the truth? This persuasion cometh not
 9 from him that calleth you. A little leaven leaveneth
 10 the whole lump. I am persuaded as regards you,
 in the Lord, that ye will not be otherwise minded ;
 but he that troubleth you will bear his sentence,

¹ Or contain an allegory (speak something else). ² Where the Law was given and Hagar's descendants dwelt. ³ Some MSS., ' we.'

GALATIANS 5, 6

whoever he may be. But I, brethren, if I still
 preach circumcision, why am I still persecuted? In
 that case, the stumbling-block of the cross hath
 been done away! Would that they that unsettle
 you would even mutilate themselves!

You, brethren, were surely called unto freedom ;
 only make not your freedom an opportunity¹ to the
 flesh, but through your love be in bondage one to
 another. For the entire law is fulfilled in one
 precept, namely, in this, 'Thou shalt love thy
 neighbour as thyself.' But if ye bite and devour
 one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one
 of another. But I say, Be guided by the Spirit, and
 ye will not fulfil the desire of the flesh. For the
 flesh hath desires against the Spirit, and the Spirit
 against the flesh, (for these are contrary one to the
 other), so that ye may not do the things that ye
 would.² But if ye are led by the Spirit, ye are not
 under law. Now the works of the flesh are manifest ;
 such as are, fornication, uncleanness, wantonness,
 idolatry, sorcery, enmities, strife, jealousy, outbreaks
 of wrath, factions, dissensions, heresies, envyings,
 drunkenness, revellings, and such like ; of which I
 tell you beforehand, even as I told you in time past,
 that they that commit such things will have no
 part in the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the
 Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness,
 goodness, faithfulness, meekness, self-control ;
 against such things there is no law.³ But they that
 rest upon Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh, with
 its affections and desires. If we live by the Spirit,
 by the Spirit let us also order our steps. Let us not
 become vain-glorious, provoking one another,
 envying one another.

Brethren, even if a man be surprised in any tres-
 pass, you, the spiritual, restore ye such a one in a
 spirit of gentleness ; looking to thyself, lest thou also
 be tempted. Bear one another's burdens, and thus
 ye will fulfil the law of Christ. For if any thinketh
 himself to be something, when he is nothing, he
 deceiveth himself. But let each test his own work,
 and then he will have his ground for glorying, looking

¹ Or a base of operations. ² Romans 7¹⁴⁻²⁰. ³ Or against those thus minded there is no law.

GALATIANS 6

- 5 to himself only, and not to his neighbour ; for each will bear his own load.
- 6 But let him that is taught in the word give share
7 in all good things to him that teacheth. Be not deceived, God is not mocked ; for whatsoever a man
8 soweth, that he will also reap. For he that soweth unto his own flesh, from the flesh he will reap corruption ; but he that soweth unto the Spirit,
9 from the Spirit he will reap eternal life. But let us not grow weary in well-doing ; for in due season
10 we shall reap, if we faint not. So then, while we have opportunity, let us work what is good towards all, but especially towards them that are of the household of Faith.
- 11 See in what large letters I am writing to you
12 with my own hand. As many as desire to make a fair show in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised ; simply that they may not suffer
13 persecution for the cross of Christ. For even they that receive circumcision¹ themselves observe no law ; but they desire to have you circumcised that
14 they may glory in your flesh. But as for me, God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom² the world hath been crucified unto me, and I unto the
15 world.³ For neither circumcision nor uncircumcision, but a new creation only, is of any account. And as many as shall order their steps by this rule, peace be upon them, and mercy, and upon the
17 Israel of God. Henceforth let no one trouble me ; for I bear on my body the brand-marks⁴ of Jesus.
- 18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits, brethren ; Amen.

¹ Some MSS., 'have been circumcised.' ² Or which. ³ 2nd; 5th; Romans 6th, 9. ⁴ Lit. I bear on my body the stigmata.

THE FIRST LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

Paul, called to be an apostle of Christ Jesus 1
through the will of God ; Paul and Sosthenes the 2
brother, to the church of God that is in Corinth, to
them that have been consecrated in Christ Jesus,
called to be saints, together with all that call upon
the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place,
their Lord and ours ; Grace be to you and peace 3
from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

I thank God always concerning you, for the grace 4
of God which was given you in Christ Jesus ; that 5
in every thing ye were enriched in him, in all
utterance and all knowledge ; even as our testimony 6
to the Christ was confirmed among you, so that ye 7
come not behind in any gift ; waiting for the
revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ, who will also 8
confirm you until the end, unimpeachable in the
day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God may be trusted 9
through whom ye were called into fellowship with
his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

Now I exhort you, brethren, by the name of 10
our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all say the same thing,
and that there be no dissensions among you ; but
that ye be knit together¹ in the same mind and
in the same judgement. For it was disclosed to me 11
about you, my brethren, by the household of Chloe,
that there are contentions among you. I mean 12
this, that each of you saith, ' I stand by² Paul ' ;
' and I, by Apollos ' ; ' and I, by Cephas ' ;³ ' and
I, by Christ.'

Hath the Christ been divided?⁴ surely Paul was 13
not crucified for you? or were ye baptized into the

¹ R.V., 'perfected together'; the verb is used (St. Mark 1¹⁰) of mending nets; here of mending (composing) quarrels; see also 2 Corinthians 13¹¹. ² Lit. I am of. ³ i.e. Peter. ⁴ i.e. has Christ's body, the church, been rent asunder? but some render, 'Has the Christ been apportioned' (to one party)? but this meaning does not quite suit 7¹³ (same word).

I. CORINTHIANS 1

- 14 name of Paul? I am thankful¹ that not one of you
15 did I baptize, except Crispus and Gaius; that no
one should say that ye were baptized into my name.
16 I baptized, however, the household of Stephanas
also; beyond that, I know not whether I baptized
17 any one else. For Christ sent me not to baptize,
but to preach the gospel; not with wisdom of speech,
lest the cross of Christ should be made of no effect.
18 For the story of the cross is, for them that are
perishing, foolishness; but for us who are being
19 saved, it is the power of God. For it is written,
'I will destroy the wisdom of the wise,
And the prudence of the prudent I will bring
to naught.'
20 Where is the wise man? where is the scholar?
where the disputant of this age? hath not God
21 made foolish the wisdom of the world? For, seeing
that in the wisdom of God the world with its wisdom
did not get to know God, it was God's good pleasure
through the foolishness of the preaching to save them
22 that have faith. Seeing also that Jews ask for
23 signs, and Greeks seek wisdom, we, for our part,
preach Christ as having been crucified, to Jews
a stumbling-block, and to Gentiles foolishness;
24 but to them that are called, both Jews and Greeks,
Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God;
25 because the foolishness of God is wiser than men,
and the weakness of God is stronger than men.
26 For consider, brethren, how you were called;
that not many were wise as men count wisdom, not
27 many mighty, not many noble; but the foolish
things of the world God chose, that he might put
to shame them that are wise; and the weak things
of the world God chose, that he might put to shame
28 the things that are strong; and the base things of
the world and the things that are despised God chose,
even² the things that are not,³ that he might do
29 away with the things that are; that not one person
30 should glory before God. But of his gift you are in
Christ Jesus, who was made for us wisdom from
God, both righteousness and sanctification, and
31 redemption; that, even as it is written, 'He that
glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.'

¹ Some MSS., 'I thank God.' ² Some MSS., 'and.' ³ Or even the nonexistent Romans 1²⁷.

I. CORINTHIANS 2, 3

And I, when I came to you, brethren, came with
 no pre-eminence of speech or of wisdom, proclaiming
 to you the secret¹ of God. For I determined not
 to know anything among you, except Jesus Christ
 and him as having been crucified. And I was with
 you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling ;
 and my speech and my preaching were not in
 persuasive words of wisdom, but in demonstration
 of the Spirit and of power ; that your faith might rest,
 not on the wisdom of men, but on the power of God.

Wisdom, however, we speak among them that are
 full-grown, yet a wisdom not of this age, nor of
 the rulers of this age, who are passing away ; but
 we speak God's wisdom, in a secret, the wisdom
 that had been hidden away, which God foreordained
 before the ages, to our glory ; which not one of the
 rulers of this age hath known ; (for had they known
 it, they would not have crucified the Lord of the
 Glory :) but even as it is written,

' Things that eye saw not, and ear heard not,
 And that entered not into the heart of men,
 Whatsoever things God hath prepared for
 them that love him.'²

For to us God revealed them through the Spirit ; for
 the Spirit searcheth all things ; yea, the depths of
 God. For who of men knoweth the things of a man,
 except the man's own spirit which is in him ? even
 so the things of God no one but the Spirit of God
 hath known. But as for us, we received, not the spirit
 of the world, but the Spirit that is from God ; that
 we might know the things that were freely given us
 by God. Which things we also speak, not in words
 taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by
 the Spirit ; with spiritual words combining spiritual
 things. But the natural man receiveth not the
 things of the Spirit of God, for to him they are
 foolishness ; and he cannot know them, because
 they are spiritually examined. But he that is
 spiritual examines all things, yet he himself is
 examined by no one. For ' who ever knew the
 mind of the Lord, that he should instruct him ?'
 We, however, have the mind of Christ.

And I, brethren, could not speak to you, as to

¹ Some MSS., ' witness.' ² Isaiah 64 4 ; 65 26, 27.

I. CORINTHIANS 3

- spiritual men, but as to men of flesh and blood, as
2 to infants in Christ. With milk I fed you, not with
solid food ; for hitherto ye had not the strength.
3 Nay, not even yet have ye the strength ; for ye are
still fleshly. For, whereas there are among you
jealousy and strife, are ye not fleshly, and walking
4 in the ways of men? For when one saith, 'I stand
by Paul,' and another, 'I stand by Apollos,' are ye
not mere men?
5 What then is Apollos? nay, what is Paul?
ministers through whom ye became believers, even
6 as the Lord gave to each. I did the planting, Apollos
7 watered ; but God gave the growth. So then
neither he that planteth is anything, nor he that
watereth ; but God only who giveth the growth.
8 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are all
one ;¹ yet each will receive his own payment
9 according to his own labour. For we are fellow-
workers with God ; ye are God's tillage, God's
building.
10 According to the grace of God which was given
me, as a skilled master-builder I laid a foundation ;
but another buildeth thereon. But let each take
11 heed how he buildeth thereon. For, other founda-
tion no one can lay than that which is laid, which is
12 Jesus Christ. But if any one buildeth upon the
foundation, gold, silver, costly stones,² wood, hay,
13 stubble, the work of each will become manifest ;
for the Day³ will disclose it, because in fire it is
revealed, and the work of each, of what sort it is, the
14 fire will test it. If any one's work which he built
15 thereon shall abide, he will receive payment.⁴ If any
one's work shall be burnt up, he will suffer penalty ;
but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.
16 Know ye not that ye are God's sanctuary, and
17 that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any one
destroyeth the sanctuary of God, God will destroy
him ; for the sanctuary of God is holy, and this
sanctuary you are.
18 Let no one deceive himself ; if any one thinketh
that he is wise among you in this world, let him
19 become foolish, that he may come to be wise. For

¹ Lit. one thing. ² Or precious stones (jewels). ³ i.e. the day of judgement. ⁴ See St. Matthew 20^{1, 2}.

I. CORINTHIANS 3, 4

the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, 'He that catcheth the wise in their craftiness';¹ and further, 'The Lord knoweth the reasonings of the wise, that they are vain.'² Wherefore, let no one glory in men. For all things are yours, be it Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours; but you are Christ's; but Christ is God's.

Let a man so account of us as of ministers of Christ and stewards of secrets which are God's. Here, moreover, it is required in stewards that a man be found faithful. But with me it counts for very little that I should be examined by you or by man's tribunal; yea, I do not even examine mine own self. For I have nothing on my conscience; yet I am not hereby proved righteous; but my examiner is the Lord. Wherefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who will both bring to light the hidden things of the darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts; and then each will have his praise from God.

Now these things, brethren, I have, for your sakes, set out in the persons of myself and Apollos, that in us ye may learn the lesson 'Not to go beyond what is written'; that none of you puff yourselves up in favour of the one against the other. For thou, who gives thee thy superiority? nay, what hast thou that thou didst not receive? but if thou didst receive it, why gloriest thou as if thou hadst not received it? So soon ye have been filled! so soon ye became rich! without us ye became kings! yea, and would that ye had become kings, that we also with you might be kings! For God, I think, set forth us, the apostles, last of all, as men doomed to death, seeing that we have been made a spectacle to the world, both to angels and to men. We are fools for Christ's sake, but you are wise in Christ; we are weak, but you are strong; you in high repute, but we unhonoured. Unto this present hour we hunger and thirst, and are naked, and buffeted, and homeless; and toil, working with our own hands; reviled, we bless; persecuted, we bear with it; defamed, we entreat; we have become as the refuse of the

¹ Job 5¹². ² Psalm 94¹¹.

I. CORINTHIANS 4, 5

world, the offscouring of all things, even until now.

- 14 I write not these things to shame you, but to
15 admonish you as my beloved children. For though
ye may have ten thousand tutors¹ in Christ, yet ye
have not many fathers; for it is I who, in Christ
16 Jesus, begot you through the gospel. Wherefore,
I beseech you, show yourselves imitators of me.
17 For this reason I am sending to you Timothy,
who is a child of mine, beloved and faithful in the
Lord; he will remind you of my ways in Christ
Jesus, even as I teach everywhere in every church.
18 Now some are puffed up, as if I were not coming
19 unto you. Come unto you, however, I shall shortly,
if the Lord will; and I shall learn, not the words
20 of them that are puffed up, but the power. For
the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.
21 What will ye? that I come unto you with a rod?
or in love and a spirit of gentleness?

- 5 It is everywhere reported that there is fornication
among you; and such fornication as is not found
even among the Gentiles, that one should have his
2 father's wife. And you are puffed up, and did not
rather mourn, so that he that committed this deed
3 might be put away from among you. For I, on my
part, being absent in body, but present in spirit,
have already, as to him that hath so wrought this
4 thing, decided in the name of the Lord Jesus, as if
I were present—you and my spirit having gathered
5 together with the power of our Lord Jesus—to
give over such a one unto Satan for destruction of his
flesh, that his spirit may be saved in the day of the
6 Lord. Your glorying is unseemly. Know ye not
that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?
7 Purge out the old leaven,² that ye may be a new
lump, even as ye are unleavened. For our passover
8 lamb was sacrificed, even Christ; wherefore let us
keep festival, not with old leaven, nor with leaven
of malice and wickedness, but with unleavened
bread of sincerity and truth.
9 I wrote to you in my letter, not to keep company
10 with fornicators; not meaning altogether the
fornicators of this world, or its covetous and

¹ *Lit.* pedagogues (child-escorts). ² Exodus 12¹⁰; 13⁷.

I. CORINTHIANS 5, 6

extortioners, or idolaters (for in that case ye must
needs go out of the world) ; but, in fact, I wrote to 11
you, not to keep company, if any one bearing the
name ' Brother ' is a fornicator, or covetous, or an
idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner
—with such a one not even to eat. (For is it my work 12
to judge outsiders?¹ Those within, do you not your-
selves judge? But outsiders God judgeth.) Put 13
away the evil person from among you.

Dare any of you, having a matter against his 6
neighbour, go to law before the unrighteous, and
not before the saints? Or know ye not that the 2
saints will judge² the world? And if the world is
judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the
smallest matters? Know ye not that we shall judge 3
angels?—to say nothing of matters of this life !
If then ye have matters of this life to be judged, 4
set them to judge who are of no account in the
church.³ To shame you I say it. Is it so that 5
there is not one wise person among you, who will
be competent to decide his brother's matter?⁴ But 6
brother goes to law with brother, and that before
unbelievers.⁵ Nay, to begin with, it is altogether a 7
defeat for you that ye have lawsuits one with another.
Why do ye not rather suffer wrong? why not
rather be defrauded? Nay ye yourselves do wrong 8
and defraud, and that towards brethren !

Or know ye not that wrongdoers will have no 9
part in the kingdom of God? Be not deceived ;
not fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor
effeminate persons, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor 10
covetous persons, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor
extortioners, will have any part in the kingdom of
God. And such were some of you ; but ye washed 11
yourselves clean, but ye were consecrated, but ye
were counted righteous, in the name of the Lord
Jesus Christ, and in the Spirit of our God.

All things are lawful for me, but not all things are 12

¹ *i.e.* not members of the church. ² *Or* rule ; see note on St. Matthew 19²⁸ (F. W. Robertson's *Expository Lectures*, ad. loc.). ³ *Or* do you set them to judge that, in the church, are held of no account (*i.e.* heathen judges)? Text means the humblest church-members are good enough for such poor employment. ⁴ *Lit.* between his brother—in the matter of his brother (and some third party) ; perhaps a conventional abridgement of some legal expression. ⁵ *i.e.* heathens.

I. CORINTHIANS 6, 7

expedient ; all things are lawful for me, but not one
13 shall become a law to me. Foods for the stomach,
and the stomach for foods ; but God will do away
with both it and them. Now the body is not for
14 fornication, but for the Lord ; and the Lord for the
body ; but God both raised the Lord, and will raise
15 us up through his power. Know ye not that your
bodies are members of Christ? shall I then take the
members of the Christ, and make them members of
16 a harlot? God forbid ! Or know ye not that he
that cleaveth to the harlot¹ is one body with her?²
for 'The two,' it saith, 'shall become one flesh.'
17 But he that cleaveth to the Lord is one spirit with
18 him.² Flee fornication. Any other sinful act a
man commits is outside of the body ; but the
19 fornicator sins against his own body. Or know ye
not that your body is a sanctuary of the Holy Spirit
which is in you, which ye have from God, and
20 that ye are not your own? For ye were bought at
a price ; come, glorify God³ in your bodies.

7 Now as to the matters whereof ye wrote :—it is
2 well for a man not to touch a woman ; yet because
of the much fornication, let each man have his own
wife, and let each woman have her own husband.
3 Let the husband render to the wife her due ; and
4 likewise the wife to the husband. Over her own
body not the wife, but the husband, has a right ;
and likewise over his own body, not the husband,
5 but the wife, has a right. Defraud not one the other,
unless it be by consent for a season, that ye may
make leisure for prayer, and may come together
again ; lest Satan tempt you in that you lack self-
6 control. But this I say by way of concession, not
7 by way of command. But I would that all men
were as I myself am. Yet each hath his own gift
from God, one after this manner, another after
that manner.

8 But to the unmarried and to widows I say, It is
9 well for them if they also abide even as I. But if
they have not self-control, let them get married ;
10 for it is better to marry than to burn. But to such
as are married I give charge (yet not I, but the Lord),

¹ Same phrase as in Ecclesiasticus 19². ² Last two words not expressed in original. ³ Glorificate et portate Deum (Vulgate).

I. CORINTHIANS 7

that wife separate not herself from husband (if
 however she should separate, let her remain un-
 married, or be reconciled to her husband); and
 that husband put not wife away.¹ But to the rest
 I say (I, not the Lord), If any one, a brother, hath
 a wife, who is not a believer, and she, as he with
 her, is content to dwell with him, let him not put
 her away. And a woman who hath a husband who
 is not a believer, and he, as she with him, is content
 to dwell with her, let her not put away her husband.
 For the unbelieving husband is consecrated in the
 wife, and the unbelieving wife is consecrated in
 the brother; otherwise your children are unclean;
 but, as it is, they are consecrated. But if the
 unbeliever separateth himself, let him separate;
 a brother or a sister is not under bondage in such
 cases; but God hath called you² in peace. For how
 knowest thou, O wife, whether thou wilt save thy
 husband? or how knowest thou, O husband,
 whether thou wilt save thy wife?

Howbeit, as the Lord hath divided to each his
 portion, as God hath called each, so let him walk.
 And so I appoint in all the churches. Was any one
 called having been circumcised? let him not become
 uncircumcised. Hath any been called in uncircum-
 cision? let him not be circumcised. Circumcision
 matters not, and uncircumcision matters not;
 keeping God's commandments is what matters.
 Each in the calling wherewith he was called, in it let
 him abide. Wast thou called being a bondman?
 let it not trouble thee; (yet if thou canst become
 free, prefer to do so);³ for he that, being a bondman,
 was called in the Lord, is the Lord's freedman; like-
 wise, he that, being free, was called, is Christ's
 bondman. Ye were bought at a price; become not
 bondmen to men. Brethren, let each, in the state
 wherein he was called, in it abide with God.

As to maidens⁴ I have no commandment from the
 Lord; yet I give an opinion, as having obtained
 mercy from the Lord to be faithful. I think then
 that this is well on account of the present distress;

¹ For 'put away' ('dimittat,' Vulgate), R.V. has 'leave,' and in verses 12, 13. ² Some MSS., 'us.' ³ Some render, 'Nay, even if thou canst become free, prefer thy state.' ⁴ Or the unmarried.

I. CORINTHIANS 7

- 27 that it is well for a man to remain as he is. Art thou bound to a wife, seek not to be freed. Art thou
28 free from a wife, seek not a wife. But even if thou shouldst marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a maiden should marry, she has not sinned. Yet such will have tribulation in the flesh; I, however, would spare you.
- 29 But this I affirm, brethren, the time hath been shortened; henceforth they that have wives, let them
30 be as if they had none; and they that weep, as if they wept not; and they that rejoice, as if they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as if possessing nothing;
31 and they that use the world, as not using it to the full; for the fashion of this world is passing away.
- 32 But I would have you free from anxiety. He that is unmarried is anxious about the things of the Lord,
33 how he may please the Lord; whereas he that is married is anxious about the things of the world, how
34 he may please his wife,¹ and he is divided.² And the unmarried woman³ (the maiden also) is anxious about the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit; whereas she that is married is anxious about the things of the world, how she may
35 please her husband. Now this I say, with a view to your own advantage; not that I may put a halter upon you, but looking to what is becoming, and that ye may wait upon the Lord without distraction.
- 36 Yet if any one considereth that he is behaving unbecomingly towards his maiden; if she is in the flower of her age, and if so it ought to be, let him do what he willeth, he sinneth not; he may let them
37 marry. But he that standeth steadfast in his heart being under no constraint, but is free to carry out his own will, and hath determined this in his own
38 mind, to keep his maiden at home, will do well. So then both he that giveth his maiden in marriage doeth well; and he that giveth her not in marriage will do better.⁴
- 39 A wife is bound as long as her husband is alive; but if the husband has fallen asleep, she is free to be

¹ His wife. There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, etc. (A.V., following other MSS.). ² In interests, allegiance; *divisus est* (Vulgate; same word as in 1²⁸). ³ Differing in age from the maiden. ⁴ See Appendix IX.

I. CORINTHIANS 7, 8, 9

married to whom she will, only in the Lord. But 40
 happier is she in my opinion, if she remain as she
 is ; and I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

Now concerning things sacrificed to idols, we 8
 know that we all have knowledge ; knowledge
 puffeth up, whereas love edifieth. If any one fancies 2
 that he knoweth anything, he never yet knew even
 as he ought to know ; but if any one loveth God, 3
 the same is known by him.¹ Therefore, as concerning 4
 the eating of things sacrificed to idols, we know that
 an idol is nothing in the world² and that there is no
 God but one. For even if there are what are called 5
 gods, whether in heaven or on earth (as indeed there
 are 'gods,' many and 'lords' many), yet for us there 6
 is one God, the Father, from whom are all things, and
 we unto him³ ; and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through
 whom are all things, and we through him. Howbeit 7
 there is not in all men this knowledge ; but some,
 from being accustomed to the idol until now, eat
 food as a thing sacrificed to an idol ; and their
 conscience, weak as it is, is defiled. Now food will 8
 not put us on trial before God ;⁴ neither are we the
 losers, if we eat not ; nor are we the gainers, if we
 eat. Yet take heed lest by any means this right of 9
 yours become a stumbling-block to the weak. For, 10
 if any one see thee who hast knowledge sitting at
 table in an idol's temple, will not his conscience,
 weak as he is, be emboldened⁵ to eat things sacri-
 ficed to idols ! and so there perisheth through thy 11
 knowledge the weakling, the brother for whose sake
 Christ died ! But in thus sinning against the 12
 brethren, and wounding their conscience, in its weak
 state, ye sin against Christ. Wherefore, if food is a 13
 stumbling-block to my brother, I will eat flesh no
 more for ever, lest I cause my brother to stumble.

Am I not free ? am I not an apostle ? have I not 9
 seen Jesus our Lord ? are not you my work in the
 Lord ? If to others I am not an apostle, yet to you 2
 at least I am ; for you are the seal set upon my
 apostleship in the Lord. This is my answer to them 3
 that examine me. Have we not a right to food and 4

¹ Galatians 4^o. ² See 10^o. ³ Romans 11^o. ⁴ i.e. will not affect the judgement passed upon us ; will make no 'presentment' in our case ;
 verse 8 is probably a summary of the Corinthians' argument. ⁵ Lit. edified.

I. CORINTHIANS 9

- 5 drink! Have we not a right to take about a wife,
one of the sisters,¹ even as the rest of the apostles,
6 and the Lord's brothers, and Cephas!² Or I only
and Barnabas, have we not a right to forbear
7 working? Who ever serveth as a soldier at his own
expense? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not
the fruit thereof? or who is shepherd to a flock, and
eateth not of the milk of the flock?
- 8 Is it after the manner of men that I so speak?
9 or doth not the law also say the same? For in the
law of Moses it is written, 'Thou shalt not muzzle
an ox while it treadeth out the corn.' Is it for the
oxen that God is concerned? or doth he say it simply
10 for our sakes? For our sakes surely it was written,
to show that the ploughman ought to plough in hope,
and the thresher to thresh in hope of partaking.
- 11 If we sowed for you the things of the spirit, is it a
great matter if we shall reap from you the things of
12 the flesh? If in this right over you others partake,
may not we still more? Nevertheless we used not
this right; but we bear all things, that we may
13 cause no hindrance to the gospel of Christ. Know
ye not that they that do the work of the temple
eat of the things from the temple? that they that
give attendance at the altar have their share with
14 the altar? Even so the Lord also appointed³ for
them that proclaim the gospel, from the gospel to
have their living.
- 15 But I, for my part, have used none of these rights;
yea, I am not writing this, that so it should be done
in my case; for it were well for me to die rather
16 than—my glorying no one shall make void. For
even if I preach the gospel, I have no ground for
glorying, since I am under constraint; for, woe is
17 unto me, if I preach not the gospel! For if willingly
I carry on this work, I have a reward; but if un-
willingly, with a stewardship I have been entrusted.
- 18 What then is my reward? that, while I preach the
gospel, I may make the gospel free of charge, so as
not to use to the full my right in the gospel.
- 19 For, free though I was as to all, unto all I made

¹ *i.e.* a Christian wife (*lit.* a sister, a wife). ² *i.e.* Peter. ³ St. Matthew 10¹⁰.

I. CORINTHIANS 9, 10

myself a bondman, that I might win the more.
 Yea, to the Jews I bore myself as a Jew, that Jews 20
 I might win; to them that were under law, as one
 under law (though not myself under law), that
 I might win them that were under law; to them 21
 that were without law, as one without law (though
 not outside the law of God, but under the law of
 Christ), that I might win them that were without
 law. To the weak I showed myself weak, that I 22
 might win the weak; to them all I have become all
 things, that at all events I may save some. But all 23
 things I do for the gospel's sake, that I also may
 have my part therein.

Know ye not that they that run in a racecourse 24
 all indeed run, but one receiveth the prize? Even
 so run that ye may obtain it. But every one who 25
 enters a contest controls himself in all things. Now
 they do it that they may receive a corruptible
 crown; but we an incorruptible. I therefore so 26
 run, as not without purpose; so fight I, as not
 beating the air; but I bruise my body, and bring it 27
 into bondage, lest by any means, after preaching to
 others, I myself should be rejected.

For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant 10
 that our forefathers were all under the cloud, and
 all passed through the sea, and all received baptism 2
 unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; and all ate 3
 the same spiritual food,¹ and all drank the same 4
 spiritual drink; for they drank from a spiritual
 rock which followed them; but that rock was the
 Christ. Yet not with most of them was God 5
 well pleased; for they were laid low in the
 wilderness.

Now these things came to pass as examples to us, 6
 that we should not lust after evil things, even as
 they lusted. Neither become idolaters, even as 7
 some of them became; as indeed it is written, 'The
 people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to
 play.' Neither let us commit fornication, even as 8
 some of them committed, and fell in one day
 twenty-three thousand. Neither let us make trial 9
 of the Lord,² even as some of them made trial, and
 perished by the serpents. Neither murmur ye, like 10

¹ Exodus 16⁴, ²⁰. ² Some MSS., 'the Christ.'

I. CORINTHIANS 10

as some of them murmured, and perished at the hands of the destroyer.

- 11 Now these things happened to them by way of example, but were put on record to admonish us, upon whom the ends of the ages¹ have come.
- 12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. No trial² bath come upon you but such as is common to man; but God may be trusted, and he will not suffer you to be tried³ beyond what ye are able to bear, but with the trial will bring about the outcome that ye are able to endure.
- 14 Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry. As to men of sense I speak; judge you what I say.
- 16 The cup of the blessing, the cup that we bless, is it not fellowship⁴ in the blood of Christ? The bread⁵ that we break, is it not fellowship⁴ in the body of Christ? seeing that there is one bread, we, the many, are one body; for of the one bread we all partake.
- 18 Consider them that are Israel as regards the flesh; they that eat the sacrifices, are they not in fellowship⁴ with the altar? What then do I say? is it that what is sacrificed to idols is anything? or that an idol is anything? Nay, I say that the things they⁶ sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and to what is no god;⁷ but I would not that ye should be in fellowship⁴ with the demons. Ye cannot drink of the Lord's cup and of the cup of demons; ye cannot partake at the Lord's table and at the table of demons. Or would we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?
- 23 All things are lawful, but not all things are expedient; all things are lawful, but not all things edify. Let no one seek his own interest, but each his neighbour's. Any thing that is sold in the meat-market eat, for conscience' sake asking no question; for 'The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof.' If one of the unbelievers invite you, and ye wish to go; eat any thing that is set before you, for conscience' sake asking no question. But if any say to you, 'This was offered in sacrifice,' then, for the sake of him that pointed it out and for conscience' sake, eat not—now by conscience, I mean not one's own, but the other man's—for why is my liberty

¹Cf. Hebrews 9²⁶. ²Or temptation. ³Or tempted. ⁴Or communion. ⁵Or loaf. ⁶Some MSS., 'the Gentiles.' ⁷Deuteronomy 32²¹.

I. CORINTHIANS 10, 11

to be ruled by another man's conscience? If I with 30
 thanksgiving¹ partake, why am I evil spoken of for
 that for which I give thanks? Therefore, whether 31
 ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the
 glory of God. Give not to Jews any occasion of 32
 stumbling, nor to Greeks, nor to the church of God ;
 even as I myself also please all men in all things, 33
 seeking not my own profit, but that of the many,
 that they may be saved. Show yourselves imitators 11
 of me, even as I am of Christ.

Now I commend you, in that ye remember me in 2
 all things, and hold fast the precepts, even as I
 delivered them to you. But I would have you know 3
 that the head of every man is Christ ; but head to a
 woman is the man ; but head to Christ is God.
 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head 4
 covered, dishonoureth his head.² But every woman 5
 praying or prophesying with her head unveiled dis-
 honoureth her head ;³ for it is even all one as if she
 were shaven. For if a woman is not veiled, let her be 6
 shorn. But if it is shameful for a woman to be shorn
 or shaven, let her be veiled. For man indeed ought 7
 not to veil his head, being, as he is, God's image and
 glory, whereas the woman is man's glory (for man 8
 is not from woman, but woman from man ; for, 9
 besides, man was-not created for the woman, but
 woman for the man).⁴ This is why the woman ought 10
 to keep her head under control,⁴ because of the
 angels. Yet neither is there woman without man, nor 11
 man without woman, in the Lord. For even as the
 woman came from the man, so also the man comes 12
 through the woman ; but all things come from God.
 Settle it among yourselves ; is it seemly that a woman 13
 pray to God unveiled? Doth not even nature itself 14
 teach you that if a man has long hair it is a dishonour
 to him ; but that if a woman has long hair it is a glory 15
 to her? because her hair has been given her for a
 covering. But if any one thinks fit to be contentious, 16
 we indeed have no such custom, neither have the
 churches of God.

¹ Or by grace. ² Or him (Christ) who is his head . . . him (her husband) who is her head ; see verse 3. ³ Cf. Genesis 2^{23, 25}. ⁴ Or to have on her head a sign of authority (R.V.). Some make 'authority'—token of her subjection ; others—sign of her divinity ; Wesley, not unhappily, put the simple 'have a veil.'

I. CORINTHIANS 11

17 In the charge I now give, I commend you not ;
 18 in that ye come together, not for the better, but for
 19 the worse. For, first, when you come together in
 church,¹ I hear that there exist divisions among you ;
 20 and to some extent I believe it. For there must be
 heresies among you, that they that are approved
 may be made manifest among you.

20 So then when ye meet together, there is no eating
 21 a Lord's supper ; for each, in the eating, takes his
 own supper first ;² and one is hungry, another is
 22 drunk. What ! have ye not houses for your eating
 and drinking ? or despise ye the church of God,
 and put to shame them that are poor ? What am
 I to say to you ? Am I to commend you ? In this
 I commend you not.

23 For I myself received of the Lord that which
 I in turn delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus,
 in the night in which he was betrayed, took a loaf ;
 24 and having given thanks he broke it, and said, ' This
 is my body, which is³ for you ; do this⁴ in remem-
 25 brance of me.' Likewise the cup also, after they
 had supped, saying, ' This cup is the new covenant
 in my blood ; do this, as often as ye drink it, in
 26 remembrance of me.' For as often as ye eat this
 bread, and drink the cup, ye proclaim the Lord's
 27 death, until he come. Wherefore, whosoever eateth
 the bread or drinketh the cup of the Lord in un-
 worthy manner, will be guilty of the body and the
 28 blood of the Lord. But let a man test himself, and
 so let him eat of the bread and drink of the cup.
 29 For he that eateth and drinketh, eateth and drinketh
 a judgement upon himself, if he judgeth not rightly
 30 of the body. This is why many among you are
 31 weak and sickly, and not a few are falling asleep.⁵
 But if we rightly judged ourselves, we should not be
 32 judged. But when we are judged, we are chastened
 by the Lord, that we may not with the world be
 33 condemned. Wherefore, my brethren, in coming
 34 together for this eating, wait one for another. If
 any is hungry, let him eat at home ; that ye come

¹ Or as a church (but not, in a church). ² Every one takes before other his own supper (A.V.), but what does 'other' mean ? ³ Some MSS. add, 'broken.' ⁴ i.e., continue to do this, go on doing it. ⁵ i.e. die.

I. CORINTHIANS 11, 12

not together unto judgement. But the rest I will set in order as soon as I come.

Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would 12
not have you ignorant. Ye know that when ye 2
were Gentiles, ye were led away unto those dumb
idols, as haply ye might be led. Wherefore I remind 3
you, that no one speaking in the Spirit of God saith,
'Jesus is accursed;'¹ and that no one can say,
'Jesus is Lord,' except in the Holy Spirit. Now 4
there are distributions² of gifts, but the same Spirit;
and there are distributions of services, and the same 5
Lord; and there are distributions of workings, but 6
the same God, who sets them all to work in all. But 7
to each is given the manifestation of the Spirit for
what is profitable. For to one is given, through the 8
Spirit utterance of wisdom; to another, utterance of
knowledge, in accordance with the same Spirit; to 9
some other, in the same Spirit, faith; to another, in
the one Spirit, gifts of healings; to another, work- 10
ings of mighty works;³ to another, prophesying;
to another, discernments of spirits; to some other,
kinds of tongues; to another, interpretation of
tongues. But all these things the one and the same 11
Spirit sets to work, distributing to each severally even
as he willeth.

For even as the body is one, and has many 12
members, yet all the members of the body, many as
they are, are one body; so also is the Christ. For 13
in one Spirit we all were baptized into one body,
whether Jews or Greeks, whether bondmen or free.
And we were all given to drink of one Spirit. For 14
the body is not one member, but many. If the 15
foot should say, 'Because I am not a hand, I belong
not to the body,' that does not prevent its belonging
to the body. And if the ear should say, 'Because 16
I am not an eye, I belong not to the body,' that
does not prevent its belonging to the body. If the 17
whole body were an eye, where would be the
hearing? if the whole were hearing, where would
be the smelling? But, as it is, God set the members, 18
each of them, in the body, even as he willed. Now if 19
they all were one member, where would the body
be? But, as it is, there are many members, yet 20

¹Greek, anathema. ²Diversities (R.V.). ³Miracles (A.V.).

I. CORINTHIANS 12, 13

21 but one body. And the eye cannot say to the hand,
‘I have no need of thee’; nor, again, the head to
22 the feet, ‘I have no need of you.’ Nay, much
rather, the members of the body that are considered
23 to be the feebler are necessary; and what we look
upon as the less honourable parts of the body, these
we clothe with more abundant honour; and our
uncomely parts receive¹ a more abundant comeliness,
24 whereas our comely parts have no need. But God
tempered the body together, giving more abundant
25 honour to that which lacketh, that there should be
no dissension in the body, but that the members
26 should have the same care one for another. And
whether one member suffers, all the members suffer
together; or a member is honoured, all the members
27 rejoice together. Now you are the body of Christ,
28 and severally members thereof. And God set some
in the church—first, apostles; secondly, prophets;
thirdly, teachers; then mighty works,² then gifts of
29 healings, services of help, powers of government,
kinds of tongues. Are all apostles? are all prophets?
are all teachers? are all workers of mighty works?³
30 have all gifts of healings? do all speak in tongues?
do all interpret?

31 But desire earnestly the greatest gifts; and more-
over I show you a most excellent way:—

13 Though I should speak in the tongues of men and
of angels, yet if I have not love, I have become
2 sounding copper or a clanging cymbal. And though
I should have the gift of prophecy, and know all
secrets and all knowledge; and though I should
have all faith, so as to remove mountains; yet if I
3 have not love, I am nothing. And though I should
bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though
I should give up my body to be burnt,⁴ yet if I have
not love, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Love is long-suffering, is kind; love envieth not;
5 love is not puffed up, vaunteth not itself, doth not
behave unbecomingly, seeketh not its own, is not
6 provoked, beareth no malice;⁵ rejoiceth not over

¹The Greek word for ‘have’ may get from context the meaning ‘receive,’ ‘take’; as the English word does in phrases like ‘Let him have it,’ ‘I had your money’ (Genesis 43²²). ²Miracles (A.V.). ³Some MSS., ‘that I may glory’ (the Greek words differ in one letter). ⁴Lit. reckoneth (registers) not the evil.

I. CORINTHIANS 13, 14

unrighteousness, but rejoiceth with the truth ;
 beareth¹ all things, believeth all things, hopeth 7
 all things, endureth all things.

Love never faileth ; but be there prophecies, 8
 they will be done away ; or tongues, they will
 cease ; or knowledge, it will be done away. For 9
 we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But 10
 when that which is perfect has come, that which
 is in part will be done away. When I was a child, 11
 I spoke as a child, I thought as a child, I reasoned
 as a child ; now that I have become a man, I have
 put away childish things. For now we see by a 12
 mirror,² in a riddle,³ but then face to face ; now
 I know in part, but then I shall know, even as also
 I was known. But, even so, there abideth⁴ faith, 13
 hope, love, these three ; but greatest of these is love.

Follow after love ; yet desire earnestly spiritual 14
 gifts, but still more that ye may prophesy. For 2
 he that speaketh in a tongue speaketh not to men,
 but to God ; for no one understandeth ; but in
 spirit he utters secrets. But he that prophesieth 3
 speaketh unto men edification, and encouragement,
 and consolation. He that speaketh in a tongue 4
 edifieth himself ; but he that prophesieth edifieth
 a church.⁵ Now I should like you all to speak in 5
 tongues,⁶ but still more that ye should prophesy ;
 and greater is he that prophesieth than he that
 speaketh in tongues, unless he interpret, that the
 church⁶ may receive edification.

But, in fact, brethren, if I should come unto you 6
 speaking in tongues, what shall I profit you, unless
 I speak to you in the way of a revelation, or of
 knowledge, or of prophesying or instruction ? Even 7
 things without life, giving voice, whether pipe or
 harp, unless they give a distinction in the sounds,
 how shall it be known what is piped or what is
 harped ? For if the trumpet give an uncertain voice, 8
 who will make ready for battle ? So also with you ; 9
 unless by the tongue ye utter intelligible speech, how
 shall it be known what is spoken ? for ye will be
 speaking into the air. There are, it may be, so many 10

¹ Or keepeth close. ² Made of bronze ; see 'unspotted mirror' ;
 Wisdom 7³⁰. ³ Darkly (A.V.). Cf. Haeckel's 'The Riddle of the
 Universe.' ⁴ On the grammar, see Gould Brown's *Grammar of English
 Grammars*, p. 594 ; and the note in *Speaker's Commentary*. ⁵ Or con-
 gregation. ⁶ See Appendix VI.

I. CORINTHIANS 14

kinds of voices in the world, and nothing is without
11 voice ;¹ if then I know not the meaning of the voice,
I shall be to the speaker a foreigner,² and the speaker
12 will be a foreigner as to me. So also with you ;
inasmuch as ye are earnestly desirous of spiritual
gifts,³ seek that ye may abound unto the edifying of
13 the church. Wherefore let him that speaketh in a
14 tongue pray that he may interpret. For if I pray
in a tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding
15 is unfruitful. How stands it then? I will pray with
the spirit, but I will pray with the understanding
also ; I will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with
16 the understanding also. Else, if thou bless God
with the spirit, how shall he, that is in the position
of one without the gift,⁴ say the Amen after thy
thanksgiving, seeing that he knoweth not what thou
17 sayest? For thou, indeed, givest thanks excellently,
18 but thy neighbour is not edified. I thank God, that
19 more than you all I speak in tongues ; yet in church⁵
I would rather speak five words with my under-
standing, that I may also instruct others, than ten
thousand words in a tongue.

20 Brethren, show not yourselves children in mind ;
yet in malice be infants, but in mind show yourselves
21 full-grown men. In the law it is written, ' By men
of strange speech and by lips of strangers I will
speak to this people, and not even so will they
22 hearken unto me, saith the Lord.'⁶ Wherefore the
tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe,
but to the unbelievers ; but the prophesying is for a
sign, not to the unbelievers, but to them that believe.

23 Therefore if the whole church meet together, and,
while all are speaking in tongues, there should come
in men without the gift, or unbelievers, will they not
24 say that ye are mad? whereas if, while all are
prophesying, there should come in an unbeliever, or
one without the gift, he is convicted by all, he is
25 examined by all ; what is hidden in his heart becomes
manifest ; and so, falling on his face, he will worship
God, declaring that of a truth God is among you.

¹ And none of them is without signification (A.V.) ; but ' nihil sine voce est,' Vulgate ; and see Addison's hymn ' The spacious firmament on high,' and the 19th Psalm. ² *Lit.* barbarian. ³ *Lit.* spirits. ⁴ Or the unlearned ; *lit.* the idiots, the private unprofessional layman ; Acts 4¹⁸ ; 2 Corinthians 11¹⁶. ⁵ Or in congregation (' church ' in N.T. never means a building). ⁶ Isaiah 28¹¹.

I. CORINTHIANS 14, 15

How stands it then, brethren? Whenever ye 26
 come together, each is ready with a psalm, an
 instruction, a revelation, a tongue, an interpretation.
 Let all things be done unto edification. If any one 27
 speaks in a tongue, let it be by twos, or at the most
 threes, and that sharing alike; and let one interpret.
 But if there is no interpreter, let him keep silence 28
 in church; yet he may speak to himself, and to God.
 But prophets—let two or three speak, and let the 29
 others act as judges. But if a revelation be made to
 another sitting by, let the first be silent. For ye all 30
 can prophesy, one by one, that all may learn and all
 may be comforted. And spirits of prophets are 31
 subject to prophets; for God is a God, not of
 disorder, but of peace. 32 33

As in all the churches of the saints, let the women 34
 be silent in the assemblies;¹ for it is not permitted
 them to speak; but let them be in subjection, as the
 law also saith.² But if they wish to learn any thing, 35
 let them ask their husbands at home; for it is
 shameful for a woman to speak in church. What! 36
 was it from you that the word of God went forth?
 or was it unto you only that it reached?³

If any thinketh that he is a prophet, or spiritual, let 37
 him recognise that the things I am writing to you
 are the Lord's commandment. But if any is ignorant, 38
 he is ignored.⁴ So then, my brethren, desire 39
 earnestly the gift of prophesying; and the gift of
 speaking in tongues, hinder it not. Only let all 40
 things be done becomingly and in order.

Now concerning the gospel that I preached to 15
 you, which also ye received, wherein also ye stand,
 through which also ye are saved, if ye hold it 2
 fast—unless without ground ye became believers—
 I would remind you, brethren, in what terms I
 preached it to you. For I delivered to you, first of 3
 all, that which I also received, that 'Christ died for'
 our sins according to the scriptures,' and that 'he was 4
 buried,' and that 'he hath risen (it was on the third
 day) according to the scriptures'; and that 'he 5
 appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve.' Afterwards 6

¹ Or meetings, congregations; *ll.* churches. ² Genesis 3⁷. ³ This section (verses 34-6) would come more naturally after 11¹⁶. ⁴ Some MSS., 'If any one is ignorant, let him remain ignorant.' ⁵ Or on account of.

I CORINTHIANS 15

he appeared to more than five hundred brethren at
 one time, of whom the greater part are with us until
 7 now ; but some have fallen asleep. Afterwards he
 8 appeared to James, then to all the apostles. Last of
 all, as it were also to the one untimely born, he
 9 appeared to me. For I am the least of the apostles ; I
 who am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I
 10 persecuted the church of God. But by the grace of
 God I am what I am ; and his grace which was
 bestowed upon me was not found fruitless ; but more
 abundantly than they all I laboured ; yet it was not I,
 11 but the grace of God labouring with me. Whether
 then it is I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.
 12 Now if Christ is preached that he hath risen from
 the dead, how say some among you that there is no
 13 resurrection of the dead ? But if there is no resur-
 rection of the dead, not even Christ hath risen ;
 14 but if Christ hath not risen, vain indeed is our
 15 preaching, vain too is your¹ faith. Yea, and we are
 found false witnesses as to God, in that we bore
 witness against God that he raised the Christ ;
 whom he raised not, if so be that the dead rise not.
 16 For if the dead rise not, not even Christ hath risen.
 17 But if Christ hath not risen, to no purpose is your
 18 faith ; ye are yet in your sins. In that case they
 19 also that fell asleep in Christ perished. If simply
 we have had hope in Christ in this life, we are of
 all men the most to be pitied.
 20 But, as it is, Christ hath risen from the dead, first-
 21 fruit of them that have fallen asleep. For since
 through man came death, through man came also
 22 the resurrection of the dead. For even as in Adam²
 23 all die, so also in Christ² all will be made alive ;
 but each in his proper rank, Christ as first-fruit,
 afterwards they that are Christ's at his coming.
 24 Then cometh the end, when he shall deliver the
 kingdom unto the God and Father ; when he shall
 have done away with every sovereignty and every
 25 authority and power. For he must still be king until
 26 he hath put all his enemies under his feet. The last
 27 enemy that is done away is death. For ' He put all
 things into subjection under his feet ' ; but when he
 shall have said, ' All things have been brought into

¹ Some MSS., 'our.' ² *Lit.* the Adam, the Christ.

I. CORINTHIANS 15

subjection,¹ it is evident that he is excepted that subjected all things unto him. But, when all things have been made subject unto him, then will also the Son himself be made subject unto him that subjected all things unto him ; that God may be all in all.¹ 28

Else what shall they do who are baptized for² the dead? If the dead rise not at all, why then are they baptized for them? And we, why stand we in jeopardy every hour? Daily I die ; I affirm it by the glorying in you, brethren, that I have in Christ Jesus our Lord. If, as a mere man, I fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, what doth it profit me? If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die.³ Be not deceived ; evil companionships corrupt good morals. Wake up sober in a right spirit, and sin not ; for some have no knowledge of God. To shame you I speak. 29
30
31
32
33
34

But some one will say, How do the dead rise? yea, with what kind of body do they come? 35

Foolish one ! that which thou thyself sowest is not brought to life unless it die ; and as for that which thou sowest, thou sowest not the body that shall be, but a bare grain, of wheat it may be, or of something else. But God giveth it a body even as he willed, and to each of the seeds a body of its own. Not all flesh is the same flesh ; but there is one flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another flesh of birds, another of fishes. There are heavenly bodies and also earthly bodies ; but of one kind is the glory of the heavenly, of another kind the glory of the earthly. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars ; for star differeth from star in glory. 36
37
38
39
40
41

So also with the resurrection of the dead ; there is a sowing⁴ in corruption, a rising in incorruption ; a sowing in dishonour, a rising in glory ; a sowing in weakness, a rising in power ; there is sown a natural⁵ body, there rises a spiritual body. If there is a natural⁶ body, there is also a spiritual body. So also 42
43
44
45

¹ Omnia (adeoque omnes) dicent ; Deus est mihi omnia (Bengel) ; Cf. Colossians 3¹¹. ² Or on account of. The explanation of this passage remains with its writer. ³ Isaiah 22¹³. ⁴ Often taken as the sowing of the corpse in the ground ; but better taken to mean our coming into and our life in the world. ⁵ Or animal ; *lit.* psychical (fit for the psyche or soul).

I. CORINTHIANS 15, 16

it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul.' The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.
46 Yet not the spiritual, but the natural, is first; after-
47 wards comes the spiritual. The first man was out
of earth, earthy;¹ the second man was out of heaven.
48 As was the earthy,¹ such are they also that are
earthy;¹ and as is the heavenly, such are they also
49 that are heavenly. And even as we have borne² the
image of the earthy, we are to² bear also the image
of the heavenly.
50 But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood can-
not obtain any part in the kingdom of God, neither
51 hath corruption any part in incorruption. Behold,
I tell you a secret; we shall not all fall asleep, but
52 we shall all be changed,³ in a moment, in the twink-
ling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet
will sound, and the dead will rise incorruptible, and
53 we also shall be changed. For this corruptible must
put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on
54 immortality. But when this corruptible shall have
put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put
on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying
that is written, 'Death is swallowed up into
55 victory.' Where, Death, is thy victory? where,
56 Death, thy sting? Now the sting of death is sin;
57 but the strength of sin is the law.⁴ But thanks
be to God, who giveth us the victory through our
58 Lord Jesus Christ! Wherefore, my beloved brethren,
show yourselves steadfast, immovable, always
abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that
your labour is not without fruit in the Lord.

16 Concerning the collection for the saints; even
as I arranged for the churches of Galatia, so do
2 you also. On the first day of the week, let each of
you lay by him, treasuring up, according as he may
prosper; so that, when I come, collections may not
3 then be made. But when I arrive, whomsoever ye
may approve by letters, them I will send to take your
4 gift to Jerusalem; but if it be important enough
for me also to go, they shall go with me.
5 But I shall come unto you, when I have gone

¹ *Lit.* made of dust, mould; Genesis 2^v. ² Some MSS., 'we shall.'
³ *Omnes quidem resurgemus sed non omnes immutabimur (Vulgate).*
⁴ The law gives sin its meaning and power; Romans 7⁷⁻¹², and 3²⁰.

I. CORINTHIANS 16

through Macedonia (for I mean to go through Macedonia); but with you I shall perhaps make some stay, or even winter, that you may send me on whithersoever I may go. For I do not wish to see you just now in passing by; for I hope to stay some time with you, if the Lord permit. But I shall stay on in Ephesus until Pentecost; for a door has been opened to me, great and effective; and there are many adversaries.

If Timothy should come, see that he be with you without fear; for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do. Therefore let no one despise him; but send him forward in peace, that he may come unto me; for I am expecting him with the brethren.¹ But as touching Apollos, the brother, I earnestly exhorted him to go unto you with the brethren; and he was by no means willing to go at present,² but he will go when he is at leisure.

Watch, stand fast in the faith, act like men, grow in strength; let all that you do be done in love.

Now I exhort you, brethren (ye know the household of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruit of Achaia, and that they set themselves to minister unto the saints), I exhort you also to be in subjection unto such, and unto every one who helpeth in the work and laboureth.

I rejoice at the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus; for, what was lacking on your part, they supplied.³ For they refreshed my spirit and yours; acknowledge therefore such men.

The churches of the province of Asia⁴ salute you. Aquila and Prisca,⁵ together with the church that meets at their house, salute you heartily in the Lord. All the brethren salute you. Salute one another with a holy kiss.

The salutation of me Paul by my own hand. If any one loves not the Lord, let him be accursed.⁶ Come, O Lord.⁷

The grace of the Lord Jesus be with you. My love is with you all in Christ Jesus.

¹ Or I with the brethren am expecting him. ² Or it was not God's will that he should go now. ³ Cf. Philippians 2²⁹ reference to companionship, not material help. ⁴ See note to Acts 2⁹. ⁵ Priscilla, in Acts 18², etc. ⁶ Lit. anathema. ⁷ Lit. Maranatha.

THE SECOND LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

1 Paul, apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of
God ; Paul and Timothy the brother, to the church
of God that is in Corinth, together with all the saints
2 that are in the whole of Achaia ; Grace be to you and
peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus
Christ, the Father of all mercies and God of all
4 comfort ; who comforteth us in all our affliction,
that we, through the comfort wherewith we our-
selves are comforted by God, may be able to comfort
5 such as are in any affliction. For as the sufferings
of Christ abound unto us, even so through Christ
6 our comfort also aboundeth. But whether we are
afflicted, it is for your comfort and salvation ; or
whether we are comforted, it is for your comfort,
which worketh in endurance of the same sufferings
7 as we also suffer. And our hope is sure concerning
you, because we know that, as ye have fellowship
in the sufferings, so ye have also in the comfort.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant
concerning our affliction, which came upon us in the
province of Asia,¹ that we were exceedingly bur-
dened, above our strength, so that we despaired even
9 of life. Yea, we ourselves have had within ourselves
the sentence Death ; that we might not trust in
10 ourselves, but in God who raiseth the dead ; who
out of so great a death delivered us, and will deliver ;
11 on whom we have set our hope that he will also still
deliver us ; you also helping together on our behalf
by your supplication, that from many persons thanks
may be given on our behalf for the gift² bestowed
upon us by means of many.

¹ See note to Acts 2^o. ² Gift of grace.

II. CORINTHIANS 1, 2

For our glorying is this, the testimony of our 12
 conscience, that in holiness and godly sincerity, not
 in fleshly wisdom, but in the grace of God, we have
 behaved ourselves in the world, but more abund-
 antly in respect of you. For we are writing no 13
 other things to you than what ye read, or even
 acknowledge (yea, I hope that to the end ye will
 acknowledge them), as also ye in some degree ac- 14
 knowledged us, that we are your ground of glorying,
 even as you are ours, in the day of our Lord Jesus.

And in this confidence I was wishing to come first¹ 15
 unto you, that ye might receive a second benefit,²
 and through you to pass on unto Macedonia, and 16
 from Macedonia to come back to you, and by you
 to be sent forward on my way to Judæa. This 17
 then being my wish, did I at all act with fickleness?
 or what I purpose, do I purpose it from worldly
 motive, that I should have at command both 'Yea,
 yea' and 'Nay, nay'? But God may be trusted, 18
 in that our word unto you is not Yea and Nay.³
 For God's Son, Christ Jesus, who was preached 19
 among you through us, through me and Silvanus⁴
 and Timothy, was never Yea and Nay, but in
 him there is always Yea. For however many are 20
 the promises of God, in him is the Yea;⁵ where-
 fore also through him is the Amen,⁶ for glory
 unto God through us. Now he that confirmeth 21
 us with you unto Christ, and anointed us, is God;
 who also sealed us, and gave the Spirit as an earnest 22
 into our hearts.

But as for me, I call God as a witness upon my 23
 soul, that, to spare you, I came no more to Corinth.
 Not that we have lordship over your faith, but we 24
 are helpers of your joy; for in your faith ye stand.
 But I determined this for myself, that I would not 2
 come to you again in sorrow. For if I make you 2
 sorry, who then is there to make me glad but he that
 is made sorry by me? And I wrote to this effect, 3
 that I might not in coming be brought to sorrow by
 those who should bring me joy; for I have confi-
 dence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

¹ *Lit.* previously (before going to Macedonia). ² Some MSS., 'joy.'
³ *i. e.*, is not vacillating. ⁴ Called Silas in Acts, Silvanus in Epistles.
⁵ The promise. ⁶ The ratification.

II. CORINTHIANS 2, 3

- 4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote to you with many tears ; not that ye should be made sorry, but that ye might know the love that I have more abundantly unto you.
- 5 Now if any one hath caused sorrow, not to me hath he caused it, but in some degree (that I press not too heavily) to you all. Sufficient for such a one is this punishment,¹ inflicted by the majority ;
- 7 so that on the contrary ye should rather forgive and comfort him, lest by any means such a one should be overwhelmed by his excessive sorrow. Wherefore
- 9 I exhort you to assure him of love. For to this very purpose also I wrote, that I might know how ye stand the test, whether in all respects ye are obedient. But whom ye forgive in any matter, I also forgive ; for indeed what I have forgiven, if I have forgiven anything, for your sakes I did it in the presence of Christ ; that no advantage may be gained over us by Satan ; for we are not ignorant of his devices.
- 12 Now when I went to Troas about the gospel of Christ, and a door stood open unto me in the Lord,
- 13 I had no relief for my spirit because I did not find Titus, my brother ; but, bidding them farewell, I went forth unto Macedonia.
- 14 Thanks be to God who at all times leadeth us in triumph² in Christ, and maketh manifest through us in all places the savour of the knowledge of him ;
- 15 that we are a sweet odour of Christ unto God, in them that are saved, and in them that perish ;
- 16 to the latter a savour from death unto death, to the former a savour from life unto life. And who is sufficient for these things?³ We indeed are not, as are the many, making merchandise of the word of God ; but guided by sincerity, guided by God, in the sight of God, in Christ we speak.
- 3 Are we beginning again to commend ourselves ? or need we, as some do, letters of commendation to you or from you ?
- 2 You are our letter, inscribed in our hearts, known
- 3 and read by all men ; manifestly declared that ye are a letter of Christ, a letter ministered by us, inscribed, not with ink, but with the Spirit of a living God ;

¹ Or rebuke. ² As his fellow-soldiers ; causeth us to triumph (A.V.) ; cf. Colossians 2¹². ³ Cf. 12⁹.

II. CORINTHIANS 3, 4

not on tablets of stone, but on tablets that are hearts of flesh. And confidence such as this we have through Christ towards God; not that of ourselves we are sufficient as from ourselves to form any judgement; but our sufficiency is from God, who also made us sufficient as ministers of a new covenant, not of written law, but of spirit; for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

Now if the ministration that brings death, written, engraved on stones, came in glory, so that the children of Israel, because of the glory of Moses' face (which glory was being done away), could not gaze upon his face, how shall not rather the ministration that brings the Spirit be in glory! For if the ministration that brought condemnation was¹ glory, much rather doth the ministration that brings righteousness abound with glory! For verily, looking to that exceeding glory, what hath been glorified hath in this respect had² no glory. For if that which was being done away came with glory, much more that which abideth is in glory.

Therefore, having such a hope, we use great boldness of speech; and are not as Moses, who used to put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel might not gaze upon the end of that which was being done away. But their minds were blinded; for until this very day at the reading of the Old Covenant,³ there remaineth the same veil, unlifted; because in Christ it is done away.⁴ But unto this day, whensoever Moses is read, a veil lieth over their hearts. But whensoever they shall turn to the Lord, the veil is taken away. Now the Lord is the Spirit; but where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. But we all, with face unveiled receiving as on a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transfigured into the same image from glory unto glory, even as the Lord the Spirit gives.

This is why, having this ministry, even as we obtained mercy we lose not heart, but have renounced the hidden things of shame, not walking in craftiness, nor corrupting the word of God, but by the manifestation of the truth commending ourselves

¹ Some MSS., 'had.' ² Or Old Testament. ³ Or veil, it not being revealed that in Christ it is done away.

II. CORINTHIANS 4, 5

3 to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But,
even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled in them that
4 are perishing; in whom the god of this age hath
blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that the
illumination of the gospel of the glory of the Christ,
who is the image of God, should not dawn upon
5 them. For we preach, not ourselves, but Christ Jesus
as Lord, and ourselves as your bondmen¹ for Jesus'
6 sake; because God who said, 'Out of darkness
light shall shine,' is he that shone in our hearts,
unto the illumination of the knowledge of the glory
of God in the face of Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that
the exceeding greatness of the power may be God's,
8 and not from ourselves; pressed as we are on every
side, yet not hemmed in; at a loss, yet not lost
9 utterly; persecuted, yet not forsaken; struck down,
10 yet not destroyed; at all times bearing about in
the body the dying of Jesus, that the life also of
11 Jesus may be made manifest in our bodies. For con-
stantly we, the living, are delivered unto death for
Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus may be made
12 manifest in our mortal flesh. So then death worketh
13 in us, but life in you. But having the same spirit
of faith, according to that which is written, 'I
had faith, and therefore I spoke,' we also have
14 faith, and therefore also we speak; knowing that
he that raised the Lord Jesus will raise us also with
15 Jesus, and will present us together with you. For all
things are for your sakes, that the grace, being made
more, on account of the thanksgiving of the more,
may abound to the glory of God.²

16 Wherefore we lose not heart; but though our
outward man is perishing, yet our inner man is
17 renewed day by day. For our light affliction, which
is but for a moment, worketh out for us more and
more beyond measure an eternal weight of glory;
18 looking, as we do, not at the things that are seen,
but at the things that are not seen; for the things
that are seen last for a while, but the things that
5 are not seen are eternal.³ For we know that if our

¹ Servants (A.V.). ² Or that the grace, being multiplied, through the greater number, may make the thanksgiving abundant to the glory of God. ³ May we assume that what is unseen is always in the same state, but what is seen is never so? This also we may assume. Plato, *Phaedo*, p. 79, chap. 26.

II. CORINTHIANS 5

earthly tabernacle-house be taken down, we have a building from God, a house not made by hands, eternal, in the heavens. For truly in this we groan, longing to put on over us our habitation,¹ the one from heaven ; if so be that, having put it on, we shall not be found naked. For truly we that are in this tabernacle groan, being burdened, seeing that it is not our wish to put off from us, but to put on over us ; that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. But he that wrought us out for this very thing is God, who gave to us the Spirit as an earnest. Being therefore at all times of good courage, and knowing that, while we are at home in the body, we are from home, away from the Lord (for we walk by faith, not by what is seen), we are of good courage, I say, and well pleased rather to go from home out of the body, and to reach home unto the Lord. Wherefore also we endeavour, whether at home or away from home, to be acceptable unto him. For we must all be made manifest before the judgement-seat of Christ ; that each may get back the things done through the body, according to what he did, whether good or ill.

Therefore, bearing in mind the fear of the Lord, we persuade men, but to God we stand manifest ; yea, I hope that in your consciences also we stand manifest. We are not again commending ourselves to you, but are giving you occasion of glorying on our behalf, that ye may have an answer for them that glory in appearance, and not in heart. For whether we are beside ourselves, it is for God ; or whether we are in our right mind, it is for you. For the love of Christ constraineth us, once we have formed this judgement, that one died for all, therefore they all died ; and he died for all, that they that live should live no longer unto themselves, but unto him who for their sakes died and rose. Wherefore we henceforth know no one according to the flesh ; yea, though we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet now we know him so no longer.

Wherefore if any one is in Christ, there is a new creation ; the old things passed away ; behold, they have become new. But it is all from God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave to

¹ The spiritual body.

II. CORINTHIANS 5, 6

- 19 us the ministry of the reconciliation, namely, that God in Christ was reconciling the world to himself, not reckoning to them their trespasses, and having committed unto us the message of the reconciliation:
- 20 On Christ's behalf, therefore, we are ambassadors, as if God were exhorting through us; we beseech you on Christ's behalf, become reconciled to God.
- 21 Him that knew no sin he made to be sin¹ on our behalf; that we might become God's righteousness
- 6 in him. But working together with him we exhort also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain
- 2 (for he saith,
- ' At an acceptable season I hearkened unto thee,
And in a day of salvation I succoured thee ' ;
behold, now is the right acceptable season; behold,
- 3 now is the day of salvation); giving as we do, no occasion of stumbling in anything, that the ministry
- 4 be not blamed; but in everything as ministers of God commending ourselves, in much steadfastness,
- 5 in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; in purity, in knowledge, in long-suffering, in kindness, in a spirit that is holy, in love
- 7 unfeigned, in the utterance of truth, in the power of God; by the weapons of righteousness for the
- 8 right hand and for the left; through glory and dishonour, through evil report and good report; as
- 9 deceivers, and yet true; as unknown, and yet becoming well known; as dying, and behold, we
- 10 live; as chastened, and not done to death; as sorrowing, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and possessing all things.
- 11 Corinthians! we have spoken freely to you; our
- 12 heart is enlarged. Ye are not constrained in us;
- 13 but ye are constrained in your own affections. Now for a recompense in like kind (I speak as to children), be you also enlarged.
- 14 (Yoke not yourselves unequally with unbelievers; for what fellowship have righteousness and iniquity?²
- 15 or what communion hath light with darkness? yea, what concord is there of Christ with Belial?³ or what
- 16 hath a believer in common with an unbeliever? yea, what agreement hath God's sanctuary with idols?

¹ Treated as a sinner (Wesley). ² Or lawlessness. ³—wickedness (personified).

II. CORINTHIANS 6, 7

for we are the sanctuary of a living God, even as God said,

‘I will dwell in them, and will walk among them ;
And I will be their God, and they shall be my people.’

Wherefore, 17

‘Come out from among them,
And be separated, saith the Lord ;
And handle not an unclean thing ;
And I will welcome you,
And will be to you for Father, 18
And you shall be to me for sons and daughters,
Saith the Lord Almighty.’¹

These then being the promises we have, let us, beloved, cleanse ourselves from every pollution of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.² 7

Make room for us ; no one did we wrong, no one did we corrupt, of no one did we take advantage. Not to condemn you do I say it ; for I have said before, that ye are in our hearts to die together and to live together. Great is my confidence in respect of you, great my glorying on your account ; I have been filled with comfort, I am overflowing with joy, under all our affliction. For, even when we had gone into Macedonia, our flesh had no relief, afflicted as we were on every side ; fightings without, fears within. Yet he that comforteth the lowly, even God, comforted us, by the coming of Titus ; yet not by his coming only, but also by the comfort wherewith he was comforted in you, in telling us of your longing, your mourning, your zeal on my behalf ; so that I rejoiced yet more. For though I made you sorry by my letter, I do not regret it ; though I did regret it (I see that that letter, though only for a while, made you sorry), I now rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye were made sorry unto repentance ; for ye were made sorry in godly sort, that in nothing ye might suffer loss at our hands. For godly sorrow worketh repentance unto salvation, repentance never to be regretted ; but the sorrow of the world worketh out death. 10

¹ Or Ruler of all. ² The passage 6^{14-7²} seems to be inserted accidentally, breaking the connection of 6¹² with 7⁶. It may be a fragment of another letter, or have been lost from end of 1 Corinthians 5.

II. CORINTHIANS 7, 8

11 For behold, the very fact of being made sorry in godly sort, what earnestness it wrought out for you ! what clearing of yourselves ! what indignation ! what fear ! what longing ! what zeal ! what avenging ! In every thing ye approved yourselves to be pure in the matter.

12 So then, though I wrote to you, it was not for the sake of him that did the wrong, nor for the sake of him that suffered the wrong, but that your earnestness on our behalf might be made manifest to yourselves, in the sight of God. This is why we have been comforted ; but besides our own comfort, we rejoiced the more exceedingly for the joy of Titus, because his spirit has been refreshed by you all.

13

14 For if in any thing I have gloried to him on your account, I was not put to shame ; but as we spoke all things to you in truth, so also the glorying we made before Titus was found to be truth. And his affection is more abundantly turned towards you, remembering, as he doth, the obedience of you all,

15

16 how with fear and trembling ye welcomed him. I rejoice that in every thing I am of good courage concerning you.

8 But, brethren, we would remind you of the grace of God, the grace given in the churches of Macedonia ; that in much testing by affliction the overflowing of their joy, and their depth of poverty, overflowed unto the riches of their liberality. For, according to their means, I bear witness, and beyond their means, they gave of their own accord, with much entreaty beseeching us in regard to this grace, and the contribution¹ towards the ministering to the saints ;² and this not merely as we expected, but their very selves first they gave to the Lord and to us, through the will of God ; so that we exhorted Titus, that, as he had already begun, so too he would complete, as regards yourselves, this grace also. But even as ye abound in everything, in faith and utterance and knowledge and all earnestness and in our love to you,³ see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 Not by way of command am I speaking but to test, through the earnestness of others, the sincerity

¹ Or beseeching us for the favour of contributing. ² On chapters 8, 9, see I Corinthians 16 ²⁻⁴. ³ Some MSS., 'your love to us.'

II. CORINTHIANS 8

of your love also. (For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that for your sakes he became poor, rich though he was, that you by his poverty might become rich.) Yea, in this I am giving an opinion ; for this is expedient for you, seeing that ye began already, last year, not only to do, but also to have the will. But now complete the doing also ; that, even as there was the readiness to will, so there may be the completion also, in proportion to your ability. For if the readiness is there, it is acceptable according to what it may have, not according to what it hath not. For the object is, not that others should be relieved, and you distressed ; but that, by the rule of equality, at the present season your abundance may meet their want, in order that their abundance in turn may meet your want, so that there may be brought about equality ; even as it is written,

‘ He with the much had not more ;
And he with the little had not less.’¹

But thanks be to God, who giveth the same earnestness on your behalf into the heart of Titus, in that he welcomed our exhortation ; but, being himself deeply in earnest, of his own accord he is setting forth unto you. And together with him we are sending the brother,² whose praise in the gospel is spread through all the churches ; (and not this only, but who was also appointed by the churches as our fellow-traveller in the matter of this grace, which is being administered by us, to set forth the glory of the Lord himself, and our own readiness); avoiding this, that any one should blame us in the matter of this bounty which is being administered by us. For we take thought for what is honourable, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men. And with them we are sending our brother,³ whom we have many times in many matters proved to be in earnest, but on this occasion much more in earnest, because of his much confidence as regards you. As for Titus, he is my partner and fellow-worker as regards you ; or as for our brethren, they are delegates⁴ of churches, a glory to Christ. Make clear therefore unto them, in the face of the

¹ Exodus 16^{17, 26}. ² Cannot be identified. ³ *Lit.* apostles (men sent).

II. CORINTHIANS 8, 9

churches, the evidence of your love and of our glorying on your account.

9 For concerning the ministering to the saints, it is
2 superfluous for me to write to you ; for I know your
readiness, whereof I glory on your account to the
Macedonians, that Achaia hath been prepared since
last year ; and your zeal stirred up the most of
3 them. Yet I am sending the brethren, that our
glorying on your account may not in this respect
be made void ; that ye may be prepared, even as I
4 said ye were ; lest by any means, if any Macedonians
come with me and find you unprepared, we (not to
say you) should be put to shame as regards this
5 confidence. I thought it necessary, therefore, to
exhort the brethren, that they would go in advance
to you and make up beforehand your previously
promised bounty ;¹ that the same might be ready
as a matter of bounty, and not of covetousness.

6 As to this, he that soweth sparingly, sparingly
he will also reap ; and he that soweth bountifully,²
7 bountifully he will also reap ; each according as
he hath determined in his heart, not grudgingly,
nor of constraint ; for God loveth a cheerful giver.
8 But God is able to make all grace abound unto
you ; that ye, having in all things at all times all
sufficiency, may abound unto all good works, even
9 as it is written.

‘ He scattered, he gave to the needy ;

His righteousness abideth for ever.’³

10 Now he that supplieth seed to the sower, and bread
for eating, will supply and will multiply the seed
you sow, and will increase the fruits of your right-
11 eousness, ye being enriched in all things unto all
liberality, such as worketh out through us thanks-
12 giving unto God ; in that the ministration of this
service is not only fully supplying the wants of
the saints, but abounding also through many
13 thanksgivings unto God ; seeing that, through the
testing of this ministration, they glorify God for the
submission of your confession unto the gospel of
Christ, and for the liberality of your contribution
14 to them and to all ; they themselves also, with
supplication on your behalf, longing after you by

¹ *Lit.* blessing. ² *Lit.* unto blessings. ³ Psalm 112 °.

II. CORINTHIANS 9, 10

reason of the exceeding grace of God upon you.
Thanks be to God for his unspeakable gift. 15

Now I, Paul, myself exhort you by the gentleness 10
and kindness of Christ, I who to your face am
lowly among you, but when absent am of good
courage towards you ; yea, I beseech you that I may 2
not, when present, have to show courage with the
confidence wherewith I think of being bold against
some, who think of us as if we walked according
to the flesh. For though we walk in the flesh, we 3
war not according to the flesh (for the weapons of our 4
warfare are not fleshly, but are mighty for God
to the pulling down of strongholds) ; seeing that we 5
pull down reasonings, and every height that is
lifted up against the knowledge of God, and bring
every device into captivity, into obedience to the
Christ, and are ready to take vengeance on all 6
disobedience, whenever your obedience shall be
made complete.

Look at what lies plainly before you. If any one 7
trusteth in himself that he is Christ's, let him by
himself further think this, that, even as he is
Christ's, so also are we. For even if I should glory 8
somewhat more abundantly as to our authority,
(which the Lord gave for building you up, and not
for pulling you down), I shall not be put to shame ;
that I may not seem as if I would terrify you by 9
my letters. For, ' His letters (saith one) are weighty 10
and strong, but his bodily presence is weak, and his
speech of no account.' Let such a one consider this, 11
that, what we are in word, by letters when we are
absent, such also, when present, are we in deed.

For we make not bold to pair or compare ourselves 12
with some of them that commend themselves ; but
they, measuring themselves by themselves, and
comparing themselves with themselves, are without
understanding. We, however, will not glory beyond 13
our measure, but in proportion to the measure of the
sphere that God apportioned to us as a measure, to
reach even as far as to you. For we are not over- 14
stretching ourselves, as if we reached not unto you ;
for we advanced even as far as to you¹ with the gospel

¹ Or were the first to come to you.

II. CORINTHIANS 10, 11

- 15 of the Christ ; not glorying beyond our measure, in other men's labours, but hoping that, as your faith groweth, we shall be magnified in you within
 16 our sphere, unto overflowing ; so that we may preach the gospel to the regions beyond you, and not glory in another man's sphere in respect of things
 17 ready to our hand. But, ' he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.' For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but he whom the Lord commendeth.
 11 Would that ye could bear with me in a little folly !
 2 but indeed ye do bear with me.¹ For I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy ; for I betrothed you to one husband, to present a pure virgin to the
 3 Christ. But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent in his craftiness beguiled Eve, your thoughts may be corrupted from your sincerity and your
 4 purity as regards Christ. For indeed if someone cometh and is preaching another Jesus, whom we preached not, or ye are receiving a different spirit, which ye received not, or a different gospel, which
 5 ye accepted not, ye are wonderfully tolerant ! For I think that in nothing have I come behind those
 6 pre-eminent apostles ! But even if I am deficient in speech, yet in knowledge I am not ; but in everything we made it manifest unto you among all men.
 7 Or did I commit a sin in humbling myself that you might be exalted, in that without charge I
 8 preached to you the gospel of God ? Other churches I robbed, in taking wages towards my ministry
 9 unto you ; and, when I was present with you, and was brought to want, on no one did I become a burden ; for, my wants the brethren, coming from Macedonia, fully supplied ; and in everything I kept, and will keep myself, from being burdensome
 10 to you. It is Christ's truth in me, that this glorying shall not be stopped in regard of me in the regions
 11 of Achaia. Why ? is it because I love you not ?
 12 God knoweth. But what I do, I will go on doing, that I may cut away the ground of attack from them that desire a ground ; that, in what they
 13 glory, they may be found even as we.² For such

¹ Or nay indeed bear with me. ² The verse is difficult ; it may mean that St. Paul would force his opponents to refuse support as he refused it.

II. CORINTHIANS 11

are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. And no wonder; for even Satan disguiseth himself as an angel of light. No great thing, then, if his ministers also disguise themselves as ministers of righteousness; whose end will be according to their works!

Again I say, Let no one think me foolish; but if ye do, yet even as a foolish one welcome me, that I also may glory a little. What I am speaking, I am not speaking as if it were the Lord, but in folly as it were, in this confidence of glorying. Seeing that many glory according to the flesh, I also will glory. For gladly ye bear with the unwise, wise as ye are! For ye bear with it, if any bringeth you into bondage, if any devoureth you, if any layeth hold of you, if any uplifteth himself, if any smiteth you on the face. I admit, to my disgrace, that we have shown weakness; yet whereinsoever any is bold (in folly I say it) I also am bold. Are they Hebrews? so am I. Are they Israelites? so am I. Are they offspring of Abraham? so am I. Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak like a madman) more so am I; in labours more abundantly, in prisons more abundantly, in stripes above measure, in deaths often. At the hands of Jews five times I received forty stripes save one; thrice I was beaten with rods,¹ once I was stoned, thrice I was shipwrecked, a night and a day I have spent in the deep; by journeyings often, by perils of rivers, by perils of robbers, by perils from my countrymen, by perils from Gentiles, by perils in city, by perils in wilderness, by perils at sea, by perils among false brethren; by labour and toil, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. Besides the things that I pass by,² there is the daily pressure upon me, my anxiety for all the churches. Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is made to stumble, and I burn not? If glory I must, I will glory of the things that concern my weakness. The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, he who is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not. In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king was watching the city of the Damascenes to seize me; and through

¹ By the Roman authorities (Acts 16 ²²). ² Or which are without.

II. CORINTHIANS 11, 12

a window I was let down in a basket over the wall, and escaped his hands.

- 12 Glory I must ; it is not indeed expedient,¹ but I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.
- 2 I know a man in Christ, fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I know not ; or whether out of the body, I know not ; God knoweth), such a one caught
- 3 up even to the third heaven. And I know such a man (whether in the body, or without the body,
- 4 I know not ; God knoweth), that he was caught up into Paradise² and heard utterances unutterable,
- 5 which a man may not speak. On behalf of such a one I will glory, but on my own behalf I will
- 6 not glory, save in my weaknesses. For, even if I shall desire to glory, I shall not be foolish, for I shall be speaking truth ; but I forbear, lest any should think of me above what he sees me to be, or what he hears from me, and by reason of the
- 7 exceeding greatness of the revelations. Wherefore that I might not be exalted overmuch, there was given me a thorn for the flesh, a messenger of Satan to buffet me, that I might not be exalted overmuch.
- 8 Concerning this I besought the Lord thrice,³ that
- 9 it might depart from me. And he hath said to me, ' My grace is sufficient for thee ; for in weakness strength is made perfect.' Most gladly therefore I will rather glory in my weaknesses, that the strength
- 10 of the Christ may tabernacle upon me. Wherefore I take pleasure in weaknesses, in injuries, in necessities, in persecutions and distresses, for Christ's sake ; for whenever I am weak, then I am strong.
- 11 I have shown myself foolish | you constrained me to it ; for I ought by you to have been commended ; for in nothing did I come behind those pre-eminent
- 12 apostles, nothing though I am. Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought out among you in all steadfastness, by signs and wonders and mighty works.
- 13 For, what is there wherein ye were made inferior to the rest of the churches, unless it be that I myself did not become a burden upon you? Forgive me this wrong !
- 14 Lo, this is the third time I am ready to come unto

¹ Some MSS., ' Now to glory is not expedient.' ² Lit. into the paradise.
³ St. Matthew 26⁴⁴.

II. CORINTHIANS 12, 13

you, and I will not be a burden ; for I seek not yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay up treasure for the parents ; but the parents for the children. Most gladly I will spend and be wholly spent for your souls. Am I loved the less, the more abundantly I love you? 15

But granted that I myself was not a burden upon you ; yet, crafty as I was, I caught you with guile ! Any one of those I have sent unto you—did I through him take advantage of you? I exhorted Titus, and with him I sent the brother. Did Titus take any advantage of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps? 16 17 18

Are ye thinking all this time that it is to you we are excusing ourselves? In God's sight, in Christ, we speak ; but, beloved, it is all for your edification. For I fear lest by any means, when I come, I may find you not such as I would, and that I may be found by you such as ye would not ; lest by any means there may be strife, jealousy, outbreaks of wrath, factions, evil speakings, slanders, proud tempers, disorders ; lest, when I come, my God may humble me again before you, and I may have to mourn over many of them that have sinned heretofore, and repented not of the uncleanness and fornication and wantonness that they committed. 19 20 21

This is the third time I am coming unto you. At the mouth of two witnesses and of three every word shall be confirmed. I have said beforehand, and, as I did when I was present the second time, so now in my absence I say beforehand to them that have sinned heretofore, and to all the rest, that, if I come again, I will not spare ; seeing that ye seek a test of the Christ who speaketh in me ; who as regards you is not weak, but exerts his power in you ; for indeed through weakness he was crucified, yet he liveth through the power of God. For we ourselves also are weak in¹ him, yet we shall live, together with him, through the power of God, for your sakes. 13 2 3 4

Try yourselves, whether ye are in the faith ; test yourselves. Or know ye not about yourselves that Jesus Christ is in you? unless indeed ye are 5

¹ Some MSS., 'with.'

II. CORINTHIANS 13

- 6 reprobates. But I hope ye will find that we are not
7 reprobates. Now we pray unto God that ye may do
no evil ; not with intent that we may appear
approved, but that you may do what is right, though
8 we ourselves should be as it were reprobates. For
we cannot do any thing against the truth, but for
9 the truth we can. For we rejoice whenever we are
weak but you are strong ; for this also we pray,
10 that ye be knit together.¹ This is why I write these
things in my absence, that when present I may
not have to deal sharply, according to the authority
that the Lord gave me for building up, and not for
pulling down.
- 11 Finally, brethren, rejoice ;² be knit together ; be
comforted ; be of the same mind ; live in peace ;
and the God of love and peace will be with you.
12 Salute one another with a holy kiss. All the saints
13 salute you.
14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love
of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be
with you all.

¹ See 12 ²², for need of this. ² Or farewell.

THE LETTER TO THE ROMANS

Paul, bondman of Christ Jesus, called to be an 1
apostle, set apart unto the gospel of God, which he 2
promised beforehand through his prophets in holy 3
scriptures concerning his Son, who was born of the 4
offspring of David as regards the flesh, marked 4
out as Son of God, in power, as regards his spirit
of holiness, by resurrection from the dead; Jesus 5
Christ our Lord, through whom we received grace 5
and apostleship, to bring about the obedience¹ of 6
faith among all the nations, for his name's sake; 6
among whom are you also, called to be Jesus Christ's; 7
to all God's beloved that are in Rome, called to be 7
saints; Grace be to you and peace from God our
Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ con- 8
cerning you all, that your faith is proclaimed 8
throughout the whole world. For God is my witness, 9
whom I serve in my spirit in the gospel of his Son, 9
how unceasingly I make mention of you, always in 10
my prayers making request, if by any means I may 10
now at length have a prosperous journey, in the will 11
of God, to get to you. For I long to see you, that I 11
may impart to you some spiritual gift, to the end 12
that you may be strengthened, or rather, that I with 12
you may be comforted among you, each through
the other's faith, both yours and mine.

But I would not, brethren, have you ignorant 13
that I often purposed to get to you (and hitherto 13
I have been hindered), that I might have some fruit
among you also, even as I have had among the rest 14
of the Gentiles. Both to Greeks and to barbarians, 14

¹ To secure the obedience to God that naturally springs from faith in him. Some render 'to secure obedience to faith,' to its dictates. Whether here faith gives to God, or receives from us, obedience, the meaning is much the same.

ROMANS 1

- 15 both to wise and to foolish, I am debtor. So, for my part, I am eager to preach the gospel to you also who are in Rome.
- 16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel; for it is God's power unto salvation to every one that hath
- 17 faith; to Jew first, and also to Greek. For God's righteousness is revealed therein, from faith unto faith; even as it is written, 'But the righteous shall live by faith.'
- 18 For the anger of God is revealed from heaven upon all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men,
- 19 who in unrighteousness hold down the truth; seeing that what may be known of God is manifest within
- 20 them; for God manifested it to them (for his unseen attributes, his everlasting power and divinity, ever since the creation of the world are clearly seen, being conceived¹ through the things made),² that
- 21 they might be without excuse; seeing that, though they knew God, they did not glorify him as God, neither gave thanks; but became vain in their reasonings, and darkness fell upon their senseless
- 22 hearts. Professing to be wise, they became fools,
- 23 and changed the glory of the incorruptible God for an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts and creeping things.
- 24 Wherefore God gave them up, in the lusts of their hearts, to uncleanness, that their bodies should
- 25 be dishonoured among them; seeing that they changed away the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed for ever; Amen.
- 26 For this reason God gave them up to degrading passions; for their women changed the natural use
- 27 into that which is against nature; and in like manner the men also, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their craving one towards another, men with men working out their shame, and receiving in themselves the recompense due to their transgression.
- 28 And even as they thought not fit to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them up to a reprobate
- 29 mind, to do such things as are not befitting; filled as they are with all unrighteousness, wickedness, greed-

¹ i.e. the concept of them being derived. ² Psalm 19¹.

ness, malice ; brimming with envy, murder, strife, 30
 deceit, malignity ; slanderers, defamers, baters of
 God,¹ violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil 31
 things, disobedient to parents, senseless, covenant- 32
 breakers, without natural affection, merciless ; men
 who knowing the ordinance of God, that they that
 commit such things are deserving of death, not only
 do them, but also approve those that commit them.

Wherefore, O man, thou art without excuse, who- 2
 soever thou art that judgest ; for in what thou
 judgest thy neighbour thou givest judgement against
 thyself ; for thou who judgest committest the same 2
 things. But we know that the judgement of God is in
 accordance with truth upon them that commit such
 things.

But is this thy reckoning, O man, thou that judgest 3
 them that commit such things, and doest the same,
 that thou wilt escape the judgement of God? Or 4
 despisest thou the riches of his kindness and for-
 bearing and long-suffering, not knowing that the
 kindness of God leadeth thee unto repentance? but 5
 according to thy stubbornness and impenitent heart
 treasurest up for thyself anger in a day of anger, and
 of revelation of righteous judgement from God,
 who will render to each according to his works ; to 6
 them that by steadfastness in well-doing seek glory 7
 and honour and incorruption—eternal life ; but for 8
 them that are factious, and obey not the truth, but
 obey unrighteousness, there are anger and wrath,
 tribulation and distress, upon every soul of man 9
 that worketh out evil, of Jew first, and also of
 Greek ; but glory and honour and peace for every 10
 one that worketh what is good, to Jew first, and also
 to Greek ; for with God there is no respect of 11
 persons. For as many as have sinned without law² 12
 will also perish without law ; and as many as have
 sinned under law will be judged by law. For it is not 13
 the hearers of law that are righteous before God ; but
 the doers of the law will be accounted righteous—for
 when Gentiles who have no law carry out by nature 14
 the precepts of the law, these, having no law are a

¹ Or hateful to God. ² 'Law' is a general controlling principle (as in the phrase 'law and order'), abstract and universal : from time to time it embodies itself in a code ('the law,' usually in the N.T. the Mosaic legislation). For the N.T. use, see Gifford, in *Speaker's Commentary*, Vol. III., pp. 41-8.

ROMANS 2, 3

- 15 law unto themselves¹ in that they show, written in their hearts, the work of the law, their consciences also joining in witness, and, between one another, their thoughts² accusing, or, it may be, defending
- 16 them—in the day that God judgeth the hidden things of men, according to my gospel, through Christ Jesus.
- 17 But if thou bearest the name of Jew, and retest thyself on law, and gloriest in God, and knowest his will, and dost distinguish what things are essential,³
- 18 receiving instruction out of the law, and art persuaded that thou thyself art a guide to the blind, a light to
- 19 them that are in darkness, an instructor of the foolish, a teacher of infants, possessing in the Law the outline
- 20 of all knowledge and of all truth; well then, thou that teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou whose preaching is 'Steal not,' dost thou steal?
- 21 thou that sayest 'Commit not adultery,' dost thou commit it? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou rob
- 22 temples?⁴ thou that gloriest in law, dishonourest thou God through thy transgression of the law?
- 23 For, because of you, the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, even as scripture saith.⁵
- 24 For circumcision profiteth indeed, if thou carriest out law; but if thou art a transgressor of law, thy
- 25 circumcision is turned into uncircumcision. Therefore, if the uncircumcised observe the ordinances of the law, will not their uncircumcision be reckoned as
- 26 circumcision? and the uncircumcised, born and bred, if they carry out the law, will judge thee, who with
- 27 written law and circumcision art a transgressor of law. For he is not a Jew, who is one outwardly; and that is not circumcision, which is outward, in
- 28 flesh; but he is a Jew who is one inwardly, and circumcision is a matter of the heart, spiritual, not literal; and his praise⁶ is not from men, but from God.
- 3 What then is the Jew's advantage? or what the benefit of circumcision?
- 2 Much, in every way; first, that they were entrusted

¹ For men of pre-eminent virtue there is no law; they are themselves a law. Any one would be ridiculous who attempted to make laws for them.—Aristotle, *Politics*, iii. 13, § 14, p. 1284 a. ² i.e. in mutual intercourse; or and their thoughts alternately. ³ Or dost approve the things that excel; (in text) what 'counts,' as opposed to 'adiaphora,' what does not matter. ⁴ See Acts 19²¹. ⁵ Isaiah 52¹. ⁶ Judah (Jew) means praise (Genesis 29²²).

ROMANS 3

with the oracles of God. For what if some had not 3
 faith? will their want of faith do away the faithfulness
 of God? God forbid! nay, let God be found true, 4
 but every man a liar; even as it is written,

‘That thou mightest be accounted righteous
 in thy words,
 And mightest prevail when thou comest into
 judgement.’

But if our unrighteousness establisheth the right- 5
 eousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unjust
 who visiteth with anger? (I am speaking after the
 manner of men.) God forbid! otherwise how shall 6
 God judge the world? But if by my lie the truthfulness 7
 of God abounded to his glory, why am I also
 still judged as a sinner? and why not say—as is 8
 slanderously reported of us, and as some affirm that
 we say—‘Let us do evil that good may come’? the
 judgement on whom is just.

What then? are we in worse case than they?¹ 9

In no wise; for we have already charged both
 Jews and Greeks with being all subject to sin; even 10
 as it is written,

‘There is none righteous, no, not one;
 There is none that understandeth, there is 11
 none that seeketh after God.

They all turned aside, they became unprofit- 12
 able together;

There is none that doeth goodness, no, not
 even one.

Their throat is an opened sepulchre; 13

With their tongues they deceived;

Poison of asps is under their lips;

Whose mouths are full of cursing and bitterness; 14

Their feet are swift to shed blood; 15

Destruction and misery are in their ways; 16

And the way of peace they never knew; 17

There is no fear of God before their eyes.’ 18

Now we know that whatsoever the law saith, it is 19
 speaking to them that are under the law, that every
 mouth may be stopped, and all the world may come
 under the judgement of God; because by works of 20
 law not one person will be accounted righteous in his
 sight; for through law comes knowledge of sin.

¹ *Lit.* are we excelled (*cf.* 2¹⁴⁻¹⁷).

- 21 But now, without law, God's righteousness stands
 22 manifested, the law and the prophets bearing wit-
 23 ness, even God's righteousness, through faith in
 24 Jesus Christ, given unto all them that have faith—
 25 for there is no distinction ; for all have sinned and
 26 show lack of the glory of God—being freely accounted
 27 righteous by his grace through the redemption¹ that
 28 is in Christ Jesus ; whom God set forth for a pro-
 29 pitiation,² through faith, in his blood, for a display
 30 of his own righteousness, because of the passing
 31 over³ of the bygone sins in the forbearance of God ;
 unto the display of his righteousness at this present
 time ; that he may himself be righteous, and may
 account righteous him that rests upon faith in Jesus.
 Where then is the glorying? It is⁴ shut out.
 Under what manner of law? Under a law of works?
 Nay, but under a law of faith. For we reckon that
 a man is accounted righteous by faith, without works
 of law. Or is God the God of Jews only? is he not
 the God of Gentiles⁵ also? Yes, of Gentiles also,
 if indeed there is one God, who will account men
 circumcised righteous by faith, and men uncircum-
 cised righteous through the same faith.
 Do we then through this faith do away with law?
 God forbid ! nay, we establish law.

- 4 What then shall we say that Abraham, our fore-
 2 father, hath gained according to the flesh?⁶ for if
 Abraham was by works accounted righteous, he
 3 hath ground for glorying—but not before God. For,
 what saith the scripture? ' Now Abraham had faith
 4 in God, and it was reckoned to him as righteousness.'
 Now to him that worketh, his payment is reckoned,

¹ Or deliverance. ² Or as a mercy-seat (see Hebrews 9⁵; Exodus 25¹⁷, same word). The word is found in Hebrews 2¹⁷, and a form of it in I John 2²; 4¹⁰. It is related to the verb rendered 'be merciful' (St. Luke 18²⁸), and to the adjective rendered 'merciful' in Hebrews 8¹². A propitiation is something that renders some one propitious, favourable, *neighbourly* (Lat., *prope*). ³ Wisdom of Solomon 11²². ⁴ *Lit.* was; but here the English present better brings out the decisiveness of the act. ⁵ The word 'Gentiles' is from the Latin 'gentes' (nations), and means men of the nations; the Greek word is *ethne* (whence our *ethnic*), and means races, nations, especially foreign nations not worshipping the true God; generally, the heathens (as here) in contrast with the Jews; but St. Paul sometimes uses it of Christians of foreign origin (Galatians 2¹⁵, ¹⁶; Romans 11¹³) as contrasted with those of Jewish birth. ⁶ Some authorities (omitting 'gained') read, 'What then shall we say about Abraham . . .'

ROMANS 4

not as a grace, but as a debt; whereas to him 5
 that worketh not, but puts faith in him that accoun-
 teth the ungodly righteous, his faith is reckoned as
 righteousness; even as David pronounces the happi- 6
 ness of the man to whom God reckoneth righteous-
 ness without works.

'Happy they whose iniquities have been 7
 forgiven, and whose sins have been
 covered;

Happy man is he whose sin the Lord will not 8
 reckon.'

Now this pronouncing 'happy,' has it to do with 9
 the circumcised only? or with the uncircumcised
 also? for we say 'To Abraham his faith was reckoned 10
 as righteousness.' How then was it reckoned? was
 it when he was circumcised? or when he was uncir-
 cumcised? Not when circumcised, but when 11
 uncircumcised; and he received circumcision as a
 sign,¹ a seal on the righteousness of the faith that he
 had while he was uncircumcised; that he might be
 father of all them that have faith, though they are
 uncircumcised, that righteousness might be reckoned
 unto them; and father of men circumcised to them 12
 that not only are circumcised but also walk orderly
 in the steps of the faith that our father Abraham
 had while he was yet uncircumcised.

For the promise, that he should have the world for 13
 his inheritance, came not to Abraham, or to his off-
 spring, through law, but through the righteousness of
 faith. (For if they that rest upon law are heirs, his 14
 faith is made of no effect, and the promise is done
 away; for the law worketh out wrath; but where 15
 there is no law, neither is there any transgression.)
 The reason why it came from faith was that it might 16
 be according to grace; to the end that the promise
 might be guaranteed to all his offspring, not to that
 only which rests upon the law, but to that also which
 rests upon the faith of Abraham, who is father of
 us all (even as it is written, 'Father of many nations 17
 I have appointed thee'), in the sight of him in whom
 he had faith, even God, who giveth life to the dead,
 and calleth to the things that are not in being as if
 they were²; of Abraham, I say, who, beyond hope, 18

¹ Genesis 17¹⁰. ² 1 Corinthians 1¹⁰.

resting on hope, had faith, to the end that he might become father of many nations, according to that which had been spoken, 'So shall thy offspring be.' And without weakening in faith he considered his own body—to all intents dead, he being about a hundred years old—and the deadness of Sarah's womb; yet he did not, in unbelief, stagger at the promise of God, but gained strength through faith, giving glory to God, and being fully persuaded that what he hath promised he is able also to perform. Wherefore it was reckoned to him as righteousness. Now, not for his sake only was it written that it was reckoned to him; but for the sake of us also, to whom it will surely be reckoned, who believe on him that raised from the dead, Jesus our Lord who was given up with a view to our trespasses, and rose with a view to our being accounted righteous.

5 Accounted righteous by faith, let us therefore continue in peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have also obtained by faith our access into this grace wherein we stand; and we exult in hope of the glory of God. And not only this, but we exult in our tribulations also; knowing that tribulation worketh out steadfastness; and steadfastness, approvedness; and approvedness, hope; and this hope putteth not to shame; because the love of God has been poured out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit which was given unto us. For Christ, while we were yet without strength, died in due season for ungodly men. Scarcely indeed for an upright man will any one die, though perhaps for the good man someone would even have courage to die; but God giveth proof of his own love towards us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more therefore, now that we are accounted righteous in his blood, we shall be saved through him from the Wrath. For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, now that we are reconciled, we shall be saved in his life; and not this only, but we exult also in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.

ROMANS 5, 6

Therefore, as through one man sin came into the world,¹ and through sin death, and so death spread through unto all men, seeing that all sinned²—for, as far as there was law, there was sin in the world ;³ but sin is not accounted where there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam until Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the likeness⁴ of Adam's transgression, who is a figure⁵ of him that was to come. But the free gift is not as was the trespass. For if by the trespass of the one, the many died, much more did the grace of God, and the gift in the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, overflow unto the many. And the gift has result, not like that which came through one man's sinning ; for the judgement sprang from one trespass unto condemnation, but the free gift from many trespasses unto a declaration of righteousness. For if, by the trespass of the one, death reigned through the one, much more will they that receive the overflowing of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one, Jesus Christ. So then as the result of one trespass reaches to all men, unto condemnation ; even thus the result of one declaration of righteousness⁶ reaches to all men, to account them righteous unto life.⁷ For even as through the one man's disobedience the many were constituted⁸ sinners, so through the obedience of the one the many will be constituted⁹ righteous.

But law came in by the way,⁹ that the trespass might abound. But where sin abounded, grace overflowed the more ; that as sin reigned in death even so grace might reign through righteousness unto life eternal through Jesus Christ our Lord.

What shall we say then ? are we to hold on to sin, that grace may abound ?

¹ See Appendix XIV. ² The sentence broken off here is resumed and completed in 18. ³ More law, more sin. ⁴ St. Paul means that Adam's sin was against external command. In the time between him and Moses who delivered 'positive' law, men indeed sinned (1²⁰⁻²² ; 2¹⁴⁻¹⁵), but their sin was of a different nature ; it was sin against the light which is given (St. John 1⁹), more or less, to all men, the law written in their hearts. ⁵ Or type. ⁶ One act of righteousness (R.V.) ⁷ *Lit.* to a pronouncing righteous of life; containing reading to, life. ⁸ Made (A.V.) ; 'constituti sunt,' etc. (Vulgate). ⁹ Or incidentally, by way of parenthesis.

ROMANS 6

2 God forbid ! We who died unto sin, how shall we
3 any longer live therein? Or know ye not, that all
4 we who were baptized into Christ Jesus were
5 baptized into his death? Therefore we were buried
6 with him through our baptism into his death ; that,
7 even as Christ rose from the dead through the glory¹
8 of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of
9 life. For if we have become united with him by
10 the likeness of his death, surely we shall be united
11 also by the likeness of his resurrection ; taking
12 note, that our old man was crucified with him, that
13 the body of sin might be done away, that so we
14 should be no longer in bondage unto sin ; for he that
15 dies is acquitted of his sin. But if we died with
16 Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him ;
17 knowing that Christ, risen from the dead, dieth no
18 more ; death hath no more dominion over him. For
19 the death that he died, he died unto sin, once for all ;
20 but the life that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Even
21 so reckon ye yourselves also to be dead unto sin,
22 but alive unto God in Christ Jesus.

23 Therefore let not sin reign in your mortal bodies,
24 that ye should obey the lusts thereof ; neither
25 continue presenting your members unto sin as
26 weapons of unrighteousness ; but present yourselves
27 unto God, as men alive from the dead, and your
28 members unto God as weapons of righteousness.
29 Sin surely shall not have dominion over you ; for ye
30 are not under law, but under grace.

31 What then? may we commit sin, because we are
32 not under law, but under grace?

33 God forbid ! Know ye not that to whomsoever
34 ye present yourselves as bondmen to obey him,
35 bondmen ye are of him whom ye obey ; whether of
36 sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?
37 But thanks be to God, that whereas ye were bond-
38 men of sin, ye became obedient from the heart to
39 that standard of teaching under which ye were
40 placed : ² yea, set free from sin, ye became bond-
41 men to righteousness (I speak after the manner of
42 men, because of the infirmity of your flesh). For
43 even as once ye presented your members as bondmen

¹ —glorious manifestation ; St. John 11 ²², ⁴⁰. ² See 1 Corinthians
15 ² ; the doctrine committed to them, and they to it.

ROMANS 6, 7

to uncleanness and to iniquity¹ unto iniquity,¹ so now present your members as bondmen to righteousness unto sanctification. For when ye were sin's bondmen, ye were freemen in respect of righteousness. What fruit therefore were ye having then? things of which ye are now ashamed ;² for the end of those things is death. But now, set free from sin, and become bondmen to God, ye have your fruit unto sanctification, and as the end eternal life. For the wages of sin is death ; but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Or know ye not (for I speak to men who understand law), that the law hath dominion over a person as long as he lives? For a woman with a husband is bound by law to her husband while he is alive ; but if the husband die, she is released from the law about husbands. So then, while her husband is alive, she will be called an adulteress if she give herself to another man ; but if her husband die, she is free from the law, so as to be no adulteress though given to another man.

Wherefore, my brethren, you also were put to death as regards the law through the body of Christ, in order that ye might give yourselves to another, to him that rose from the dead ; that we might bear fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the sinful affections that the law called forth worked actively in our members, to bear fruit unto death. But, as it is, we were released from the law, by dying to that wherein we were held down, so as to serve in newness of spirit, and not in oldness of written law.

What shall we say then? Is the law itself sin?

God forbid ! Nay, what sin is I learnt not except through law ; for covetousness also I had not known, unless the law had said, ' Thou shalt not covet.' But sin, getting a starting-point, wrought in me through the commandment all manner of covetousness. For, without law, sin is dead. But I was living, without law, once ; but, when the commandment came, sin sprang to life ; and I died. And the very commandment that led unto life was found in my

¹ Or lawlessness. ² Or what fruit therefore were ye having then from things that ye are now ashamed of?

11 case to lead unto death ; for sin, getting a starting-
 point¹ through the commandment, beguiled me, and
 12 through it slew me. So that the law indeed is holy,
 and the commandment holy and righteous and good.

13 Did then that good thing become death to me?
 God forbid ! Nay, it was sin ; that it might be
 shown as sin, working out death for me through that
 which is good ; that through the commandment sin
 14 might become exceedingly sinful. For we know
 that the law is spiritual ; but I am of flesh, sold into
 15 the hands of sin. For I know not what I work out ;
 for what I commit is not what I would ; but what
 16 I hate, that I do. But if I do what I would not,
 17 I assent unto the law as being right. But in this
 case it is no longer I that work it out, but sin which
 18 dwelleth in me. For I know that in me (that is, in
 my flesh) dwelleth no good thing ; for the willing is
 present with me, but not so the working out of that
 19 which is right. For the good that I would I do not ;
 20 but the evil that I would not, that I commit. But
 if I do what I myself would not, it is no longer I that
 work it out, but sin which dwelleth in me.

21 I find then this law,² that for me, who desire to do
 22 what is right, the evil is present with me. For us
 regards the inner man I delight in the law of God ;
 23 but I see a different law in my members, warring
 against the law of my mind, and bringing me into
 captivity under the law of sin, the law that is in my
 members. So then I of myself with the mind serve
 the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.
 24 Wretched man that I am ! who will deliver me out
 25 of the body of this death ? Thanks be³ to God,
 through Jesus Christ our Lord.⁴

8 There is therefore now no condemnation for them
 2 that are in Christ Jesus. For in Christ Jesus the law
 of the Spirit of life set thee⁵ free from the law of
 3 sin and of death. For—that which the law could
 not do, that wherein it was weak through the flesh—
 God, sending his own Son in likeness of sinful flesh,
 and on account of sin,⁶ in the flesh⁷ condemned sin ;

¹ i. e. a base of operations (point d'appui). ² Force or principle impelling to action. ³ Some MSS., 'I give thanks.' ⁴ Slight rearrangement of clauses in 24, 25. ⁵ Some MSS., 'me.' ⁶ Or and as a sin-offering ; Hebrews 10⁴ (LXX. of Leviticus 7²¹ etc.). ⁷ Hebrews 5⁷.

that the ordinance¹ of the law might be fulfilled in 4
 us, who walk not according to the flesh, but according
 to the spirit. For they that are fleshly² set their 5
 minds upon the things of the flesh ; but they that
 are spiritual³ set them upon the things of the spirit.
 For the mind of the flesh is death—whereas the mind 6
 of the spirit is life and peace—because the mind 7
 of the flesh is enmity against God ; for it is not
 subject to the law of God ; nor indeed can it be.
 Now they that are under the flesh cannot please God. 8
 But you are not under the flesh, but under the 9
 spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwelleth in you.
 But if any hath not the Spirit of Christ, he is none
 of his. Now if Christ is in you, the body indeed is 10
 dead by reason of sin, but the spirit is life by reason
 of righteousness. But if the Spirit of him that 11
 raised Jesus from the dead dwelleth in you, he that
 raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also bring to
 life your mortal bodies through⁴ his Spirit who
 dwelleth in you.

So then, brethren, we are debtors ; not to the 12
 flesh, to live according to the flesh. For if ye live 13
 according to the flesh, ye will surely die ; but if by
 the spirit ye put to death the doings of the body,
 ye will live. For as many as are led by the Spirit 14
 of God, they are sons of God. For ye received not 15
 a spirit of bondage, to bring you back to fear ; but
 ye received a spirit of adoption, wherein we cry,
 Abba, Father. The Spirit himself beareth witness 16
 with our spirit that we are children of God ; but if 17
 children, then heirs, heirs of God, and joint-heirs
 with Christ ; if indeed we suffer with him, that with
 him we may be also glorified.

For I reckon that the sufferings of the present 18
 time are not worthy to be compared with the glory
 that is to be revealed unto us. For the eager 19
 expectation of the creation waiteth for the revelation
 of the sons of God. For the creation was subjected 20
 to vanity⁵ (not willingly, but by purpose of him⁶
 that subjected it), in hope ; because⁶ the creation 21
 itself also⁷ will be set free from the bondage of

¹ Or righteous demand. ² Lit. according to the flesh (spirit). ³ Some MSS., 'by reason of. ⁴ Ecclesiastes 1², etc.; Psalm 39². ⁵ Genesis 3¹⁷. ⁶ With a different reading many render 'in hope that.' ⁷ (i.e. as well as man.

ROMANS 8

22 corruption into the freedom of the glory of the
 23 children of God. For we know that the whole
 24 creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together
 25 until now; and not only it, but ourselves also,
 26 though we have the first-fruits of the Spirit, we our-
 27 selves also groan within ourselves, waiting for
 28 adoption, the redemption of our bodies. For in this
 29 hope we were saved; but hope that is in sight is not
 30 hope; for, what any seeth, why doth he hope for
 31 it?¹ But if we hope for what we see not, with
 32 steadfastness we wait for it.

26 In like manner the Spirit also helpeth our infirmity;
 27 for we know not how we are to pray as we ought;
 28 but the Spirit himself maketh intercession for us
 29 with groanings that cannot be uttered. But he that
 30 searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of
 31 the Spirit, that, in God's way, he maketh intercession
 32 for saints.

28 Now we know that for them that love God all
 29 things are working² together for good, for them that
 30 are called according to purpose. For, them that he
 31 foreknew, he also foreordained to be conformed to
 32 the image of his Son, that he might be firstborn
 33 among many brethren. But those that he fore-
 34 ordained, them he also called; and those that he
 35 called, them he also accounted righteous; but those
 36 that he accounted righteous, them he also glorified.

31 What then shall we say to these things? If God
 32 is for us, who is against us? He that withheld³
 33 not his own Son, but gave him up for us all,
 34 how shall he not also with him freely give us all
 35 things? Who shall bring any charge against God's
 36 chosen? God is he that accounteth them righteous;
 37 who is he that condemneth? Christ Jesus is he
 38 that died, nay rather, who rose, who is at God's
 39 right hand, who also maketh intercession for us.
 40 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ?⁴ shall
 41 tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or
 42 nakedness, or peril, or sword? Even as it is written,
 43 'For thy sake we are put to death all the day long;
 44 We were accounted as sheep for slaughter.'

37 But in all these things we are more than conquerors

¹ Some MSS., 'for who hopeth for (awaileth) that which he seeth?'
² Some MSS., 'love God, God makes all things work.' ³ Same word as
 in Greek version of Genesis 22¹². ⁴ Some MSS., 'of God.'

through him that loved us. For I am persuaded 38
 that not death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities,
 nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers,
 nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, 39
 will be able to separate us from the love of God,
 which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

It is truth I am speaking in Christ, I am not lying ; 9
 my conscience bearing witness with me in the Holy
 Spirit, that I have a great sorrow, and unceasing 2
 anguish at heart. For I was wishing that I might 3
 be accursed,¹ even I myself, parted from the Christ,
 for my brethren's sake, my own countrymen as 4
 regards the flesh, inasmuch as they are Israelites ;
 theirs are the adoption, and the Glory,² and the 4
 covenants, and the giving of the law, and the divine
 service, and the promises ; theirs are the forefathers, 5
 and from them, as touching the flesh, is the Christ,
 who is over all, God, blessed for ever ;³ Amen.

But by no means hath the word of God utterly 6
 failed. For not all the descendants of Israel⁴ are 6
 Israel ;⁵ neither, because they are Abraham's poster- 7
 ity, are they all children ; but, ' In Isaac thy posterity
 shall be counted.' That is, not they that are the 8
 children of the flesh are children of God ; but the
 children of the promise are reckoned for a posterity.
 For of promise is this word, 'According to this season 9
 I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.' And not this 10
 only ; but also Rebecca, having conceived by one,
 even by Isaac our forefather—for it was while the 11
 children were yet unborn, and had done nothing good
 or ill, in order that God's purpose according to
 selection might stand, depending not on works, but
 on him that calleth—it was said to her, ' The elder 12
 shall be in bondage to the younger ' ; according as 13
 it is written, ' Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.'

What shall we say then ? Is there injustice with 14
 God ?⁶

God forbid ! for he saith to Moses, ' I will have 15
 mercy on whomsoever I have mercy, and will have
 compassion on whomsoever I have compassion.'

¹Greek, anathema (cf. Exodus 32²³). ²The Shekinah, Exodus 24^{16, 17}. ³Some render, 'the Christ. He who is over all is God, blessed for ever.' ⁴Jacob. ⁵The Israel of God, Galatians 6¹⁶. ⁶Shall not the judge of all the earth do right ? Genesis 18²⁵.

ROMANS 9

- 16 So then it depends not on him that willeth, nor on
 17 him that runneth,¹ but on God who hath mercy. For
 the scripture saith to Pharaoh, ' For this very purpose
 I raised thee up, that I might show forth in thee
 18 my power, and that my name might be published
 abroad in all the earth.' So then on whom he will,
 he hath mercy ; but whom he will, he hardeneth.
- 19 Thou wilt say then to me, Why doth he yet find
 fault? for who is resisting his will?
- 20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against
 God? Shall the thing formed say to him that
 formed it, ' Why didst thou make me thus? ' Or
 21 hath not the potter a right over the clay, out of the
 same lump to make one vessel for honourable,
 22 another for ignoble use?² But what if God, wishing
 to show forth his anger, and to make known his
 power, endured with much long-suffering vessels of
 23 wrath, fitted out unto destruction ; and this, that³
 he might make known the riches of his glory upon
 vessels of mercy, which he prepared beforehand
 24 unto glory, whom he also called, even us, not from
 among Jews only, but also from among Gentiles?
- 25 As indeed he says in Hosea,
 ' I will call that my people, which was not my
 people ;
 And her beloved, who was not beloved ;
 26 And it shall be that in the place where it was
 said to them, You are not my people,
 There they shall be called sons of a living God.'⁴
- 27 But Isaiah crieth over Israel, ' Though the number
 of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, it is
 28 the remnant that shall be saved; for a sentence, accom-
 plishing it and shortening it, the Lord will execute
 29 upon the earth.' And, even as Isaiah hath said before,
 ' Unless the Lord of hosts⁴ had left us a posterity,
 We had become as Sodom, and had been made
 like unto Gomorrah.'
- 30 What shall we say then? That Gentiles, who
 were not following after righteousness, overtook
 righteousness—but it was the righteousness that is
 31 from faith—whereas Israel, following after a law of

¹ Hebrews 12¹. ² Some to nobler, and some to meaner uses ; but all for some use ; none with design that it should be cast away and dashed to pieces (Whateley). ³ Some MSS., ' destruction ; that.' ⁴ Lxx. of Sabaoth.

righteousness, did not catch up that law. Wherefore? 32
 Because, following after it, not by faith, but as it
 were by works, they stumbled at the stone of the
 stumbling, even as it is written, 33

‘ Behold, I appoint in Zion a stone of stumbling
 and a rock of offence ;
 And he that believeth on him shall not be put
 to shame.’

Brethren, my heart’s desire and my supplication 10
 to God on Israel’s behalf is, that they may be saved.
 For I bear them witness that they have zeal for God, 2
 but not directed by knowledge. For, not knowing 3
 the righteousness of God, and seeking to establish
 their own, they did not subject themselves to the
 righteousness of God.

For to everyone that hath faith, Christ puts an 4
 end to law¹ as regards righteousness. For Moses 5
 writes² that the man who doeth the righteousness
 that comes from law shall have life therein. But the 6
 righteousness that comes from faith saith thus,
 ‘ Say not in thy heart, Who shall ascend into 7
 heaven?’ (that is, to bring down Christ); or, ‘ Who
 shall descend into the abyss?’ (that is, to bring up 8
 Christ from the dead). ‘But what saith it? ‘The
 word is nigh thee, in thy mouth and in thy heart’;
 that is, the word of faith, which we preach; that, if 9
 thou shalt acknowledge with thy mouth Jesus as
 Lord,³ and shalt have faith in thy heart that God
 raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved; for 10
 with the heart faith is exercised unto righteousness;
 but with the mouth acknowledgment is made unto
 salvation. For the scripture saith, ‘ No one who 11
 sets faith on him shall be put to shame.’ For there
 is no distinction between Jew and Greek; for the
 same Lord is Lord of all, and is rich as regards all
 that call upon him; ⁴ for, ‘ Whosoever shall call upon 13
 the name of the Lord shall be saved.’

How then are they to call on him in whom they 14
 have not believed? but how are they to believe in him
 whom they have not heard?⁵ but how are they to
 hear without a preacher? but how are they to preach 15

¹ Law, regarded as a means of attaining to righteousness, is at an end in Christ. ² Leviticus 18 ³ Some MSS., ‘ acknowledge with thy mouth the saying, that Jesus is Lord.’ ⁴ See St. Luke 12 ⁵ Cf. Ephesians 4 ⁵.

unless they are sent? according as it is written,
 'How beautiful the feet of them that bring glad
 tidings of good things!'

- 16 Yet not all hearkened to the glad tidings. For
 17 Isaiah saith, 'Lord, who hath believed what he heard
 18 from us?' So faith cometh from hearing, but the
 hearing through the word of Christ. But I say,
 Did they not hear? Nay, verily,

'Unto all the earth went forth their sound,
 And unto the ends of the world their words.'

- 19 But I say, did Israel not know? First cometh Moses,
 saying,

'I will provoke you to jealousy against that
 which is no nation,
 Against a nation without understanding I will
 stir you to anger.'

- 20 But Isaiah is very bold, and saith,

'I was found by them that sought me not ;
 I became manifest to them that inquired not
 of me' ;

- 21 but of Israel he saith, 'All the day long I stretched
 forth my hands unto a people disobedient and
 contentious.'

- 11 I say then, Did God cast off his people?

God forbid ! For I myself am an Israelite, of the
 2 offspring of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. Nay,
 God cast not off his people whom he foreknew. Or
 know ye not what the scripture saith in the account
 of Elijah? how he pleads with God against Israel,

- 3 'Lord, they have killed thy prophets, they have dug
 down thine altars, and I only am left, and they seek

- 4 my life.' But what saith the answer of God¹ to
 him? 'I have left for myself seven thousand men,

- 5 who never bowed knee to Baal.' Even so then at
 the present time also there is a remnant according
 6 to selection by grace ; but if by grace, it is no longer
 from works ; otherwise the grace ceases to be grace.

- 7 What then? what Israel seeketh after, that he
 obtained not ; but the chosen² attained it, whereas

- 8 the rest were blinded ; according as it is written,
 'God gave them a spirit of stupefaction, eyes that
 they should not see, and ears that they should not

- 9 hear,' until this very day. And David saith,

¹ Or the oracle. ² *Lit.* the election (the part chosen).

Let their table become a snare, and a trap,
And a stumbling-block, and a requital unto
them ;

Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see ; 10
And their backs bow thou down always.'

I say then, Did they so stumble that they will fall ? 11

God forbid ! But by their trespass¹ salvation hath
come to the Gentiles, to provoke Israel² to jealousy.
Now if their trespass¹ is the enriching of the world, 12
and their defeat³ the enriching of the Gentiles, how
much greater an enriching will the full company of
them bring about. (But it is to you the Gentiles⁴ 13
I am speaking—yea more, as far as I am an apostle to
Gentiles, I glorify my ministry—if by any means
I may provoke to jealousy my own flesh and blood,⁵ 14
and may save some from among them.) For if the 15
rejecting of them is the reconciling of the world,
what will the reception of them be, but life from the
dead ! Now, if the first handful is holy, so also is 16
the lump of dough ;⁶ and if the root is holy, so also
are the branches. But if some of the branches were 17
broken off, whereas thou, wild olive tree as thou wast,
wert grafted in among them, and becamest partaker
with them in the root of the fatness of the olive tree ;
glory not over the branches ! But if thou gloriest 18
over them, thou upholdest not the root, but the root
upholds thee.

Thou wilt say then, ' Branches were broken off, 19
that I might be grafted in.' True ; by their lack of 20
faith they were broken off, whereas thou by thy
faith standest. Be not proud-minded, but fear ;
for if God spared not the natural branches, neither 21
will he spare thee.

Behold therefore kindness and severity on God's 22
part ; on them that fell, severity, but on thee God's
kindness, if thou hold on to his kindness ; other-
wise thou also wilt be cut off. Yea, they also, if they 23
hold not on to their unbelief, will be grafted in ;
for God is able to engraft them back. For if thou 24
wert cut out from the olive tree that by nature was
wild, and contrary to nature wert grafted into a
garden olive tree, how much more shall these, the

¹ Or fall. ² Israel not expressed in original, which has simply ' them.
³ Or lessening, loss. ⁴ See note to 3rd. ⁵ Last two words not expressed
in original. ⁶ See Numbers 15¹⁰⁻²¹.

natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree !

- 25 For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant of this secret (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits), that blindness in some degree hath come upon Israel until the full company of the Gentiles
26 have come in. And thus all Israel will be saved, even as it is written,

' Out of Zion there will come the Deliverer ;
He will turn away all ungodliness from Jacob ;
27 And this is their covenant from me,
When I shall take away their sins.'

- 28 As touching the gospel, they are enemies for your sake ; but as touching God's choice, they are
29 beloved for the sake of the forefathers. For the gifts and the calling of God are never repented.¹
30 For as you in time past were disobedient to God, but now have obtained mercy, owing to their disobedience ;² even so these also have now been disobedient,
31 owing to the mercy shown to you, that they themselves also may now obtain mercy. For God hath shut up together³ all men in the fold of disobedience, that he may have mercy upon all.

- 33 O depth of the riches and wisdom and knowledge of God ! how unsearchable his judgements ! how
34 untraceable his ways ! For

' Who ever knew the mind of the Lord, or who became his counsellor ?

- 35 Or who first gave to him, and shall have recompense made to himself ?'

- 36 For from him and through him and unto him are all things ; to him be the glory for ever ; Amen.

- 12 I exhort you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies, a sacrifice, living, holy, acceptable unto God, your reasonable service.

2 And fashion not yourselves according to this world ; but be transformed in the renewing of your mind, that ye may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect.

3 For, through the grace that was given unto me, I tell every one among you, not to have his mind set higher than he ought to set it ; but to have it

¹ i. e. are irrevocable (Psalm 110 ⁵). ² Acts 13 ⁴⁶. ³ The verb is that used in LXX of Psalm 78 ⁴² ; ' He gave his people over to the sword.'

set on being sober-minded, according as God
 apportioned to each a measure of faith. For, even 4
 as in one body we have many members, yet the
 members have not all the same function ; so we, the 5
 many, are one body in Christ, but severally members
 one of another.

But having gifts differing according to the grace 6
 that was given to us, be it prophecy, let us prophesy
 according to the proportion of our faith ; or 7
 ministering, let us give ourselves to our ministry ; or
 he that teacheth, let him give himself to his teaching ;
 or he that exhorteth, to his exhortation ; he that 8
 giveth, let him do it with liberality ; he that ruleth,
 with diligence ; he that showeth mercy, with cheer-
 fulness. Let your love be unfeigned. Abhor what 9
 is evil ; cleave to what is good ; in brotherly kind- 10
 ness be affectionate one to another ; in honour
 preferring one another ; not slothful in diligence ; 11
 fervent in spirit ; doing service to the Lord ;¹
 rejoicing in hope ; patient in tribulation ; continuing 12
 steadfastly in prayer ; contributing to the necessities 13
 of the saints ; keen to show hospitality. Bless them 14
 that persecute ; bless and curse not. Rejoice 15
 with them that rejoice ; weep with them that weep.
 Be of the same mind one with another. Set not 16
 your minds on high things, hut condescend² to
 things³ that are lowly. Be not wise in your own
 conceits. Render to no one evil for evil. Take 17
 thought for things honourable in the sight of all
 men. If it be possible, as far as in you lieth, be at 18
 peace with all men. Avenge not yourselves, beloved, 19
 but give place to the Wrath ; for it is written,
 ' To me vengeance belongeth ; I will requite,
 saith the Lord.' But if thine enemy hunger, give 20
 him food ; if he thirst, give him drink ; for by so
 doing thou wilt heap coals of fire⁴ upon his head.
 Be not overcome by evil, but overcome evil with 21
 good.

Let every soul be in subjection to supreme authori- 13
 ties ; for there exists no authority except by will
 of God ; yea, those that exist have been appointed

¹ Some MSS., read, ' opportunity.' ² *Lit.* let yourselves be carried away with (same word as in Galatians 2¹³ ; 2 Peter 3¹⁷). ³ Or to them. ⁴ Burning pangs of shame and remorse, Proverbs 25¹²⁻¹³.

2 by God. Therefore he that setteth himself against
the authority, resisteth the appointment of God ;
but they that resist will bring a judgement on
3 themselves. For rulers are a terror, not to the good
work, but to the evil. But wouldst thou have no
fear of the authority? do what is good, and thou
4 wilt have praise from it ; for God's minister it is
to thee for good. But if thou do what is evil, be
afraid ; for not for nothing doth it wear the sword ;
for God's minister it is, an avenger to work wrath on
5 him that committeth evil. Wherefore ye must needs
be in subjection, not only because of the Wrath, but
6 also for conscience' sake. For this is also why ye
pay tribute ; for they are ministers in God's service,
7 attending constantly upon this very thing. Render
to all their dues ; tribute to whom tribute is due ;
custom to whom custom ; fear to whom fear ;
honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no one any thing, except to love one another ;
for he that loveth his neighbour hath fulfilled all
9 law.¹ For this, 'Thou shalt not commit adultery,
Thou shalt not murder, Thou shalt not steal, Thou
shalt not covet,' and any other commandment
there may be, is summed up in this saying, namely,
10 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.' Love
worketh no evil to one's neighbour ; love therefore
11 is the fulfilment of law. And this, as knowing the
season, that already it is time for you to awake out
of sleep ; for now is our salvation nearer than when
12 first we believed. The night is far spent, the day
is at hand ; let us therefore lay aside the works
of the darkness ; let us put on the weapons of
13 the light. Let us walk becomingly, as in the day,
not in revellings and drunkenness, not in debauchery
and wanton acts, not in strife and jealousy ; but put
14 ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and as for the flesh
make no provision for its lusts.

14 Him that is weak in faith, receive ; yet not to
2 pass judgement on scruples. One hath faith to
eat all things ; whereas he that is weak eateth
3 herbs. He that eateth, let him not despise him that
eateth not ; and he that eateth not, let him not
judge him that eateth ; for God hath received him.

¹ *Lit.* fulfilled law (in all its ramifications).

Who art thou, that thou judgest another's house- 4
 servant?¹ to his own master he stands or falls.
 But he will be kept standing, for strong is the Lord
 to make him stand. One indeed esteemeth one day 5
 above another ; another esteemeth every day alike.
 Let each be fully persuaded in his own mind. He 6
 that observeth a day, to the Lord he observeth it ;²
 and he that eateth, to the Lord he eateth, for he
 giveth thanks to God ; and he that eateth not, to the
 Lord he eateth not, and giveth thanks to God. For 7
 none of us liveth to himself, and none dieth to him-
 self. For whether we live, to the Lord we live ; and 8
 whether we die, to the Lord we die ; therefore,
 whether we live, or whether we die, the Lord's we
 are. For to this end Christ died and came to life, 9
 that he might become Lord both of dead and of
 living.

But thou, why judgest thou thy brother? or thou 10
 too, why despisest thou thy brother? for we all
 shall stand at the judgement-seat of God. For it 11
 is written,

' As I live, saith the Lord, to me every knee shall
 bow,

And every tongue shall give praise to God.'

So then each of us will give account of himself to 12
 God.

Therefore let us no longer judge one another; 13
 but let this rather be your judgement, not to set
 a stumbling-block in a brother's way, or an occasion
 of falling. I know and am persuaded in the Lord 14
 Jesus, that nothing is unclean in itself ; only to him
 that accounteth any thing to be unclean, to him it
 is unclean. If because of food thy brother is put 15
 to grief, surely thou art no longer walking in the
 way of love. Do not by that food of thine bring ruin
 on one for whom Christ died. Therefore, let not 16
 what is good in you be cause of reproach ; for the 17
 kingdom of God consists not in eating and drinking,
 but in righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy
 Spirit. For he that herein serveth Christ is acceptable 18
 unto God and approved by men. So then we follow³ 19

¹ See Galatians 6¹² ; Ephesians 2¹². ² A.V. adds, ' he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it.' ³ Some MSS., ' let us follow.'

- after whatever makes for peace and whatever tends
 20 to our mutual edification. Do not thou for food's
 sake overthrow the work of God. All things indeed
 are clean ; yet ill it is for the man whose eating
 21 causes stumbling. It is well not to eat flesh, nor to
 drink wine, nor to do anything whereat thy brother
 22 stumbleth. Thou, what faith thou hast, keep it to
 thyself before God. Happy is he who has no mis-
 23 givings about¹ what he approves. But he that hesi-
 tates stands condemned if he eat, in that he eats not
 in faith ; now whatever is not done in faith is sin.
- 15 But we, the strong, ought to bear the infirmities
 2 of the feeble, and not to please ourselves. Let each
 of us please his neighbour, as regards what is good,
 3 unto edification. For Christ indeed pleased not him-
 self ; but, as it is written, ' The reproaches of them
 4 that reproach thee fell upon me.' For whatsoever
 things were written aforetime were written for our
 instruction, that through steadfastness and through
 comfort of the scriptures we might hold our hope.
 5 But may the God of this steadfastness and this com-
 fort grant you to be of the same mind one with
 6 another, according to Christ Jesus ; that with one
 mind ye may with one mouth glorify the God and
 7 Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore receive
 one another, even as Christ received us,² to the
 8 glory of God. For I say that Christ, on behalf of
 God's truthfulness, has become a minister of the
 covenant of circumcision,³ that he may confirm
 the promises made to the forefathers, yet that
 9 the Gentiles may on mercy's behalf glorify God ;
 even as it is written, ' This is why I will give praise
 to thee among the Gentiles, and will sing to thy
 10 name.' And further it saith, ' Make merry, ye
 11 Gentiles, with his people.' And further,
 ' Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles ;
 . . . And let all the peoples praise him.'
- 12 And, further, Isaiah saith,
 ' There shall be the root of Jesse,
 And he that ariseth to rule over Gentiles ;
 On him shall Gentiles hope.'
- 13 Now may the God of that hope fill you with all

¹ Lit. judgeth not himself in. ² Some MSS., ' you.' ³ = a minister of the Jewish dispensation, see Galatians 4⁴. The words ' the covenant of ' are not in the original, but bring out its meaning.

joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in the hope, in power of the Holy Spirit.

Now I am persuaded, my brethren, even I myself, 14
 about you, that ye yourselves are brimming with
 goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to 15
 admonish one another. But I write to you the more
 boldly here and there, as putting you again in
 remembrance, because of the grace that was given 16
 me from God, that I should be a minister of Christ
 Jesus unto the Gentiles, doing the work of a priest
 with the gospel of God, that the offering up of the
 Gentiles may become acceptable, consecrated in the
 Holy Spirit.

I have therefore my own ground for glorying in 17
 Christ Jesus in things pertaining to God. For I will 18
 not make bold to speak of any of those things that
 Christ wrought not out through me myself, to bring
 about the obedience of the Gentiles, by word and
 deed, in the power of signs and wonders, in the 19
 power of the Holy Spirit ;¹ so that from Jerusalem,
 and round about, as far as to Illyricum, I have fully
 set forth the gospel of the Christ ; yet endeavouring 20
 so to preach the gospel, where Christ had not been
 named, that I might not build upon another man's
 foundation ; but, even as it is written, 21

‘ They shall see, to whom no announcement was
 made of him ;

And they that have not heard shall understand.’

This is why I was hindered these many times from 22
 coming unto you. But now as having no longer any 23
 scope in these regions, and having had for some
 years a longing to come unto you, whenever I may 24
 be journeying to Spain—for I hope to see you as
 I pass through, and by you to be sent forward thither,
 if of you I may first in some measure have my fill—
 but at present I am going to Jerusalem, ministering 25
 to the saints. For Macedonia and Achaia took 26
 delight in making some contribution for the poor
 among the saints in Jerusalem. They took delight, 27
 I say ; and their debtors they are. For if in their
 spiritual things the Gentiles shared, they in turn
 stand in debt to minister to them in the things of
 the flesh. Therefore when I have completed this 28

¹ Some MSS., ‘ of the Spirit of God.’

ROMANS 15, 16

work, and have insured to them this return, I will
 29 set out, by way of you, for Spain. Now I know
 that in coming unto you I shall come in the fullness
 of the blessing of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you; brethren, by our Lord
 Jesus Christ, and by the love of the Spirit, to
 contend together with me in your prayers unto God
 31 on my behalf, that I may be delivered from those in
 Judæa who are disobedient; and that my ministra-
 tion which is for Jerusalem may prove acceptable to
 32 the saints, that through the will of God I may come
 unto you in joy, and may together with you find rest.
 33 Now the God of peace be with you all ; Amen.

16 I commend to you Phœbe our sister, as one who
 2 ministers¹ to the church in Cenchrææ, that ye may
 receive her in the Lord, worthily of the saints, and
 may assist her in whatsoever matter she may have
 need of you ; for she herself hath been a helper to
 many, and to myself.

3 Salute Prisca and Aquila, my fellow-workers in
 4 Christ Jesus, who indeed for my life laid down their
 own necks ; unto whom not only I, but also all
 the churches of the Gentiles, give thanks ; and
 5 salute the church that meets at their house.

Salute Epænetus, my beloved, who is the first-fruit
 6 of the province of Asia unto Christ. Salute Mary,
 7 one who has bestowed much labour on you. Salute
 Andronicus and Junias,² my own countrymen³ and
 my fellow-prisoners, men who are of note among the
 apostles, who besides have been in Christ longer than
 8 I. Salute Ampliatus, my beloved in the Lord. Salute
 9 Urbanus, our fellow-worker in Christ ; and Stachys,
 10 my beloved. Salute Apelles, a man of approved
 worth in Christ. Salute them that are of the house-
 11 hold of Aristobulus. Salute Herodion, my own
 countryman. Salute such of the household of
 12 Narcissus as are in the Lord. Salute Tryphæna and
 Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute Persis,
 the beloved, one who has laboured much in the Lord.
 13 Salute Rufus, the chosen in the Lord, and her that is
 14 his mother and mine. Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon,

¹ Servant (A.V.). ² Or Junia. ³ Kinsmen (R.V.) and in 11, 21.

Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brethren that
are with them. Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus 15
and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints that
are with them. Salute one another with a holy kiss. 16
All the churches of Christ salute you.

Brethren, I exhort you, mark them that cause 17
dissensions and occasions of stumbling, contrary
to the instruction that you learnt ; and turn away 18
from them. For such persons serve not our
Lord Christ, but their own stomachs ; and by their
smooth and plausible speech they beguile the hearts
of the innocent. For your obedience has gone 19
abroad unto all men. Over you, therefore, I rejoice ;
yet I would have you wise as to what is good, but
simple as to what is evil. But the God of peace will 20
crush Satan under your feet shortly.

The grace of our Lord Jesus be with you.

Timothy, my fellow-worker, and Lucius, and 21
Jason, and Sósipater, my own countrymen, salute
you.—I, Tertius, the penman of this letter, salute 22
you in the Lord.—Gaius, host to me and to the whole 23
church, salutes you. Erastus, the treasurer of the
city,¹ greets you ; so does Quartus our brother.²

Now to him that is able to strengthen you in 25
accordance with my gospel and the preaching of
Jesus Christ, in accordance with the revelation of a
secret, which had been kept in silence during times
eternal, but now is manifested, and through pro- 26
phetic scriptures made known unto all the nations,
according to the commandment of the eternal God,
to bring about the obedience of faith ;³ to the only, 27
the wise, God, through Jesus Christ, to whom⁴ be
the glory for evermore ; Amen.⁵

¹ i. e. Corinth. ² Some MSS. add 24 : 'The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all, Amen'—and omit the similar sentence in 20. ³ Note to 1st. ⁴ Some MSS. omit 'to whom.' ⁵ Some MSS. put verses 25-27 at end of chapter 14.

THE LETTER TO THE COLOSSIANS

1 PAUL, apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of
2 God ; Paul and Timothy the brother, to the brethren
in Colossæ, saints and faithful in Christ ; Grace be
to you and peace from God our Father.

3 We give thanks always on your account to God
the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, in our prayers ;
4 having heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the
5 love that ye have for all the saints, by reason of
the hope that is laid up for you in heaven ; of
which hope ye heard in time past in the message of
6 the truth of the gospel, which has reached you, even
as it doth in you also, from the day ye heard of and
7 came to know the grace of God in truth ; even as ye
learnt it from Epaphras our beloved fellow-bondman,
who is a faithful minister of Christ on your¹ behalf,
8 who also made clear to us your love in the Spirit.

9 This is why we on our part, from the day we heard
of it, cease not to pray and to ask on your behalf,
that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will
10 in all spiritual wisdom and understanding, to walk
worthily of the Lord, to please him in all things,
in every good work bearing fruit, and growing by
11 your knowledge of God ; strengthened in all strength,
according to the might of his glory, unto all stead-
12 fastness and long-suffering ; with joy giving thanks
to the Father, who made you² meet to be partakers
13 of the saints' portion in the light ; who delivered us
out of the power of the darkness, and translated us
14 into the kingdom of the Son of his love,³ in whom
we have our redemption, the forgiveness of our sins ;

¹ Some MSS., 'our.' ² Some MSS., 'us.' ³ Cf. Ephesians 1⁴.

COLOSSIANS 1

who is the image of God the invisible, the firstborn¹ 15
 before every creature ; for in him were created all 16
 things, in the heavens and on the earth, things
 visible and things invisible, thrones, or authorities,
 or principalities, or powers ; all things have been
 created through him and unto him ; and he is before 17
 all things, and in him all things hold together. And 18
 he is the head of the body, the church ; he who is
 the origin, the firstborn from the dead, that in all
 things he may himself become pre-eminent ; for in 19
 him the whole Fullness ~~was~~ well pleased to make his
 dwelling,² and through him to reconcile all things 20
 unto himself, making peace through the blood of
 his cross ; through him, I say, whether things on the
 earth or things in the heavens. And you, alienated 21
 as ye once were and enemies in your mind in your
 evil works, ye³ now he hath reconciled⁴ in the body 22
 of his flesh, through his death, to present you holy
 and without blemish and unimpeachable before him-
 self ; if indeed ye hold on to your faith, grounded and 23
 steadfast, and not shifting from the hope of the
 gospel which ye heard, which has been preached in
 all creation under the heaven ; of which gospel I,
 Paul, became a minister.

I am rejoicing in my sufferings on your behalf, 24
 and I in turn am filling up in my flesh whatever is
 lacking in the afflictions of the Christ on behalf of his
 body, which is the church ; of which I became a 25
 minister, according to the stewardship of God which
 was given me for you, fully to set forth the word of 26
 God, the secret which for ages and generations
 has been hidden away ; but now it has been
 manifested to his saints, to whom God willed to 27
 make known among the Gentiles what is the riches
 of the glory of this secret, which is Christ in you,⁴
 the hope of glory ; whom we proclaim, admonishing 28
 every man, and teaching every man, in all wisdom,
 that we may present every man perfect in Christ ;
 whereunto I labour, contending according to his 29
 working which worketh in me in power.

¹ Firstborn in regard to all creation. See St. John 1¹⁴, where 'was before me' is literally 'was first of (as regards) me.' Cf. 'Begotten of his Father before all worlds' (Nicene Creed). ² It was the Father's good pleasure that in him should all the fullness dwell (R.V.); cf. 2⁹: (Fullness personified, as Power in St. Mark 14³¹). ³ Some MSS., 'ye are reconciled.' ⁴ Or among you.

COLOSSIANS 2

2 For I would have you know in how great a contest
 I am engaged for you and for those in Laodicea, and
 for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh ;
 2 that their hearts may be comforted, they being knit
 together in love and unto all riches of the full
 assurance of the understanding, unto the knowledge
 3 of the secret of God, even Christ ; wherein are all
 the treasures of wisdom and knowledge, hidden
 4 away. This I say, that no one may delude you with
 5 persuasive speech. For though in the flesh I am
 absent, yet in the spirit I am with you, joying and
 beholding your orderly array¹ and the firmness² of
 your faith towards Christ.
 6 Therefore, as ye received the Christ, Jesus the
 7 Lord, so walk in him, rooted and being built up in
 him, and established in your faith, even as ye were
 taught, abounding in thanksgiving.³
 8 Take heed lest there be any one to make you
 his prey through his ' philosophy ' and vain deceit,
 according to the tradition of men, according to the
 rudiments⁴ of the world, and not according to Christ.
 9 For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead
 10 bodily ; and in him ye are filled full, in him who is
 11 the head of every principality and power ; in whom
 ye were also circumcised with a circumcision not
 wrought by hand, in the putting off of the body of
 12 the flesh, in Christ's circumcision ;⁵ buried as ye
 were with him in your baptism, wherein ye also rose
 with him through your faith in the working of God,
 13 who raised him from the dead. And you, dead as ye
 were through your trespasses and the uncircumcision
 of your flesh, you he brought to life together with him,⁶
 14 forgiving us all our trespasses, blotting out⁷ the bond
 that by its ordinances was against us, which was
 adverse to us. And he⁸ hath taken it out of the way,
 15 nailing it to the cross ; having put off from himself⁹
 the principalities and the powers,¹⁰ he made a show of
 them openly, leading them in triumph¹¹ thereon.¹²

¹ Or line of battle (acies). ² Same word as ' firmament ' in Genesis 1⁶.
³ Some MSS., ' abounding therein with thanksgiving.' ⁴ Galatians 4⁹.
⁵ ' The true circumcision of the Spirit ; our hearts and all our members
 mortified from all worldly and carnal lusts ' (Prayer Book). ⁶ *i.e.* Jesus
 Christ. ⁷ Or cancelling. ⁸ Or having disarmed the principalities, etc.
⁹ Ephesians 6¹². ¹⁰ As conquered foes : cf. 2 Corinthians 2¹⁴. ¹¹ A
 difficult verse ; apparently angels were regarded as having been
 employed in founding the Mosaic ordinances (Acts 7⁴³, Galatians 3¹⁰,
 Hebrews 2²) and as being hostile to their being done away in Christ.

COLOSSIANS 2, 3

Therefore let not any one judge you about eating 16
 and about drinking, or in respect of a festival or a 17
 new moon or a sabbath ;¹ which things are a shadow
 of those to come ; but the substance is with Christ.
 Let no one condemn you in his own self-will with 18
 humility and worshipping of the angels, dwelling
 upon his visions, rashly puffed up by the mind of
 his flesh, and not holding fast the Head,² out of whom 19
 the whole body, through its contacts and ligaments
 being supplied and knit together, groweth with the
 growth of God.

If ye died with Christ to the rudiments of the 20
 world, why, as if living in the world, do ye subject
 yourselves to ordinances, ' Handle thou not, nor 21
 taste, nor touch '—things that must all perish 22
 in the consuming—according to the precepts and
 teachings of men? ordinances such as are of no 23
 value against indulgence of the flesh, though having
 a repute for wisdom in self-imposed worship, and
 humility, and hard treatment of the body.

Therefore, if ye rose together with Christ, seek the 3
 things that are above, where Christ is at the right hand
 of God, seated. Have your minds set on the things 2
 that are above, not on the things that are upon the
 earth. For ye died, and your life is hidden with Christ 3
 in God. When Christ, our life, shall be manifested, 4
 then you also with him will be manifested in glory.

Put to death therefore your members which are 5
 upon the earth ; fornication, uncleanness, passion,
 evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry ; on 6
 account of which things the anger of God cometh ;³
 wherein you also walked in time past, when ye 7
 were living in these things. But now, in your turn, 8
 lay them all aside ; anger, wrath, malice, slander,
 abusive language out of your mouths ; lie not one 9
 to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man
 with its doings, and have put on the new man, 10
 which is being renewed unto knowledge, according
 to the image of him that created him ; where there
 are not Greek and Jew, circumcision and uncircum- 11
 cision, barbarian, Scythian, bondman, freeman ;
 but Christ is all, and in all.

¹ Isaiah 1st. ² In verse 18 R.V. gives, ' Let no one rob you of your
 prize ' ; and some MSS. read, ' dwelling upon what he has not seen '
 (has imagined). ³ Some MSS. add, ' upon the sins of disobedience.'

COLOSSIANS 3, 4

12 Put on therefore, as God's chosen, holy and
 13 beloved, a heart of mercy, kindness, humility, meek-
 14 ness, long-suffering ; bearing one with another and
 15 forgiving each other, if any one hath a complaint
 16 against any ; even as the Lord¹ forgave you, so also
 17 do you. But over all these things put on love, which
 18 is the bond of perfectness. And let the peace of
 19 Christ rule² in your hearts, into which also ye were
 20 called in one body ; and show yourselves thankful.
 21 Let the word of Christ³ dwell in you richly, in all
 22 wisdom ; teaching and admonishing one another by
 23 psalms, hymns, spiritual songs, with thanksgiving,⁴
 24 singing in your hearts unto God. And whatso-
 25 ever ye do, in word or in deed, do all in the name
 of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father
 through him.

18 Wives, subject yourselves to your husbands, as is
 19 fitting in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and
 be not embittered against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things ; for this
 21 is well-pleasing in the Lord. Fathers, irritate not
 your children ; lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants,⁵ obey in all things your earthly masters⁶ ;
 23 not with acts of eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in
 24 singleness of heart, fearing the Lord. Whatsoever
 ye do, work at it heartily, as unto the Lord and not
 25 unto men ; knowing that from the Lord ye will
 receive the inheritance as your recompense. Christ
 is the Master ye serve. For he that doeth wrong
 will get back the wrong he did, and there is no
 4 respect of persons. Masters, show to your servants⁷
 justice and fairness ; knowing that you also have
 a Master in heaven.

2 Continue steadfastly in prayer, watching therein
 3 with thanksgiving ; at the same time praying for
 us also, that God may open unto us a door for the
 word, to speak the secret of Christ, for which I am
 4 now in bonds ; that I may manifest it even as I
 5 ought to speak. Walk in wisdom as regards out-
 6 siders, securing⁷ the opportunity. Let your speech

¹ Some authorities, 'even as Christ.' ² Or be arbiter. ³ Some MSS., 'the Lord' ; others, 'God.' ⁴ Or in the grace. ⁵ Lit. bondmen. ⁶ Or lords. ⁷ Lit. buying up for yourselves.

COLOSSIANS 4

be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer each.

All that concerns me, Tychicus, the beloved brother and faithful minister and fellow-bondman in the Lord, will tell you ; whom I am sending unto you for this very purpose, that ye may know how we fare, and that he may comfort your hearts ; together with Onesimus, the faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They will tell you of everything here.

Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, salutes you ; so does Mark, Barnabas's cousin (concerning whom ye received directions ; if he come unto you, welcome him) ; and so does Jesus, who is called Justus ; of men circumcised these only are my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, men who have been a comfort to me. Epaphras, who is one of you, a bondman of Christ Jesus, salutes you, always contending for you in his prayers, that ye may stand fast, perfect and fully persuaded in all the will of God. For I bear him witness that he labours much for you and for those in Laodicea and for those in Hierapolis. Luke, the physician, the beloved, salutes you ; so does Demas. Salute the brethren in Laodicea, and Nympha,¹ and the church that meets at her² house. And when this letter has been read among you, see that it be read in the church of the Laodiceans also, and that you also read the letter coming from Laodicea. And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou receivedst in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

The salutation of me Paul by my own hand. Remember my bonds.

The grace be with you.

¹ Or Nymphas (man's name). ² Some MSS., 'their.'

THE LETTER TO PHILEMON

1 PAUL, prisoner of Christ Jesus ; Paul and Timothy
2 the brother, to Philemon our beloved and fellow-
3 worker, and to Apphia our sister, and to Archippus
4 our fellow-soldier, and to the church that meets at
5 thy house ; Grace be to you and peace from God
6 our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

7 I thank my God always, making mention of thee
8 in my prayers, as I hear of thy love and faith which
9 thou hast towards the Lord Jesus and for all the
10 saints ; that the fellowship of thy faith may become
11 effective, in knowledge of every good thing that is
12 in us,¹ unto Christ. For I found much joy and
13 comfort in thy love, because the hearts of the saints
14 have been refreshed through thee, brother.

15 Wherefore, though I might with much confidence
16 in Christ enjoin on thee what is befitting, for the
17 love's sake, I rather beseech—being such a one as
18 Paul, an old man,² but now a prisoner also of Christ
19 Jesus—I beseech thee for my child, whom I have
20 begotten in my bonds, Onesimus,³ who once was
21 useless to thee, but now is right useful, both to thee
22 and to me ; whom I am sending back to thee, him-
23 self, that is, my very heart ; whom I was wishing
24 to keep with me, that on thy behalf he might
25 minister to me while I am in bonds for the gospel ;
26 but without thy consent I was unwilling to do
27 anything ; that thy kindness should not be as it
28 were of constraint, but of free will. For perhaps
29 to this end he was parted for a while, that thou
30 shouldst have him back for ever ; no longer as a
31 bondman, but more than a bondman, a brother
32 beloved, especially by me, but how much more by

¹ Some MSS., 'in you.' ² Or an ambassador (of Christ), Ephesians
6²⁰. ³ The name Onesimus means Helpful.

PHILEMON

thee, both in the flesh and in the Lord. Therefore, 17
if thou countest me a partner, take him unto thee
as myself. But if he hath wronged thee at all, or 18
oweth thee anything, put it to my account ; I, Paul, 19
write it with my own hand, I will repay it ; not to
say to thee, that thou owest me even thine own self
besides. Yea, brother, let me have help of thee in the 20
Lord ; refresh my heart in Christ.

Trusting in thy compliance I am writing to thee, 21
knowing that thou wilt do even beyond what I say.
But withal provide for me hospitality also ; for 22
I hope that through your prayers I shall be granted
unto you.

There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in 23
Christ Jesus, Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my 24
fellow-workers.

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your 25
spirits.¹

¹ See Appendix I.

THE LETTER TO THE EPHESIANS

- 1 PAUL, apostle of Christ Jesus, through the will of
God, to the saints that are in Ephesus¹ and faithful
2 in Christ Jesus ; Grace be to you and peace from
God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus
Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessing
4 in the heavenly places in Christ ; even as he chose
us out in him before the foundation of the world,
5 that we should be holy and without blemish before
him ; having in love foreordained us unto adoption
6 as sons through Jesus Christ unto himself, according
to the good pleasure of his will, to the praise of the
7 glory of his grace, which grace he bestowed on us
in the Beloved ;² in whom we have our redemption
8 through his blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses,
according to the riches of his grace ; which he made
9 to abound towards us in all wisdom and prudence,
making known to us the secret of his will,³ accord-
10 ing to his good pleasure which he purposed in him,
for a dispensation⁴ of the fullness of the seasons,
to sum up all things in the Christ, the things in the
11 heavens, and the things on the earth ; in him, in
whom we were also made God's portion,⁵ fore-
ordained according to the purpose of him who
worketh all things according to the counsel of
12 his will ; in order that we should serve to the
praise of his glory, we who have been the first to
13 hope in the Christ ; in whom you also, when ye heard
the word of the truth, the gospel of your salvation—
in whom having also had faith, ye were sealed with

¹ The two oldest MSS. (Sinaiticus and Vaticanus) omit the words 'in Ephesus.' The epistle may have been designed for several churches, with a blank left to be filled up, in different copies, with a different name. ² St. John 3¹⁶; Colossians 1¹². ³ Sacramentum voluntatis suae (Vulgate). ⁴ Or to be dispensed (administered). ⁵ Deuteronomy 9¹⁰; Zechariah 2¹².

EPHESIANS 1, 2

the Spirit of the promise, the Holy Spirit, which is 14
the earnest of our inheritance, unto the redemption
of God's own possession,¹ to the praise of his glory.

This is why I, indeed, on hearing of the faith that 15
is among you in the Lord Jesus, and of the love²
that ye have for all the saints, cease not to give 16
thanks on your behalf, making mention of you in my
prayers, that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the 17
Father of the Glory, may give you the Spirit of wis-
dom and of revelation, in knowledge of himself ;
having the eyes of your hearts enlightened, to the end 18
that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, what
the riches of the glory of his inheritance³ among the
saints, and what the exceeding greatness of his 19
strength in regard to us who have faith, according to
the working⁴ of the power of his might, which he 20
hath wrought⁴ in the Christ, in raising him from the
dead and seating him at his right hand in the heavenly
places, above every principality and authority and 21
power and dominion and every name that is named,
not only in this age, but also in that which is to come ;
and he put all things in subjection under his feet, 22
and he gave him to be head over all things to the
church, which indeed is his body, the fullness⁵ of 23
him who all in all is receiving his fullness.⁶

And you, dead as ye were through your trespasses 2
and sins, wherein once ye walked according to the 2
course of this world, according to the prince of the
power of the air, of the spirit which now worketh
in the sons of disobedience ; wherein⁷ all we our- 3
selves also once lived in the lusts of our flesh,
carrying out the wills of the flesh and of the thoughts,
and were by nature children of wrath, even as
the rest—God, I say, being rich in mercy, because 4
of his great love wherewith he loved us, even
when we were dead through our trespasses, brought 5
us to life together with⁸ the Christ (by grace ye
have been saved) and raised us with him, and 6
seated us with him in the heavenly places, in Christ

¹ St. Peter 2⁹. ² Some MSS. omit the last three words. ³ The inheritance may be called God's as the giver, ours as the receivers. As our Father never dies, the inheritance never passes away from him ; nevertheless, we succeed to the full possession of it. ⁴ Lit. energy, energised. ⁵ Or completion. ⁶ That filleth all in all (A.V.) ; qui omnia in omnibus adimpletur (Vulgate) ; contrast Philipians 2⁷ ; and of Colossians 1²⁴. ⁷ Or among whom ; *in* in which (men or things). ⁸ Some MSS., 'in.'

EPHESIANS 2, 3

7 Jesus ; that in the ages to come he might show forth
 the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness towards
 8 us in Christ Jesus. For by grace ye have been
 saved through faith ; and that not of yourselves—
 9 God's gift it is—not of works, that no one should
 10 glory. For his workmanship we are, created in
 Christ Jesus unto good works, which God prepared
 beforehand, that in them we should walk.

11 Wherefore remember that in time past you, the
 Gentiles in the flesh (who are called ' The Uncircum-
 cision ' by that which is called ' The Circumcision,'
 12 wrought by hand, in the flesh) ; that ye were at that
 time without any Christ, alienated¹ from the
 commonwealth of Israel, and strangers to the
 covenants of the promise, having no hope and with-
 13 out God in the world. But, as it is, in Christ Jesus,
 you, who once were far off, were brought near in the
 14 blood of the Christ. For he is our peace, he that
 made both one, and broke down the partition wall,
 15 the fence, even the enmity ; in his flesh doing away
 with the law of the commandments expressed in
 ordinances ;² that he might create the two in him-
 16 self into one new man, making peace ; and might
 reconcile them both in one body unto God through
 17 the cross, slaying the enmity thereon.³ And he
 came and preached good tidings of peace to you who
 were far off, and of peace to them that were near ;
 18 seeing that through him we both have our access in
 one Spirit unto the Father.

19 So then ye are no longer strangers and sojourners,
 but are fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the
 20 household of God, having been built up upon the
 foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus
 21 himself being the corner-stone ; in whom all that is
 built,⁴ fitly framed together, is growing into a sanc-
 22 tuary, holy in the Lord ; in whom you also are being
 built together into a habitation of God, in the Spirit.

3 This is why I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus in
 2 behalf of you the Gentiles⁵—if indeed ye have heard
 of the dispensation of the grace of God, the grace
 3 given me for you, how that by revelation was made
 known to me the secret (even as I wrote above, in

¹ By God's own action, choosing one nation for intensive training (W. Lock). ² Cf. Colossians 2¹⁴. ³ Or is himself. ⁴ Some render ' every building.' ⁵ Sentence resumed and completed in 14, etc. —

EPHESIANS 3

brief, whereby ye can, as ye read, perceive my 4
 understanding in the secret of the Christ; which 5
 secret in other generations was not made known
 to the sons of men, as now it hath been revealed to
 his holy apostles and prophets, in the Spirit); the 6
 secret that the Gentiles are joint-heirs, and joined
 into one body, and joint-partakers of the promise
 in Christ Jesus through the gospel; of which I 7
 became a minister, according to the gift of the grace
 of God, the grace given me in accordance with
 the working of his power. To me, the less than least 8
 of all saints, was given this grace, to preach to the 9
 Gentiles good tidings of the unfathomable riches¹
 of the Christ, and to bring to light² what is the
 dispensation of the secret which for ages has been
 hidden away in God who created all things; to 10
 the intent that now to the principalities and the
 powers in the heavenly places may be made known
 through the church the manifold wisdom of God,
 according to the purpose of the ages,³ which purpose 11
 he formed⁴ in the Christ, Jesus our Lord; in whom 12
 we have our boldness and access in confidence
 through our faith in him; wherefore I beg you not 13
 to lose heart amid my tribulations on your behalf,
 seeing that they are your glory.

This is why I bow my knees unto the Father 14
 (from whom every family in heaven and on earth 15
 takes its name), that he may grant to you, according 16
 to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with
 power through his Spirit in the inner man, that the 17
 Christ may make his dwelling, through faith, in your
 hearts; ye having been rooted and grounded in
 love, that ye may be able to comprehend with all 18
 the saints what is the breadth and length and height
 and depth, and to know the love of Christ which 19
 passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled up to all
 the fullness of God.

Now to him who over all things has power to do 20
 abundantly beyond what we ask or think, according
 to the power that worketh in us, to him be the glory 21
 in the church and in Christ Jesus, unto all the
 generations for evermore;⁵ Amen.

¹ Romans 11²². ² Some MSS., 'and to make all men see.' ³ *Lit.*
 a purpose of the ages. ⁴ *Or* carried out. ⁵ *Lit.* generations of the age
 of the ages.

EPHESIANS 4

- 4 I therefore exhort you, I the prisoner in the Lord,
to walk worthily of the calling wherewith ye were
called, with all humility and meekness, with long-
3 suffering, bearing one with another in love ; giving
diligence to keep the oneness of the Spirit in the
4 bond of peace. One body, and one Spirit, even as
also ye were called in one hope of your calling ;
5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and
6 Father of all, who is over all, and throughout all,
7 and in all. But to each of us the grace was given
according to the measure of the gift of Christ.
8 Wherefore it saith,
 ‘ Ascending on high, he led into captivity a host
 of captives ;¹
 He gave gifts to mankind.’
- 9 Now that he ascended, what means it but that he
descended also into the lower regions of the earth ?
10 He that descended, he it is also that ascended above
11 all the heavens, that he might fill all things. And
he it is that gave some, apostles ; some, prophets ;
12 some, evangelists ; some, pastors and teachers, for
the fitting out of the saints unto the work of minis-
13 tering, unto the building up of the body of Christ ;
till we all attain unto the oneness of the faith and
of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a full-
grown man, unto the measure of the stature of the
14 fullness of Christ ; that we no longer may be
children, tossed by waves, and carried about by every
wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, by crafti-
15 ness, according to the wiles of error ; but, dealing
truly in love, may grow up in all things unto him
16 who is the head, even Christ ; out of whom the whole
body, framed and knit together through every con-
tact with its supply, according to the working in due
measure of each several part, bringeth about the
growth of the body unto the building up of itself
in love.
- 17 This therefore I say ; and I charge you in the Lord,
that ye walk no longer as the Gentiles walk, in the
18 vanity of their mind ; darkened in their under-
standing, alienated from the life of God, because of
the ignorance that is in them by reason of the
19 blindness of their hearts ; who being past feeling²
gave themselves up to wantonness, unto working of

¹ The enemies of Israel, Psalm 68 ²⁰. ² ‘ Desperantes ’ (Vulgate).

all uncleanness in greediness. But not so did you
 learn the Christ ; if indeed it was he that ye heard,
 and in him that ye were taught, even as he is in truth,
 in Jesus ;¹ that ye put away, as concerning your
 former manner of life, the old man which groweth
 corrupt according to the lusts of Deceit ; yea, that ye
 become renewed in the spirit of your mind, and put
 on the new man, which has been created according to
 God's will in righteousness and holiness of the truth.

Wherefore, putting away all falsehood, speak
 truth each with his neighbour ; because we are
 members one of another. Be angry, yet sin not ;
 let not the sun go down on your angry mood ; and
 make no way for the devil. Let him that stealeth
 steal no more ; but rather let him labour, working
 with his own hands whatever is good, that he may
 be able to impart to him that is in need. Let no
 foul talk proceed out of your mouths, but whatever
 is good for the improvement of the occasion, that
 it may benefit the hearers. And grieve not the
 Spirit, the Holy Spirit of God, in whom ye were
 sealed unto the day of redemption. Let all bitter-
 ness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and
 slander, be put away from you, with all malice ; but
 be kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving
 each other, even as God in Christ forgave you.
 Become therefore imitators of God, as children
 beloved ; and walk in the way of love, even as Christ
 loved you, and gave himself up for us, an offering and
 a sacrifice to God for a savour of a sweet odour.

But, as becometh saints, let not fornication, and all
 uncleanness or covetousness, even be mentioned
 among you ; filthiness too, and foolish talking or
 ribaldry, which things are not befitting ; but rather
 giving of thanks. For this ye know of a surety, that
 no fornicator, nor unclean person, nor covetous one
 (which means an idolater), hath any part in the king-
 dom of Christ and of God. Let no one deceive you
 with empty words ; for because of these things
 the anger of God cometh upon the sons of dis-
 obedience. Therefore be not partakers with them ;
 for in time past ye were darkness, but now in the
 Lord ye are light ; walk as children of light (for the

¹ Or even as is truth in Jesus ; text—the expected Christ is found
 in Jesus.

EPHESIANS 5

fruit of the light is in all goodness and righteousness
 10 and truth), discerning what is acceptable unto the
 11 Lord. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful
 12 works of the darkness, but rather expose them ; for of
 the things that are done by them in secret, it is shame-
 13 ful even to speak. But all things when they are exposed
 by the light are made manifest ; for every thing that
 14 is made manifest is light. Wherefore it¹ saith,

‘ Awake, sleeper !

And arise from the dead,

And Christ will shine upon thee.’²

15 Take careful heed, therefore, how ye walk, not as
 16 unwise, but as wise ; securing the opportunity,
 17 because the days are evil. Wherefore be not foolish,
 18 but understand what the will of the Lord is. And
 get not drunk with wine, wherein is riot ; but be
 19 filled in spirit,³ speaking to each other in psalms
 and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making
 20 melody with your hearts to the Lord ; giving thanks
 always for all things in the name of our Lord Jesus
 21 Christ to the God and Father, subjecting yourselves
 one to another in the fear of Christ.

22 Wives, subject yourselves to your husbands, as
 23 to the Lord ; because a husband is head of his wife,
 as also Christ is head of the church, being himself
 24 the saviour of the body. But as the church is subject
 to Christ, so also let wives be to their husbands in
 everything.

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as also Christ
 26 loved the church and gave himself up for it ; that he
 might sanctify it, cleansing it by the washing⁴ of the
 27 water with uttered words ; that he might himself
 present to himself the church, glorious, not having
 spot or wrinkle or any such thing ; but that it should
 28 be holy and without blemish. Even thus ought
 husbands also to love their wives as their own bodies.
 29 He that loveth his wife loveth himself ; for no one
 ever hated his own flesh ; but he nourisheth and
 30 cherisheth it, even as Christ the church ; because we
 31 are members of his body. For this cause a man shall
 leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his
 32 wife ; and the two shall become one flesh. This
 secret is profound ; but I am speaking of Christ

¹ Perhaps an early church hymn. ² Some authorities, ‘ And thou shalt touch Christ.’ ³ Or with the Spirit. ⁴ Or bath.

and of the church. Yet you also, one by one, let
each love his wife even as his own self ; but the wife,
let her see that she fear her husband. 33

Children, obey your parents, in the Lord ; for
this is right. Honour thy father and thy mother, 6
for such is the first commandment with a promise, 2
' that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest 3
live long on the land.'

And, ye fathers, provoke not your children ; but 4
nurture them in the discipline and admonition of
the Lord.

Servants,¹ obey your earthly masters,² with fear 5
and trembling, in singleness of heart, as obeying the
Christ ; not in the way of eye-service, as men- 6
pleasers, but as servants¹ of Christ, doing the will of 7
God, giving service from the heart with goodwill, as
to the Lord, and not to men ; knowing that whatso- 8
ever good thing each doeth, the same he will get back
from the Lord, whether he is bond or free.

And, ye masters, deal with them in the same way, 9
forbearing threatening ; knowing that their Master,
who is also your Master, is in heaven, and with him
there is no respect of persons.

¶ Further, be strengthened in the Lord and in the 10
power of his might. Put on the whole armour³ 11
of God, that ye may be able to stand against the
wiles of the devil ; because our wrestling is not 12
against flesh and blood, but against the principalities,
against the powers, against the rulers of the darkness
of this world, against the spiritual forces of wicked-
ness in the heavenly places. Wherefore take up the 13
whole armour of God, that ye may be able to with-
stand in the evil day, and, having done all, to stand.
Take your stand, therefore, having your loins girt 14
about with truth, and having put on the breast-plate
of righteousness, and having shod your feet with the 15
preparedness⁴ of the gospel of peace, taking up withal 16
the shield of faith, wherewith ye will be able to
quench all the fiery darts of the evil one ; and receive 17
the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit
(which is the word of God) ; with all prayer and 18
supplication praying at all seasons in the Spirit, and

¹ *Lit.* bondmen. ² *Or* lords. ³ *Lit.* the pancely (the whole equipment of a soldier prepared for battle) ; *Wisdom of Solomon* 5²⁷⁻³⁰. ⁴ The mind and heart alert and ready to know and do God's will ; Here am I, send me.

EPHESIANS 6

keeping watch thereunto in all perseverance and
19 supplication for all the saints ; and on my behalf,
that utterance may be given me, in opening my
mouth,¹ with boldness to make known the secret
20 of the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in
chains ; that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought
to speak.

21 That you also may know what concerns me, how
I do, Tychicus, the beloved brother and faithful
minister in the Lord, will tell you everything² ;
22 I am sending him unto you for this very purpose,
that ye may know how we fare, and that he may
comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith,
from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 The grace be with all them that love our Lord
Jesus Christ in incorruption.³

¹ Cf. Psalm 51 ⁴ ; Ezekiel 33 ²² ; Colossians 4 ². ² See Colossians 4 ⁷,
³ With love incorruptible (American Revision).

THE LETTER TO THE PHILIPPIANS

PAUL and Timothy, bondmen of Christ Jesus, to all the saints in Christ Jesus that are in Philippi, overseers¹, deacons², and all ; Grace be to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

I thank my God upon all my remembrance of you (always in all supplication of mine on behalf of you all making that supplication with joy) for your fellowship in spreading the gospel from the first day until now ; (being confident of this very thing, that he that began in-you a good work will carry it on until the day of Christ Jesus ;) even as it is right for me to be of this mind concerning you all, because I have you in my heart, inasmuch as, both in my bonds and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, you all are partakers with me in the grace. For God is my witness, how I long after you all in the heart of Christ Jesus. And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and all perception, so that ye may distinguish what things are essential ;³ that ye may be pure and clear of offence, in view of the day of Christ, having been filled with fruit of righteousness, that which comes through Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God.

Now I would have you know, brethren, that what happened to me has turned out rather to the progress of the gospel, so that my bonds became manifest in Christ throughout the Imperial Guard,⁴ and everywhere else ; and that most of the brethren, made confident in the Lord by my bonds, are more abundantly bold to speak without fear the word of God. Some indeed even from envy and strife, and some from good will, preach the Christ ; the one party out of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the

¹ See note, Acts 20¹⁷. ² Or ministers, assistants. ³ Or approve the things that excel. ⁴ *Lit.* In the whole Prætorium (in all the palace A. V.).

PHILIPPIANS 1, 2

17 gospel ; the other out of factiousness proclaim the
 Christ, not sincerely, thinking to raise up affliction
 18 for me in my bonds. What of this? only that in
 every way, whether in pretence or in truth, Christ is
 proclaimed ; and in this I rejoice, yea, and I shall
 19 rejoice. For I know that this will turn out for me
 unto salvation, through your supplication and the
 20 supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, according to my
 eager expectation and hope, that in nothing I shall
 be put to shame, but that in all boldness, as always,
 so now also, Christ will be magnified in my body,
 21 whether through life or through death. For to me,
 22 to live is Christ, and to die is gain. But if I am to
 live in the flesh, this brings me fruit of work ; and
 23 what shall my choice be? I do not tell. But I am
 in a strait between the two,¹ having the desire to
 24 set out and to be with Christ, for it is very far better ;
 yet, to hold on to the flesh is more necessary for your
 25 sake. And being confident of this, I know that I shall
 hold on, yea, hold on with you all, for your progress
 26 and joy in the faith ; that in me your glorying may
 abound in Christ Jesus, through my coming to you
 27 again. Only let your conduct be worthy² of the
 gospel of Christ ; that whether I come and see you,
 or remain absent, I may hear how you fare, that ye
 stand fast in one spirit, with one soul striving
 28 together with the faith³ of the gospel, and not
 scared in anything by the adversaries ; seeing that
 this is to them a manifest token of perdition, but of
 29 your salvation, and that from God ; because to you
 it was granted, on behalf of Christ, not only to have
 30 faith in him, but also to suffer on his behalf, while
 engaged in the same conflict in which ye once saw
 me, and now hear that I am.

2 Therefore if there is any comfort in Christ, if any
 consolation of love, if any fellowship of spirit,⁴ if any
 2 tender mercies and compassions, fill up my joy, that
 ye may be of the same mind, having the same love,
 3 united in soul, being of one mind ; doing nothing in
 the way of factiousness or of vainglory, but in your
 humility each counting others superior to himself ;

¹ The hour of departure has arrived and we go our ways—I (Socrates) to die, and you to live. Which is better, God only knows. (Plato *Apology*, p. 42). ² *Lit.* live as citizens worthily. ³ Or striving in concert for the faith. ⁴ Of the Spirit (A.V.).

PHILIPPIANS 2

not looking one and all to their own interests, but 4
 one and all to the interests of others also. Have this 5
 mind in you, which was also in Christ Jesus ; who, 6
 existing in the form of God, did not regard his
 equality with God as a prize, but took the form of a 7
 bondman, and emptied himself,¹ coming into the
 likeness of men ; and found in fashion as a man, 8
 he humbled himself, becoming obedient even up
 to death, yea, death on a cross. Wherefore God 9
 highly exalted him, and granted him the name that
 is above every other name ; that in the name of 10
 Jesus every knee should bow, of beings in heaven and
 beings on earth and beings under the earth, and that 11
 every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is
 Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Wherefore, my beloved, even as ye always obeyed, 12
 work out, not as in my presence only, but now much
 more in my absence, your own salvation with fear 13
 and trembling ; for it is God who worketh in you
 to will and also to work, for his good pleasure.
 Do all things without murmurings and disputings, 14
 that ye may become blameless and without guile, 15
 children of God, without blemish in the midst of a
 crooked and perverse generation, among whom ye
 appear as light-givers in the world, holding forth 16
 the word of life ; that I may have whereof to glory
 in view of the day of Christ, that not in vain I ran,
 neither in vain laboured. Yea, and if I am poured 17
 out as a drink-offering upon the sacrifice and service
 of your faith, I joy, and rejoice with you all ; and 18
 in the same manner joy ye, and rejoice with me.

But I hope, in the Lord Jesus, shortly to send 19
 Timothy unto you, that I also may be of good cheer,
 knowing how you fare. For I have no one like- 20
 minded, such that he will genuinely care how you
 fare. For they all seek their own, not the things of 21
 Christ Jesus. But ye know how he was tested ; that 22
 as child serves father, so he served with me in
 spreading the gospel. Him therefore I hope to send 23
 forthwith, as soon as I see how it will go with me ; 24
 but I trust in the Lord that I myself also shall come
 shortly. But I think it necessary to send unto 25

¹ Thought it not robbery to be equal with God (A.V.). ² Made himself of no reputation (A.V.), cf. Ephesians 1²⁰, and 2 Corinthians 8³.

PHILIPPIANS 2, 3

you Epaphroditus, my brother and fellow-worker
 and fellow-soldier, but your delegate¹ and minister
 26 to my need ; since he was longing after² you all, and
 sore troubled because ye heard that he fell sick.
 27 For indeed he fell sick, almost unto death ; but God
 had mercy on him, yet not on him only, but on me
 also, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow.
 28 Therefore I am the more eager to send him, that
 seeing him ye may again rejoice, and that I may be
 29 less sorrowful. Receive him therefore in the Lord
 30 with all joy ; and hold such men in honour, because
 for the work of Christ³ he drew nigh unto death,
 hazarding his life, that he might supply what was
 lacking in your service towards me.

3 Further, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To
 write the same things to you as before, to me is not
 2 irksome, while for you it is safe. Beware of the
 dogs, beware of the evil workers, beware of the
 3 mutilated !⁴ For we are The Circumcision,⁵ we
 who worship by the Spirit of God, and glory in
 Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh ;
 4 though for my part I might have confidence even in
 the flesh. If any other thinks he may have confi-
 5 dence in the flesh, yet more may I ; circumcised
 when eight days old, of the race of Israel, of the tribe
 of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrew descent ; in regard
 6 to law, a Pharisee ; in regard to zeal, a persecutor of
 the church ; in regard to righteousness (such as is
 7 in law), found blameless. But such things as were
 gains to me, these for Christ's sake I have counted as
 8 loss. Nay more, I even count all things to be loss
 by reason of the surpassing worth of the knowledge
 of Christ Jesus my Lord ; for whose sake I suffered
 loss of them all, yea, I count them as refuse, that I
 9 may win Christ, and be found in him, not having a
 righteousness of my own, that which is from law,
 but having that which is through faith in Christ,
 the righteousness that is from God, grounded on
 10 faith ; that I may know him, and the power of his
 resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings ;
 11 becoming conformed to his death, if by any means I
 12 may attain unto the resurrection from the dead. Not

¹ *lit.* apostle. ² Some MSS., 'longing to see.' ³ Some MSS., 'of the Lord.' ⁴ 1 Kings 18²⁸ (LXX). ⁵ See note to Galatians 2⁷.

PHILIPPIANS 3, 4

that I have already obtained, or already have been
made perfect ; but I follow on, if so be that I may
lay hold on that for which also I was laid hold on by
Christ Jesus. Brethren, I reckon not myself to have 13
laid hold yet ; but one thing I do—forgetting the
things behind, and stretching forward unto the 14
things in front, towards the goal I follow on, unto the
prize whereto God calls us upwards in Christ Jesus.
Let us therefore, as many as are full grown,¹ be of 15
this mind ; and if in any thing ye are otherwise
minded, this also God will reveal to you ; only, 16
whatever standard we have reached, by the same
order your steps.²

Brethren, become imitators together of me, and 17
mark them that so walk, even as ye have us for an
example. For many walk, of whom I told you often, 18
but now tell you even weeping, the enemies of the
cross of Christ, men whose end is perdition, whose 19
god is the stomach, and whose glory is in their shame,
who mind the things of earth. For our common- 20
wealth is in heaven, whence also we wait for a
Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will refashion 21
the body of our humiliation, conforming it to the
body of his glory, according to the working whereby
he is able even to subject all things unto himself.

Wherefore, my brethren, beloved and longed for, 4
my joy and my crown, stand fast thus in the Lord,
beloved.

I exhort Euodia, and I exhort Syntyche, to be of 2
the same mind in the Lord. Yea, I pray thee also, 3
Synzygus, true yoke-fellow,³ help them, seeing that
they strove together with me in the gospel, with
Clement also and the rest of my fellow-workers,
whose names are in the book of life.

Rejoice in the Lord always ; again I will say, 4
Rejoice. Let your kindness⁴ be known to all men. 5
The Lord is at hand. Be not anxious about any- 6
thing, but in every thing by your prayer and your
supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be

¹ Or perfect. ² Or let us order our steps. ³ The Greek gives for the preceding three words two only, one of which may be a proper noun (not elsewhere found ; which is really no objection), or a common noun (meaning, yoke-fellow). As an anonymous reference seems improbable, take the phrase as—Synzygus truly so called. Cf. Philemon 2. ⁴ Sweet reasonableness (M. Arnold).

PHILIPPIANS 4

7 made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, will guard your hearts and your thoughts in Christ Jesus.

8 Further, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are seemly,¹ whatsoever things are righteous, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report, whatsoever excellence there is, whatever is praised ; consider these things. Whatever ye learnt and received and heard and saw in me, practise these things ; and the God of peace will be with you.

10 I rejoice in the Lord greatly, that now at length ye have shot forth afresh in your thought for me ; in which matter ye indeed had thought, but ye lacked opportunity. Not that I speak in respect of want ; for I have learnt, in whatsoever state I am, therein to be content.² I know how to be humbled, and I know also how to use abundance ; in everything and in all things I possess the secret,³ both how to be satisfied and how to be hungry, both how to use abundance, and how to suffer want. For all things I have strength in him that enableth me. Yet ye did well in having fellowship with my affliction. But, Philippians, you yourselves also know that in the early days of the gospel, when I went forth from Macedonia, no church took share with me as regards giving and receiving, except you only ; for, even in Thessalonica, ye sent once and even twice, to relieve my need. Not that I seek for the gift, but I seek for the fruit that increaseth to your account. Yea, I am entirely paid, and have abundance ; I am fully supplied, having received from Epaphroditus what you sent ; a savour of a sweet odour, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God. But my God will supply your every need according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus. Now unto our God and Father be the glory for evermore ;⁴ Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren who are with me salute you. All the saints salute you, but especially they that are of Caesar's⁵ household.

23 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits.

¹ Or worshipful. ² Or self-sufficing. ³ Or have been initiated. ⁴ *Lit.* to the ages of the ages. ⁵ *i. e.* the Roman Emperor's.

THE FIRST LETTER TO TIMOTHY

PAUL, apostle of Christ Jesus according to the commandment of God our Saviour, and Christ Jesus our hope, to Timothy, true child in faith; Grace, mercy, peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. 1 2

Even as I exhorted thee, when I was on my way into Macedonia, to remain in Ephesus, that thou mightest charge certain persons not to teach strange doctrines, nor yet to give heed to fables and endless genealogies, such as serve for controversies, rather than for God's stewardship which is concerned with faith¹—now the object of the charge is love, out of a pure heart and a good conscience and faith unfeigned; from which things some having erred² turned aside to vain talking, desiring to be teachers of the Law, yet understanding neither what they say, nor the matters whereof they confidently speak. Now we know that the law is good, if one use it lawfully, with the knowledge that law is not enacted for a righteous man,³ but for lawless and unruly persons, for ungodly men and sinners, for unholy and profane, for smiters of fathers and smiters of mothers, for manslayers, for fornicators, for sodomites, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjurers, and any thing else that is contrary to wholesome instruction; according to the gospel of the glory of the blessed God, with which gospel I was entrusted. 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11

I thank him that strengthened⁴ me, Christ Jesus our Lord, in that he counted me trustworthy, appointing me to service, though previously I had 12 13

¹ The subject here broken off is resumed in verse 18; cf. Ephesians 3¹⁻¹⁴; Romans 5¹³⁻¹⁹. ² Or missed the mark, and 6¹¹; 2 Timothy 2¹⁸. ³ Note to Romans 2¹³. ⁴ Some MSS.; 'strengtheneth.'

I. TIMOTHY 1, 2

been a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and violent ;
yet I obtained mercy, in that I acted ignorantly in
14 unbelief ; yea, the grace of our Lord abounded
exceedingly with faith and the love that rests in
15 Christ Jesus. Trustworthy is the saying, and
worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came
into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.
16 But the reason of my obtaining mercy was that,
in me as chief, Jesus Christ might show forth the
whole of his long-suffering, for an example of them
that should thereafter believe on him unto eternal
17 life. Now unto the King of the ages,¹ the incorrupt-
ible, invisible, only God, be honour and glory for
evermore ; Amen.

18 This charge I commit to thee, child Timothy, in
accordance with the prophecies leading up to thee,
that in them thou mayest war the good warfare,
19 holding faith and a good conscience ; which latter
some having thrust from them made shipwreck as
20 touching the faith ; of whom are Hymenæus and
Alexander, whom that they might learn not to
blaspheme, I gave over unto Satan.

2 I exhort therefore, first of all, that supplications,
prayers, intercessions, thanksgivings, be made for
2 all men ; for kings and for all that are in supremacy,
that we may lead a tranquil and quiet life in all
3 godliness and gravity.² This is good and acceptable
4 in the sight of God our Saviour, whose will is that all
men should be saved and come to the knowledge of
5 the truth. For there is one God, one mediator also
between God and men, himself man, Christ Jesus,
6 who gave himself, a ransom for all ; the testimony to
7 be borne in due seasons ; whereunto I, even I, was
appointed a herald and an apostle (it is truth I am
speaking, I lie not), a teacher of Gentiles in faith
and truth.

8 I will therefore that in every place the men pray,
lifting up holy hands, without anger and disputing ;
9 likewise that women adorn themselves in seemly
apparel, with modesty and sobriety ; not with
platted hair, and gold or pearls or costly raiment ;
10 but (which beseemeth women professing to be
11 religious) by good works. Let a woman learn in

¹ Eternal (A.V.). ² Or seriousness.

I. TIMOTHY 2, 3

silence with all subjection. But I permit not a woman 12
 to teach, nor yet to lord it over a man; but let her be in
 quietness. For Adam was formed first, afterwards 13
 Eve. And Adam was not beguiled; but the woman 14
 being beguiled fell into transgression; yet in the way 15
 of child-bearing¹ she will win salvation, if they con-
 tinue in faith and love and sanctification, with
 sobriety; trustworthy is the saying.

If any seeketh the office of an overseer,² he 3
 desireth an excellent work. An overseer therefore 2
 must be without reproach, husband of one wife,³
 temperate, sober-minded, orderly, hospitable, apt to
 teach; not given to wine, not a brawler; but kindly, 3
 not contentious, not a lover of money; one who 4
 ruleth well his own household, keeping children in
 subjection with all gravity;—but if any knoweth not 5
 how to rule his own household, how shall he take
 charge of a church of God?—not a novice,⁴ lest 6
 puffed up by pride he fall into the judgement on the
 devil. Moreover he must have an honourable wit- 7
 ness from those outside, lest he fall into reproach
 and a snare of the devil.

Deacons⁵ likewise must be grave, not double- 8
 tongued, not given to much wine, not eager for base
 gain; holding the secret of the faith in a clear 9
 conscience. But let these also first be tested; 10
 afterwards, if they are irreproachable, let them
 serve as deacons. (Women⁶ likewise must be grave, 11
 not slanderers, temperate, trustworthy in all things.)
 Let deacons⁵ be husbands, each of one wife, ruling 12
 children well and their own households. For 13
 they that have served well as deacons, acquire for
 themselves an honourable position and great confi-
 dence in the faith that rests in Christ Jesus.

¹ Per filiorum generationem (Vulgate); the interpretation, 'through THE (Virgin Mary's) child-bearing,' must be pronounced fanciful. ² See note, Acts 20²⁸. ³ 'Qu'il n'ait été marié qu'une fois' (De Genoude). Cf. verse 12; 5⁹; Titus 1⁶. No explanation is adequate save that which lies on the surface, viz., the episcopos must be married only once, if at all. How far such a prohibition is binding in the present condition of the world and of the church is another question. St. Paul is not enumerating here the essential characteristics of a bishop; he is dwelling upon certain moral and personal qualities which, in the church of that day, it was desirable that he should possess (Archbishop Bernard). ⁴ *Lit.* neophyte. ⁵ *Or* ministers. ⁶ Verse 11 may have been displaced (e.g. from 2¹⁰), or be a marginal note brought into text. It strangely breaks the connection of verses 10 and 12. But some take 'women' to mean 'women-deacons, deaconesses.'

I. TIMOTHY 3, 4

14 These things I write to thee (hoping to come unto
15 thee shortly, but if I tarry), that thou mayest know
how men ought to behave themselves in a household
of God, seeing that it is a church of a living God,
16 a pillar¹ and mainstay of the truth. And beyond
dispute profound is the secret of godliness :—

Who was² manifested in flesh,
Was pronounced righteous in spirit,
Appeared to angels,
Was preached among Gentiles,
Believed on in the world,
Taken up in glory.

4 But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times
some will fall away from the faith, giving heed to
2 seducing spirits and teachings of demons, through
the hypocrisy of men who speak lies, who are
3 scared in their own consciences, hinder marriage,
enjoin abstinence from foods, which God created to
be partaken of, with thanksgiving, by them that have
4 faith and know the truth. For every creature of
God is good, and not one is to be rejected, if it be
5 received with thanksgiving; for it is hallowed
through the word of God and intercession.

6 By setting these things before the brethren, thou
wilt be a good minister of Christ Jesus, nourished
with the words of the faith and of the good instruction
7 which thou hast followed; but avoid profane and
old women's fables. Exercise thyself unto god-
8 liness; for the exercise of the body is of little
profit; but godliness is profitable in all respects,
having promise of the life that now is, and of that
9 which is to come; trustworthy is the saying, and
10 worthy of all acceptance. For to this end we labour
and contend,³ because we have set our hopes upon a
living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of
11 them that believe. Command and teach these things.

12 Let no one despise thy youth; but make thyself
an example to them that believe, in word, in manner
13 of life, in love, in faith, in purity. Till I come, apply
thyself to the public reading,⁴ the exhortation, the

¹ Other pillars, conscience and scripture. ² Or which was; or God was; text is uncertain. These clauses may be part of a hymn or creed; which would account for the loose grammatical connection with what precedes. ³ Some MSS., 'suffer reproach.' ⁴ Of scripture; St. Luke 4¹⁷; Acts 13¹⁵; 2 Corinthians 3¹⁴.

I. TIMOTHY 4, 5

teaching. Neglect not the gift that is in thee, 14
 which was given thee through prophecy,¹ with laying
 on of the hands of the college of elders.² Ponder 15
 these things ; give thyself wholly to them ; that thy
 progress may be manifest to all. Take heed to 16
 thyself, and to thy teaching. Hold on to these
 things ; for in so doing thou wilt save both thyself
 and them that hear thee.

Rebuke not an old man, but exhort him as you 5
 would a father ; young men as brothers ; old women 2
 as mothers ; young women as sisters, in all purity.

Give honour to widows who are widows indeed. 3
 But if any widow hath children or grandchildren, 4
 let them learn first to show piety towards their own
 family, and to requite their parents ; for this is
 acceptable in the sight of God. (But she that is a 5
 widow indeed, and left solitary, hath set her hope
 upon God, and continues in her supplications and
 her prayers night and day. But she that lives in 6
 luxury is dead while she liveth.) And command 7
 these things, that they may be without reproach.
 But if any provideth not for his own, and especially 8
 for those of his own household, he hath renounced
 the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever. There 9
 may be enrolled as a widow any who is not under
 sixty years, was wife to one husband, well reported 10
 of for good works ; if she brought up children, if
 she entertained strangers, if she washed the saints'
 feet, if she relieved the afflicted, if she followed every
 good work. But refuse younger widows ; for when 11
 they have grown wanton against Christ, they desire
 to marry, coming under judgement because they 12
 have broken their first pledge. And moreover they 13
 learn to be idlers, going about from house to house ;
 and not idlers only, but tattlers also and busybodies,
 speaking what they ought not. I will therefore 14
 that younger widows marry, bear children, rule
 households, give the adversary no occasion for
 reviling ; for some have already turned aside after 15
 Satan. If any woman, a believer, has widows, let her 16
 relieve them, and let not the church be burdened ;
 that it may relieve such as are widows indeed.

¹ See 1¹⁶, ² *Lit.* presbytery ; same word as in St. Luke 22⁶⁶ ; Acts 22⁵, and similar to the word in 5²⁷.

I. TIMOTHY 5, 6

- 17 Let elders who rule well be accounted worthy of
18 double honour, especially such as labour in speaking
19 and in teaching; for the scripture saith, 'Thou
20 shalt not muzzle an ox while he treadeth out the
21 corn,' and, 'The labourer is worthy of his hire.'
22 Against an elder receive not an accusation, except on
23 the word of two or three witnesses. Them that sin
24 reprove before all, that the rest also may be afraid.
25 I charge thee before God and Christ Jesus and the
chosen angels, that thou observe these things without
prejudice, doing nothing by partiality. Lay not
hands hastily on any one, neither be partner in
other men's sins; keep thyself pure. (Be no longer
a water-drinker, but use a little wine for the
stomach's sake and thy frequent infirmities.) Of
some men the sins are manifest, leading the way
unto judgement; but with some their sins rather
follow them up. In like manner also the good
works of some are manifest; and those that are
otherwise cannot be hid.
- 6 As many as are bondmen under the yoke, let them
account their own masters worthy of all honour,
that the name of God, and our teaching, be not
2 blasphemed. But such as have believers for their
masters, let them not despise them because they are
brethren; nay, let them serve them the better,
because they that receive the benefit are believers,
and beloved. Teach and exhort these things.
- 3 If any teacheth strange doctrines, and assenteth
not unto wholesome words, even those of our Lord
Jesus Christ, and to the teaching that is in accordance
4 with godliness, he is puffed up by pride, yet knowing
nothing, but doting over controversies and disputes
about words, whence cometh envy, strife, slanders,
5 evil surmisings, wranglings of men corrupted in mind
and bereft of the truth, supposing that godliness is
6 a means of gain. Yet godliness with contentment
7 is great gain; for we brought nothing into the
8 world, and we cannot carry anything out.¹ But
having food and raiment, therewith we will be

¹ The Greek inserts 'because' before 'neither.' This must be taken as introducing another reason for contentment, not a reason why we bring nothing into the world. In English it is best omitted. The rendering here given is that of the English Communion Service. See note to 1 John 3rd.

I. TIMOTHY 6

contented. But they that are minded to be rich fall 9
into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish
and hurtful lusts, such as plunge men into destruc-
tion and perdition. For the love of money is root of 10
all evils ; and some, craving for it, have gone astray
from the faith, and pierced themselves through
with many sorrows.

But thou, O man of God, flee these things ; but 11
follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love,
steadfastness, meekness. Fight the good fight of 12
faith, lay hold on the life eternal, whereunto thou
wast called and didst confess the good confession
before many witnesses. I charge thee before God, 13
who preserveth all things alive, and before Christ
Jesus, who in the days of Pontius Pilate bore
witness to the good confession, that thou keep what 14
is commanded, without spot, without reproach, until
the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ ; which, 15
in due seasons, the blessed and only Potentate, the
King of kings and Lord of lords, will show ; who 16
only hath immortality, dwelling in light inaccessible ;
whom none of men ever saw or can see ; to whom
belong honour and dominion eternal ; Amen.

Charge them that are rich in the present world, 17
that they be not proud-minded,¹ nor have their hopes
set upon the uncertainty of riches, but upon God
who giveth us richly all things to enjoy ; that they 18
do good, that they be rich in good works, that they
be ready to impart, willing to distribute ; storing 19
away for themselves a good foundation against the
time to come, that they may lay hold on that which
is life indeed.

O Timothy, guard the trust,² turning away from 20
the profane babblings and objections of that which
is falsely called Knowledge ; professing which some 21
have erred concerning the faith.

The grace be with you.

¹ High-minded (A.V.); now a term of commendation. ² Or deposit.

THE SECOND LETTER TO TIMOTHY

1 PAUL, apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of
God, with a view to the promise of life, the life that
2 is in Christ Jesus, to Timothy, beloved child ;
Grace, mercy, peace from God the Father and
Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom from my forefathers I serve in
a clear conscience, unceasing as is the remembrance
I have of thee in my supplications night and day,
4 longing to see thee, as I remember thy tears, that
5 I may be filled with joy ; being put in remembrance
of the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt
first in thy grandmother Lois, and in thy mother
Eunice, and dwelleth, I am persuaded, in thee also.
6 Wherefore I remind thee to stir up the gift of God,
which is in thee through the laying on of my hands.
7 For God gave to us a spirit, not of cowardice, but of
8 power and of love and of self-control. Therefore be
not ashamed of the witness to our Lord, nor of me
his prisoner ; but suffer hardship with¹ the gospel,
9 according to the power of God, who saved us and
called us with a holy calling, not according to our
works, but according to a purpose and grace of his
own ; which grace was given us in Christ Jesus before
10 the ages began, but has now been brought to light
through the manifestation of our Saviour Christ
Jesus, when he did away with death, and through
the gospel brought life and incorruption into light ;
11 whereunto I was appointed a herald and apostle and
12 teacher. Wherefore I suffer these things ; yet I am
not ashamed, for I know him whom I have believed,
and I am persuaded that he is able to guard the
13 trust² committed to me³ unto that Day. Have ready,
in faith and the love that rests in Christ Jesus, an out-
line of sound words, those which thou heardest from

¹ Or with me for. ² Or deposit. ³ Or which I committed (to him).

II. TIMOTHY 1, 2

me. Guard the good trust¹ through the Holy Spirit 14
 who dwelleth in us.

This thou knowest, that all that are in the 15
 province of Asia² turned away from me ; among
 whom are Phygelus and Hermogenes. The Lord 16
 grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus ;
 because he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed
 of my chain ; but, when he arrived in Rome, he 17
 sought me diligently, and found me (the Lord grant 18
 him to find mercy from the Lord in that Day) ; and
 how many services he rendered in Ephesus, thou
 knowest very well.

Therefore, my-child, be thou strengthened in the 2
 grace that is in Christ Jesus ; and the things that 2
 thou heardest from me through³ many witnesses,
 commit them to trustworthy men, such as shall be
 competent also to teach others. Take thy part in 3
 suffering hardships, as a good soldier of Christ Jesus.
 Anyone serving as a soldier keeps himself from 4
 entanglement in the business of this life ; that he
 may please him that enlisted him. Yea, also, if 5
 any one contends in the games, he is not crowned,
 unless he has contended according to the rules. The 6
 husbandman who labours must be the first to par-
 take of the fruits. Consider what I say ; for the 7
 Lord will give thee understanding in all things.
 Remember Jesus Christ, risen from the dead, of the 8
 offspring of David, according to my gospel ; wherein 9
 I suffer hardship unto bonds, as a criminal ; but
 the word of God is not bound. This is why I endure 10
 all things for the sake of the chosen, that they also
 may obtain the salvation that is in Christ Jesus
 with glory eternal. Trustworthy is the saying ; 11

For if we died with him, we shall also live with
 him ;

If we endure, we shall also reign with him ; 12

If we shall disown him, he also will disown us ;

If we are faithless, he abideth faithful ; 13

for he cannot disown himself. Of these things put 14
 them in remembrance, charging them before God
 not to dispute about words (a useless occupation) to
 the subverting of the hearers.

¹ Or deposit. ² See note to Acts 2^o. ³ Among (A.V.).

II. TIMOTHY 2, 3

15 Give diligence to present thyself approved unto
God, as a workman that cannot be put to shame,
16 rightly handling the message of the truth. But shun
their profane babblings; for they will proceed
17 further in ungodliness, and their teaching will spread
18 as doth a gangrene; among whom are Hymenæus
and Philetus, men who concerning the truth have
erred, saying that the resurrection is already past;
19 and they upset the faith of some. Nevertheless the
firm foundation of God standeth, bearing this seal,
'The Lord knoweth them that are his,'¹ and, 'Let
every one that nameth the name of the Lord depart
20 from unrighteousness.' But in a large house there
are vessels not only of gold and of silver, but also
of wood and of earthenware; and some for honour-
21 able, some for ignoble use.² Therefore if anyone
shall purify himself from these, he will be a vessel
for honourable use, hallowed, right useful to the
22 owner, prepared unto every good work. Flee the
lusts of youth; but follow after righteousness, faith,
love, peace, with them that call on the Lord out
23 of a pure heart. Avoid foolish and ignorant con-
troversies, knowing that they breed contentions.
24 But the Lord's bondman must not contend, but
25 be gentle towards all, apt to teach, forbearing, in
meekness correcting such as are opposed; if haply
God may give them repentance unto knowledge of
26 the truth, and they, having been taken captive by
the devil, may wake up sober out of his snare, to
do the will of God.³

3 But know this, that in the last days grievous times
2 will come. For men will be selfish,⁴ lovers of
money, boasters, proud, railers, disobedient to
3 parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affec-
tion, implacable, slanderers, without self-control,
4 fierce, with no love of goodness, traitors, head-
strong, puffed up by pride, lovers of pleasure rather
5 than lovers of God; having a semblance of godliness,
but having renounced the power thereof; from
6 these turn away. For of these are such as creep into
houses, and make captives of foolish women laden

¹ See note in Conybeare and Howson, quoting the Septuagint of Numbers 16⁴. ² Romans 9²¹. ³ The will of *nis* (emphatic), see 1 St. John 2⁶ (similar use of pronoun). ⁴ Self-love not a vice.

II. TIMOTHY 3, 4

with sins, led by divers lusts, ever learning, and never 7
 able to come to knowledge of the truth. But like 8
 as Jannes and Jambres¹ withstood Moses, so these
 also withstand the truth; men corrupted in mind,
 reprobates as to the faith. But they will proceed no 9
 further; for their folly will be evident to all, even
 as the folly of those men became. But thou indeed 10
 didst follow my teaching, conduct, purpose, faith,
 long-suffering, love, steadfastness, persecutions, 11
 sufferings, such as befell me in Antioch, in Iconium,
 in Lystra, such persecutions as I endured; and out
 of them all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all 12
 who would live piously in Christ Jesus will be
 persecuted. But wicked men and impostors will 13
 proceed to worse, deceiving and deceived. But
 continue thou in the things that thou didst learn 14
 and wast assured of, knowing who they were that
 taught thee,² and that from infancy thou hast 15
 known³ sacred writings, those that are able to make
 thee wise unto salvation through faith that is in
 Christ Jesus. Every scripture inspired by God⁴ is 16
 also profitable for teaching, for reproof, for amend-
 ment, for discipline exercised in righteousness; that 17
 the man of God may be complete, fitted out com-
 pletely unto every good work.

I charge thee before God, and before Christ Jesus 4
 who will judge living and dead, both by his manifes-
 tation, and by his kingdom; preach the word, be 2
 urgent in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke,
 exhort, with all long-suffering and teaching. For 3
 there will come a time when men will not endure
 wholesome instruction; but, having itching ears, will
 heap up to themselves teachers according to their
 own lusts, and will turn away their ears from the 4
 truth, and turn aside unto fables. But thou, be 5
 sober in all things, suffer hardships, do the work of
 an evangelist, fulfil thy ministry. For I am already 6
 being poured out as a drink-offering, and the time
 of my departure is at hand. I have fought the good 7
 fight; I have finished the course; I have kept the
 faith; henceforth there is laid up for me the crown 8

¹ Names given by St. Paul, from unwritten tradition, or from some book now lost to us, to the Egyptian magicians who withstood Moses (Exodus 7^{11, 20}). ² *Lit.* from whom (plural) thou didst learn. ³ Some MSS. insert, 'the.' ⁴ See Appendix VIII.

II. TIMOTHY 4

of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will render to me in that Day ; yet not to me only, but also to all them that have loved his manifestation.

9 Give diligence to come unto me shortly ; for
10 Demas hath forsaken me, from love of the present world, and hath gone to Thessalonica ; Crescens to Galatia,¹ Titus to Dalmatia. Luke only is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee ; for he is right
12 useful to me for service. But Tychicus I am sending²
13 to Ephesus. When thou comest, bring the cape that I left at Troas with Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith showed me much malice ; the Lord will render to him according to his works ; from whom do thou guard thyself, for
15 he greatly withstood our words. At my first defence³
16 no one came to my aid, but all forsook me ; may it not be laid to their charge ! But the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me, that through me the message might be fully proclaimed, and that all the
17 Gentiles might hear ; and I was delivered out of the lion's mouth. The Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and will bring me safely unto his heavenly kingdom ; to whom be the glory for evermore ;⁴ Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of
20 Onesiphorus. Erastus remained in Corinth ; but
21 Trophimus I left at Miletus, sick. Give diligence to come before winter. Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren, salute thee.

22 The Lord be with thy spirit.

The grace be with you.

¹ Some MSS., 'Gallia' (Gaul). ² Translated as in Colossians 4⁷,
³ = first trial, or first hearing. ⁴ *Lit.* to the ages of the ages.

THE LETTER TO TITUS

PAUL, bondman of God, and also apostle of Jesus 1
Christ, to secure, in God's chosen, faith and knowl- 2
edge of the truth which tends to godliness, in hope 3
of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised 4
before the ages began (but in due seasons he mani-
fested his word in the message with which I was
entrusted according to the commandment of God
our Saviour); to Titus, true child, in a common
faith; Grace and peace from God the Father and
Christ Jesus our Saviour.

My reason for leaving thee in Crete was that 5
thou shouldst further set right all defects, and 6
appoint elders¹ in every city, as I directed thee; any
who is irreproachable, husband of one wife, having
believing children; who are not accused of riot, nor
unruly. For, as God's steward, an overseer² must be 7
irreproachable; must not be arrogant, nor prone
to anger, nor given to wine, nor a brawler, nor eager
for base gain; but hospitable, a lover of goodness, 8
sober-minded, upright, devout, self-controlled,
holding fast the trustworthy word as he hath been 9
taught, that he may be able both to exhort in whole-
some instruction, and to refute them that contradict.

For there are many unruly persons, vain talkers 10
and deceivers, especially those from The Circum-
cision; whose mouths must be stopped, seeing that 11
they upset whole households, teaching for sake of
base gain things that they ought not. One of them- 12
selves, a prophet of their own said,

'Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, gluttonous
idlers.'

¹ Or presbyters. ² See note, Acts 20 ²⁸.

TITUS 1, 2

13 This witness is true. Therefore reprove them
 14 sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, not
 15 giving heed to Jewish fables, and to precepts of men
 16 who turn away from the truth. To the pure all
 things are pure ; but to such as are defiled and un-
 believing nothing is pure, but both their minds and
 their consciences have been defiled. They profess
 that they know God ; but by their works they dis-
 own him, being abominable, and disobedient, and
 for any good work found worthless.

2 But speak thou the things that beseem wholesome
 2 instruction ; that aged men be temperate, grave,
 sober-minded, sound in their faith, their love, their
 3 steadfastness ; that aged women likewise be reverend
 in demeanour, not slanderers, nor enslaved to much
 4 wine, teachers of what is right ; that they may
 train the young women in soberness, to love their
 5 husbands, to love their children, to be sober-minded,
 pure, workers¹ at home, kind, subjecting themselves
 to their husbands, that the word of God be not
 6 blasphemed. Exhort the young men likewise to
 7 be sober-minded ; in all things presenting thyself as
 a pattern of sound works ; in thy teaching presenting
 8 incorruptness, gravity, sound discourse that cannot
 be condemned ; that he that is of the contrary part
 may be put to shame, having nothing ill to say of
 9 us. Exhort servants² to be in subjection to their
 masters in all things, to please them well ; not
 10 contradicting ; not pilfering, but showing all good
 fidelity ; that in all things they may adorn the
 teaching about God our Saviour.

11 For the grace of God hath been manifested, bring-
 12 ing salvation to all men, instructing us, in order that,
 renouncing ungodliness and worldly lusts, we may
 live soberly, uprightly, and piously, in the present
 13 world ; looking for the blessed hope and manifes-
 tation³ of our great God and Saviour's glory, Christ
 14 Jesus,⁴ who gave himself for us, that he might
 redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a
 people for his very own, zealous for good works.

15 Speak these things, and exhort, and reprove, with
 all authority. Let no one despise thee.

¹ Some MSS., 'keeping' ² Lit. bondmen. ³ Lit. epiphany. ⁴ Cf. Ephesians 1¹⁷ ; of the glory of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ (R.V.). Of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ (A.V.).

TITUS 3

Remind them to be in subjection to rulers, to 3
 authorities, to obey them, to be ready unto every 2
 good work, not to speak evil of any, not to be
 contentious ; to be kindly, showing all meekness 3
 towards all men. For we ourselves once were
 foolish, disobedient, going astray, slaves to divers 4
 lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy,
 odious, hating one another. But when the kindness 4
 of God our Saviour, and his love towards man,¹
 were manifested, not by reason of works (works in 5
 righteousness that we did ourselves), but according to
 his own mercy he saved us, through the washing² of 6
 regeneration and renewing by the Holy Spirit, which
 he poured out³ upon us richly through Jesus Christ 6
 our Saviour ; in order that, accounted righteous by 7
 his grace, we might become heirs, according to hope,
 of eternal life ; trustworthy is the saying. And about 8
 these things I will that thou speak confidently,
 that they that have believed God may be careful to
 be forward in good works. These things are right 9
 and profitable to men ; but shun foolish controver-
 sies, and genealogies, and strife, and contentions
 about the law ; for they are unprofitable and idle.
 A man who is factious after a first and a second 10
 admonition, avoid ; knowing that such a one is 11
 perverted, and sins, being self-condemned.

When I send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, 12
 give diligence to come unto me to Nicopolis ; for
 there I have decided to winter. Send on Zenas the 13
 lawyer and Apollos with diligence, that nothing be
 wanting to them. But also let those that are ours 14
 learn to be forward in good works, for urgent needs,
 that they be not unfruitful.

All my companions salute thee. Salute such as 15
 love us in faith.

The grace be with you all.

¹ *Lit.* philanthropy. ² Or bath. ³ Acts 2³⁷.

THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

- 1 GOD, having in time past spoken to the fathers in
the prophets in many portions and in many ways,
2 hath at the end of these days spoken to us in a Son,
whom he appointed heir of all things ; through
3 whom also he made the worlds ; who being the
effulgence of his glory and the impress of his
essence,¹ and upholding all things by the word of his
power, after making² a cleansing from sins took his
4 seat at the right hand of the Majesty on high, when
he became superior to the angels, in proportion as
he hath received a name more excellent than theirs.
5 For to which of the angels did God ever say,
‘Thou art my Son, I this day have begotten
thee’?
and, further,
‘I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me
a Son’?
6 But when he shall bring again³ the Firstborn into
the world, he saith,
‘And let all the angels of God worship him.’
7 And of⁴ the angels he saith,
‘Who maketh his angels winds,
And his ministers a flame of fire’ ;
8 but of⁴ the Son,
‘Thy throne, O God, is⁵ for evermore ;⁶
And the sceptre of uprightness is the sceptre of
his⁷ kingdom.
9 Thou lovedst righteousness, and hatedst
iniquity ;⁸
Therefore God, thy God, anointed thee with
oil of gladness above thy fellows’ ;

¹ See Wisdom of Solomon, 7²². ² Or in making. ³ At the general resurrection. ⁴ Or unto. ⁵ Or God is thy throne. ⁶ Lit. to the age of the age. ⁷ Some MSS., ‘thy.’ ⁸ Or lawlessness.

HEBREWS 1, 2

and, 10
 'Thou, Lord, in the beginning didst lay the
 foundation of the earth ;
 And the heavens are works of thy hands ;
 They shall perish, but thou continuest ; 11
 And they all shall grow old as doth a garment ;
 And as a mantle thou shalt roll them up, 12
 As a garment, and they shall be changed ;
 But thou art the same, and thy years shall
 not fail.'

But of¹ which of the angels hath he ever said, 13
 'Sit at my right hand,
 Until I make thine enemies a footstool under
 thy feet ?'

Are they not all ministering spirits, continually sent 14
 forth unto service for the sake of them that shall
 obtain salvation?

Therefore, lest haply we drift away, we must 2
 give the more earnest heed to the things that were
 heard ; for if the word spoken through angels held 2
 firm, and every transgression and disobedience
 received a just recompense, how shall we escape, if 3
 we neglect so great a salvation? seeing that it, having
 at the first been spoken through the Lord, was con- 4
 firmed unto us by them that heard ; God also bearing
 witness to it both by signs and by wonders, and by
 manifold mighty works, and by distributions of the
 Holy Spirit, according to his will.

For it was not unto angels that he put in subjection 5
 the world to come, whereof we speak. But one 6
 somewhere testified, saying,
 'What is man, that thou art mindful of him?
 Or a son of man, that thou visitest him?
 Thou madest him for a while lower² than the 7
 angels ;
 With glory and honour thou crownedst him ;³
 Thou didst put all things in subjection under 8
 his feet.'

For, in that he put all things in subjection under
 him, he left nothing that is not subject to him.
 But at present we see not yet all things subjected 9
 to him ; but we behold him who was made for a
 while lower⁴ than the angels, even Jesus, crowned

¹ Or unto. ² Or a little lower. ³ Some MSS. add, 'and didst set him over the works of thy hands.' ⁴ Or made a little lower.

HEBREWS 2, 3

- with glory and honour, because of his having suffered death, that by the grace of God¹ he might
- 10 taste death for every one. For it beseeemed him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to perfect through sufferings the author of their
- 11 salvation. For both he that sanctifieth and they that are sanctified are all from One ; for which cause
- 12 he is not ashamed to call them Brethren, saying,
 ‘ I will declare thy name to my brethren :
 In the midst of the congregation² I will sing hymns unto thee ’ ;
- 13 and, further,
 ‘ As for me, I will put my trust on him ’ ;
 and, further,
 ‘ Behold ! here am I, and the children that God hath given me.’
- 14 Therefore, since the children are sharers in flesh and blood, he himself also in like manner partook of the same ; that through death he might do away with him that had the power over death, that is,
- 15 the devil ; and might deliver as many as from fear of death were all their life through subject to
- 16 bondage. For, verily, it is not angels that he helpeth, but Abraham’s offspring he helpeth.
- 17 Wherefore it behoved him to be made in all respects like unto his brethren, that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make a propitiation³ for the sins of the
- 18 people. For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.
- 3 Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of a heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our
- 2 confession, Jesus, who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also was Moses in God’s⁴ whole
- 3 house.⁴ For he hath been deemed worthy of greater glory than was Moses, in proportion as he that prepared the house hath greater honour than
- 4 the house. For every house is prepared by some one ;
- 5 but he that prepared all things is God. And

¹ Two late MSS., ‘ that apart from God ’ (abandoned by God, St. Matthew 27⁴⁰). ² Or church. ³ See note to Romans 3²⁵, *reconciliation* (A.V.). ⁴ Lit. his. ⁵ The Greek word means house (building) or house (household, family, society); see 1 Timothy 3¹⁵.

Moses indeed was faithful in God's¹ whole house, as an attendant, for witness to the things that were afterwards to be spoken ; but Christ, as son, is faithful over God's¹ house ; whose house we are, if we hold fast our confidence and the glorying of our hope, steadfast unto the end. Wherefore—even as the Holy Spirit saith,

' To-day if ye shall hear his voice,
Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation,
During the day of the trial in the wilderness ;
Where your forefathers tried me, putting me to
proof,

And saw my works, forty years ;
Wherefore I was displeased with that generation,
And said, They always err in their hearts ;
But they knew not my ways ;
As I swore in my anger,

They shall not enter into my rest ' ;—

take heed, brethren, lest haply there be in any one of you an evil heart of unbelief, in falling away from a living God ; but exhort one another day by day, as long as the call ' To-day,' is uttered ; (that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin, for we have become partakers of the Christ, if so be we hold fast, steadfast unto the end, the confidence wherewith we began) ; while it is said,

' To-day if ye shall hear his voice,
Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.'

For who, when they heard, gave the provocation? Nay, did not all they that came forth out of Egypt by means of Moses? But with whom was he displeased forty years? was it not with them that sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness? But to whom swore he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that were disobedient? And we see that because of unbelief they could not enter in.

Let us therefore fear, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest, any one of you should be deemed to have come short of it. For indeed we have had good tidings preached to us, even as they also had ; but the word that they heard profited them not, not having been mingled with

¹ *Lit. his.*

HEBREWS 4

3 faith in them that heard.¹ For we are entering into the rest, we that have had faith; even as he hath said,

‘As I swore in my anger,

They shall not enter into my rest’;

4 although the works were finished² from the foundation of the world. For he hath said somewhere on this wise about the seventh day, ‘And God rested
5 on the seventh day from all his works’; and in this place further, ‘They shall not enter into my
6 rest.’ Therefore, since it remaineth that some are to enter into it, and since, because of disobedience, they to whom the good tidings were first preached
7 entered not, again he appointeth a certain day, ‘To-day,’ saying in David so long a time afterwards (even as hath been said above),³

‘To-day if ye shall hear his voice,

Harden not your hearts.’

8 For if Joshua⁴ had given them rest, God would not
9 afterwards be speaking of another day. There remaineth therefore a sabbath-keeping for the people
10 of God. For he that hath entered into God’s rest, hath himself also come to a rest from his works, even
11 as God rested from his own. Let us therefore use diligence to enter into that rest, that no one fall
12 after⁵ the same example of disobedience. For living is the word of God; and active, and keener than any two-edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing of soul and spirit, both of joints and of marrow, and able to judge the thoughts and intents of the heart.
13 And there is no creature that is not manifest in his sight; but all things are naked and laid open unto the eyes of him to whom we have to give account.⁶

14 Therefore, having a great high priest who hath passed through the heavens, Jesus, the Son of God,
15 let us hold fast our confession. For we have not a high priest that cannot have sympathy with us in our infirmities; but one that hath been tempted in
16 all respects like as we are, yet without sin. Let us, therefore, draw near with confidence to the throne

¹ Some MSS., ‘because they were not united by faith with them that heard.’ ² And (therefore) his rest began. ³ *i.e.* already quoted, 3^o. ⁴ ⁵ Smet in Greek with same letters as the word Jesus. ⁶ *Or-futo.* ⁷ *Or* with whom we have to do.

of grace, that we may receive mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

For every high priest, taken as he is from among men, is appointed for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer gifts and sacrifices also for sins; being able to deal gently with the ignorant and erring, in that he himself also is beset with infirmity; and by reason thereof he is bound, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. And not unto himself doth any one take the honour; but he receives it when he is called by God, even as also was Aaron. So also the Christ glorified not himself that he might become high priest, but he that spoke unto him,

'Thou art my Son, I this day have begotten thee'; even as he saith also in some other place,

'Thou art a priest for ever, according to the office of¹ Melchizedek.'

And in the days of his flesh, when he had offered prayers and supplications with strong crying out, and tears, unto him that was able to bring him safe out of death, and had been heard because of his devoutness,² he, Son though he was, learnt obedience from the things that he suffered; and having been made perfect he became to all that obey him author of eternal salvation, addressed by God as high priest according to the office of Melchizedek.

And of him we have many things to say, and difficult to explain, seeing that ye have become dull in your hearing. For when, considering the time, ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that some one teach you again the rudiments of the first principles³ of the oracles of God; and ye have come to need milk, not solid food. For every one who partakes of milk is inexperienced in the word of righteousness; for an infant he is. But solid food is for them that are full-grown, for them that by practice have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

Wherefore, ceasing to speak of the first principles³ of the Christ, let us bear onwards unto our full growth; not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith towards God,

¹ After the order of (A.V.); but 'order' is very ambiguous (e.g. = command). ² Or reverence. ³ Lit. the beginning.

HEBREWS 6

2 a teaching of washings¹ and of laying on of hands,
of resurrection of the dead, and of a sentence lasting
3 eternally. And this we will do, if God permit.
4 For as touching them that were once for all en-
lightened, having both tasted of the heavenly gift
5 and become partakers of the Holy Spirit; who
tasted the goodness of the word of God, and the
mighty works of the age to come, and fell away;
6 it is impossible to renew them a second time unto
repentance, crucifying to themselves, as they do, the
Son of God afresh, and putting² him to open shame.
7 For land that drank the rain that cometh often upon
it, and bringeth forth herbage meet for those for
whose sake it is tilled, partakes of blessing from God;
8 but if it bears thorns and thistles, it is rejected, and
is nigh unto a curse; whose end is to be burnt.³
9 But in your case, beloved, we are persuaded of
the better⁴ things, those that accompany salvation,
10 though thus we speak. For God is not unjust, to
forget your work and the love that ye showed towards
his name, in that ye ministered to the saints, and
11 still minister. But we desire that each of you should
show the same diligence unto the full assurance of
12 your hope, even to the end; in order that ye may
become, not sluggish, but imitators of them that
through faith and patience obtain the promises.
13 For God in making promise to Abraham, since
he could swear by none greater, swore by himself,
14 saying, Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multi-
15 plying I will multiply thee. And thus, having
patiently endured, he attained what was promised.
16 For men swear by the greater, and in every dispute
among them the oath is conclusive as a guarantee.
17 On which ground God, being minded to show more
abundantly to the possessors of the promise the
immutability of his counsel, intervened with an oath;
18 that by two immutable things,⁵ in which it was
impossible for God to lie, we might have strong
encouragement, we that have fled for refuge to lay
19 hold of the hope that is set before us; which hope
we have as an anchor of the soul, both safe and
sure, and entering into that which is within the veil;

¹ Or baptisms. ² Seeing they crucify . . . and put (A.V.). ³ Deuteronomy 29¹⁷. ⁴ Of the two states and destinies mentioned in verses 7, 8. ⁵ His promise and his oath.

HEBREWS 6, 7

whither, as forerunner, Jesus entered on our behalf, 20
 when he became, according to the office of Melchizedek, high priest for ever.

For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of God 7
 Most High—he that met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him ; to whom 2
 also Abraham divided a tenth portion of all—he, being first, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and then also King of Salem (which is, King of peace), without father, without mother, without 3
 ancestry, with neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, abideth a priest continually.

Now consider how great was this man, to whom 4
 Abraham, patriarch as he was, gave a tenth out of the best of the spoils. And whereas they of the sons 5
 of Levi that receive the priest's office are commanded to take tithes from the people, according to the law (that is, from their brethren, come as these have out of the loins of Abraham) ; he, though not 6
 tracing his ancestry from them, hath taken tithes from Abraham, and hath blessed him that holdeth the promises. Now beyond all dispute what is 7
 inferior is blessed by what is superior. And here 8
 men who die receive tithes ; but there one received them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth. And, so 9
 to speak, through Abraham even Levi, who receiveth tithes, hath paid tithes ; for he was yet in the loins 10
 of his forefather, when Melchizedek met Abraham.

Now had there been a bringing to perfection by 11
 means of the Levitical priesthood (for in dependence on it the people hath received the law), what further need would there have been that another priest should arise according to the office of Melchizedek, and not be reckoned according to the office of Aaron ? For, when the priesthood changeth, there cometh of 12
 necessity a change of law also. For he of whom 13
 these things are said belongeth to quite another tribe, no one from which hath given attendance at the altar. For it is evident that our Lord hath 14
 sprung out of Judah, a tribe as to which Moses spoke nothing having reference to priests. And it is yet 15
 more abundantly evident, if indeed there ariseth according to the likeness of Melchizedek another priest, who hath become such, not according to a law 16

of a fleshly commandment, but according to the power
 17 of an indestructible life ; for witness is borne, 'Thou
 18 art a priest for ever according to the office of Mel-
 chizedek.' For there cometh, on the one hand, an
 19 annulling of a foregoing commandment on account
 of its weakness and unprofitableness (for the law
 made nothing perfect) ; and, on the other, a bringing
 in thereupon of a better hope, through which we
 draw nigh unto God. And inasmuch as it was not
 20 done without taking of an oath (for they indeed
 21 without an oath have become priests, but he with
 an oath, through him that saith of¹ him, 'The
 Lord aware, and will not repent himself, Thou art
 22 a priest for ever') ; by so much also Jesus hath
 become surety of a better covenant.

23 And they indeed have become priests many in
 number, because by death they are prevented from
 24 continuing ; whereas he, in that he abideth for ever,
 25 hath his priesthood unchangeable. Wherefore he is
 able also to save to the uttermost them that come
 unto God through him, seeing that he ever liveth
 to make intercession for them.

26 For such a high priest beseeemed us, holy, harm-
 less, undefiled, separated from sinners, and become
 27 higher than the heavens ; who needeth not daily,
 even as the high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first
 for his own sins, then for the sins of the people ;
 for this he did once for all when he offered up him-
 28 self. For the law appointeth as high priests men
 not free from infirmity ; but the word of the oath,
 which came after the law,² appointeth a Son who
 has been made perfect for ever.

8 Now to sum up what we are saying :—such is the
 high priest we have, who took his seat at the
 right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the
 2 heavens, as minister of the Holy Place,³ and of
 the true tabernacle, the one that the Lord pitched,
 3 not man. For every high priest is appointed to offer
 gifts and sacrifices also ; wherefore it is necessary
 that this one also should have something to offer.
 4 Now, if he were on earth, he would not even
 be a priest, seeing that there are those that offer
 5 the gifts according to law ; who serve a copy and

¹ Or unto. ² See Psalm 110 †. ³ i. e. heaven.

shadow of the heavenly things, even as Moses hath been warned when he was about to construct the tabernacle ; for, ' See, ' it saith, ' that thou make all things according to the pattern shown to thee on the mount. ' ¹ But, as it is, he hath obtained a more excellent ministry, in proportion as he is also mediator of a better covenant, which hath been enacted upon better promises. For had that first covenant been faultless, place would not have been sought for a second. For finding fault with them he saith,

' Behold, days are coming, saith the Lord,
When I will establish a new covenant with the
house of Israel and with the house of Judah ;
Not according to the covenant that I made
with their forefathers,

In the day when I took them by the hand,
To lead them forth out of the land of Egypt ;
Because they continued not in my covenant,
I also heeded them not, saith the Lord.
For this is the covenant that I will make with
the house of Israel

After those days, saith the Lord,
Putting my laws into their minds ;
And upon their hearts I will write them ;
And I will be to them for God,
And they shall be to me for a people ;
And they shall not teach, each his fellow-
citizen,

And each his brother, saying, Know the Lord ;
For all shall know me, from least to greatest of
them.

For I will be merciful to their iniquities,
And their sins I will remember no more. ' ²

In saying, ' a new covenant, ' he hath declared the first old ; now that which is growing old and failing from age is nigh unto vanishing.

Now even the first covenant had ordinances of divine service, and its sanctuary, a sanctuary of this world. For there was a tabernacle prepared, the first, ³ and in it the lamp-stand, and the table, and the setting forth of the loaves ; ⁴ that which is called

¹ Exodus 25 ⁴⁶. ² Or the outer one (not temporal, but local). ³ Or the shewbread.

HEBREWS 9

- 3 The Holy Place ; but beyond the second veil, a
4 tabernacle, the one called The Holy of Holies, having
a golden altar of incense,¹ and the ark² of the
covenant, overlaid on every side with gold ; and
in the ark a golden pot holding the manna, and
Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets of the
5 covenant ; but above it cherubim of the Glory,
over-shadowing the mercy-seat ; of which things
we cannot now speak in detail.
- 6 But these things having been thus prepared, into
the first³ tabernacle the priests go continually,
7 carrying out the services ; but into the second the
high priest goeth alone once in the year, not without
blood, which he offereth for himself, and for the
8 errors of the people ; the Holy Spirit indicating
this, that the way into the Holy Place hath not yet
been made manifest, while the first tabernacle still
9 holds its ground ; seeing that it is a parable for the
present time, a parable in accordance with which
gifts are offered, and sacrifices also, such as cannot
make the worshipper perfect as touching the
10 conscience, being merely (together with foods and
drinks and various washings) ordinances, of the flesh
imposed until a time of reformation.
- 11 But Christ having appeared as high priest of the
good things that have come,⁴ went once for all
through the tabernacle⁵ greater and better finished,
not made by hands (that is to say, not of this
12 creation), nor yet by virtue of blood of goats and
of oxen, but by virtue of his own blood, into the
13 Holy Place, obtaining an eternal redemption. For
if the blood of goats and of bulls, and ashes of a
heifer sprinkling them that have been defiled,
14 sanctifieth unto the cleanness of the flesh, how
much more will the blood of the Christ, who through
his eternal spirit offered himself without blemish
to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works
to serve a living God !
- 15 And this is why he is mediator of a new covenant,
that, a death having taken place for redemption of
the transgressions under the first covenant, they

¹ Or golden censer. ² Latin 'arca,' a chest, box, holding 'arcana.'
³ Or outer, inner, as in verse 2. ⁴ Some MSS., 'good things to come.'
⁵ See 4¹⁴.

HEBREWS 9

that have been called may receive what was
 promised, the eternal inheritance. For where there 16
 is a testament,¹ the death of the testator must be
 adduced; for a testament comes into force when 17
 men are dead; for has it ever any effect while the
 testator is alive? Hence not even the first covenant 18
 hath been inaugurated without blood. For when, 19
 in accordance with the law, every commandment
 had been spoken by Moses to all the people, he took
 the blood of the oxen and of the goats, with water
 and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the
 book itself and all the people, saying, 'This is the 20
 blood of the covenant which God hath enjoined in
 regard to you.' Yea, the tabernacle also and all the 21
 vessels of the ministry in like manner he sprinkled
 with the blood. And we may almost say that accord- 22
 ing to the law all things are cleansed by blood, and
 without shedding of blood there comes no forgiveness.

It was necessary therefore that the copies of the 23
 things in the heavens should be cleansed with these
 things, but the heavenly things themselves with
 better sacrifices than these. For it was no holy 24
 place made by hands, a counterpart of the true,
 that Christ entered, but heaven itself, now to
 appear before the face of God on our behalf; nor
 yet did he enter that he should offer himself many 25
 times, as the high priest entereth the holy place
 year by year with blood not his own—else must he 26
 often have suffered since the foundation of the
 world—but, as it is, once for all at the end of the
 ages he hath been manifested to put away sin
 through the sacrifice of himself. And inasmuch as it 27
 is appointed unto men once to die, but after this
 cometh judgement; so also the Christ, once offered 28
 to carry the sins of many, will appear a second time,

¹ In verses 15-20, one Greek word (*diathesis*—arrangement) is rendered in two ways, each in itself legitimate: (1) covenant; (2) testament, will; the latter sense not being found elsewhere in the Bible. To avoid this diversity of rendering (which is favoured by 'inheritance' in verse 15) some translate, 'For where there is a covenant, the death of the covenant-victim must be presented; for a covenant is valid where there hath been death; for hath it any force while the covenant-victim liveth?' But in this the sense is helped out by substituting the expression 'the covenant-victim' for the literal 'him (he) that made it' on the assumption that the two, for some purposes of the covenant, may be identified. But is this any simpler than using a noun in different significations?

apart from sin, to them that wait for him, unto salvation.

- 10 For the law, having but a shadow of the good things to come, not the exact image of the objects, can¹ never by the sacrifices which they offer continually, year by year the same, make perfect them
 2 that draw nigh. For in that case would they not have ceased to be offered, seeing that the worshippers, having been once for all cleansed, would have had no
 3 more consciousness of sins? But in these sacrifices sins are brought to remembrance year by year.
 4 For it is impossible that blood of bulls and of goats
 5 should take away sins. Wherefore in coming into the world he saith,

‘Sacrifices and offerings thou wouldest not, but a body thou preparedst for me ;

- 6 In whole burnt offerings and sin-offerings thou hadst no pleasure ;

- 7 Then I said, Lo, I am come (in the roll of the book it is written of me),
 To do thy will, O God.’

- 8 When he saith above, ‘Sacrifices and offerings and whole burnt offerings and sin-offerings thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein’ (such as are
 9 offered according to law), he hath afterwards said, ‘Lo, I am come to do thy will.’ He abolishes the
 10 first, that he may establish the second. In which will² we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

- 11 And every priest³ standeth day by day, ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, such
 12 as can never take away sins ; but this man, after offering one sacrifice⁴ for sins for ever,⁵ took his seat
 13 at the right hand of God, waiting thenceforth until his enemies be made a footstool under his feet. For
 14 by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. Yea, the Holy Spirit also beareth witness to us ; for after he hath said,

- 16 ‘This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord,
 Putting my laws upon their hearts,

¹Some MSS., ‘they (the offerers) can.’ ²See 1 Thessalonians 4⁶; sanctified in the intention of God, who would have all men to be saved. Or ‘sanctified once for all through,’ etc. ³Some MSS., ‘high priest.’ ⁴Or this man, offering one sacrifice. . . . ⁵Or for sins, for ever took his seat.

HEBREWS 10

Upon their minds also I will write them¹ ;
 'And their sins and their iniquities I will 17
 remember no more.'
 Now where there is forgiveness of these, there is no 18
 longer any offering for sin.
 Having therefore, brethren, confidence to enter 19
 into the Holy Place in the blood of Jesus, by the 20
 way which he inaugurated for us, a new and 21
 living way, through the veil (that is to say, his 22
 flesh), and having a great priest over the house of 23
 God, let us draw nigh with a true heart in full 24
 assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from 25
 an evil conscience, and the body washed with pure
 water ; let us hold fast the confession of our hope,
 that it waver not (for he that promised is faithful) ;
 and let us consider one another for incitement unto 26
 love and good works, not (as is the way of some) for- 27
 saking the gathering together of ourselves,¹ but 28
 exhorting one another, and so much the more as 29
 ye see the Day drawing nigh.
 For if we sin wilfully after we have received the 30
 knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no longer a 31
 sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of 32
 judgement, and a fierceness of fire which will devour 33
 the adversaries. Any one who disregardeth a law of 34
 Moses dieth without mercy at the word of two or
 three witnesses ; of how much sorer punishment,
 think ye, will he be thought worthy, that hath trodden
 under foot the Son of God and hath counted the
 blood of the covenant, the blood wherein he was sanc-
 tified, an unholy thing, and hath treated scornfully
 the Spirit of grace ! For we know him that said, ' To
 me vengeance belongeth ; I will requite ' ; and
 further, ' The Lord will judge his people.' It is a
 fearful thing to fall into the hands of a living God.
 But bear in mind the former days, in which, after 32
 ye were enlightened, ye endured a great conflict of 33
 sufferings ; partly, while both by reproaches and by 34
 afflictions ye were made a spectacle ; partly, when
 ye became partakers with them that were so used.
 For ye had compassion on the prisoners, and the
 plundering of your possessions ye joyfully accepted,
 knowing that ye have your own selves for² a better

¹ Or our own gathering together. ² Some MSS., ' have for yourselves.'
 See St. Luke 21²⁸ ; and verse 39.

35 possession and an abiding one. Therefore let not
 go your confidence, seeing that it hath a great
 36 recompense. For ye have need of steadfastness, that,
 having done the will of God, ye may receive what is
 promised.

37 For yet 'a very, very little while,
 The Coming One will come, and will not tarry ;
 38 But my righteous one shall live by faith,
 And if he draw back, my soul hath no pleasure
 in him.'

39 But we are not of them that draw back unto
 perdition, but of them that have faith unto winning
 of the soul.

11 Now faith is assurance of¹ things hoped for, a
 2 conviction of objects not seen.² For therein the
 ancients³ had witness borne to them.

3 By faith we perceive that the worlds have been
 framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath
 not come into being out of things that appeared.⁴

4 By faith Abel offered to God a more excellent
 sacrifice than Cain ; through which he had witness
 borne to him that he was righteous, God bearing
 witness concerning his gifts ; and through it he
 being dead still speaketh.

5 By faith Enoch was taken away, that he should not
 see death ; and he could not be found, God having
 taken him away ; for before he was taken he hath
 had witness borne to him that he had been well-
 6 pleasing unto God. But without faith it is im-
 possible to be well-pleasing ; for he that cometh to
 God must have faith that he is, and that he shows
 himself a recompenser to them that diligently seek
 him.

7 By faith Noah, warned concerning things not seen
 as yet, moved by godly fear prepared an ark for the
 saving of his household ; through which he con-
 demned the world, and possessed the righteousness
 that is according to faith.

8 By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed, to
 go out to a place which he was to receive for an
 inheritance ; and he went out, not knowing whither
 9 he goeth. By faith he went as a sojourner into the

¹ Or the title deeds of. ² Or Now faith is a giving substance to things hoped for, a proving of objects not seen. ³ Or men of old time. ⁴ Or things then appearing (*lit.* out of phenomena).

land of the promise, as into a land not his own, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the possessors with him of the same promise ; for he was waiting 10 for the city that hath the foundations,¹ the city whose craftsman and builder is God.

By faith even Sarah herself received strength for 11 the founding² of a posterity, and that when she was past the time of life ; because she counted him faithful that had promised. Wherefore also from 12 one, and him to all intents dead, there sprang as many as the stars of the heaven for multitude, and as the sand that is by the sea-shore, the sand that cannot be numbered.

In the way of faith these all died, without receiving 13 the things promised, but having seen them and greeted them from afar, and having acknowledged that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For they that say such things show plainly that 14 they are seeking for a country of their own. And truly, had they been mindful of that country from 15 which they went out, they might have had opportunity to return ; but, as it is, they long for a better, 16 that is, a heavenly. Wherefore God is not ashamed of them, to be called their God ; for he hath prepared for them a city.

By faith Abraham, when he was tried, hath 17 offered up Isaac ; yea, he that had welcomed the promises was offering up his only son, he to whom³ 18 it had been spoken, ' In Isaac thy posterity shall be counted ' ; considering that God is able to raise up 19 even from the dead ; whence also by way of a parable he received him back.

By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau, even 20 concerning things to come.

By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each 21 of the sons of Joseph ; and worshipped, leaning on the top of his staff.

By faith Joseph, when he was near his end, 22 made mention of the going out⁴ of the children of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones.

By faith Moses, when he was born, was hidden 23 three months by his parents, because they saw that

¹ Revelation 21 ¹⁴. ² 'Founding' same word as 'foundation' in 4^o. ³ Or him of whom. ⁴ *Lit.* exodus.

he was a beautiful child, and they feared not the king's decree.

24 By faith Moses, when he was grown up, refused
25 to be called son of a daughter of Pharaoh, choosing
rather to suffer ill-treatment with the people of God,
than to have enjoyment of sin¹ for a season,
26 esteeming the reproach of the Christ greater riches
than the treasures of Egypt; for he was looking
steadfastly unto the recompense.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the king's
wrath; for he endured as seeing him that cannot be
28 seen.² By faith he hath instituted³ the Passover
and the sprinkling⁴ of the blood, that the destroyer
29 of the firstborn should not touch themselves. By
faith they passed through the Red Sea as through
dry land; of which sea gaining experience the
Egyptians were swallowed up.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after
they had been encompassed for seven days.

31 By faith Rahab the harlot, welcoming the spies with
peace, perished not with them that were disobedient.

32 And why should I say more? for time will fail me
if I tell of Gideon, of Barak, of Samson, of Jephthah;
33 of David too, and Samuel, and the prophets; who
through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteous-
ness, attained things promised, stopped the mouths
34 of lions, quenched the strength of fire, escaped the
edge of the sword, from weakness were made
strong, showed themselves mighty in war, turned to
35 flight armies of aliens. By a resurrection women
received their dead; while others were tortured,
not accepting their deliverance, that they might
36 obtain a better resurrection. And others had
experience of mockings and scourgings, yea, more-
37 over, of bonds and imprisonment; they were
stoned, they were tempted,⁵ they were sawn asunder,
they were slain with the sword; they went about
in sheep-skins, in goat-skins, destitute, afflicted,
38 ill-treated (of whom the world was not worthy),
wandering in deserts, and on mountains, and in
caves and the clefts of the earth.

¹ To enjoy the pleasures of sin (A.V.). ² Romans 1st. ³ Or kept.
⁴ Or pouring, effusion. ⁵ The Greek word closely resembles another
that means 'were burnt,' which may have been the original word.

HEBREWS 11, 12

And all these, having had witness borne to them 39
 through their faith, received not what was promised ;
 God in respect of us having provided¹ some better 40
 thing, that without us they should not be made
 perfect.

Therefore let us also, set around as we are 12
 by so great a cloud of witnesses, lay aside every
 encumbrance and sin which clingeth closely to us ;
 and let us run with steadfastness the race that is
 set before us, looking steadfastly unto the author 2
 and perfecter of our faith, Jesus, who for the joy that
 was set before him endured the cross, despising
 the shame, and hath taken his seat at the right hand
 of the throne of God. For, that ye grow not weary, 3
 fainting in your souls, consider him that hath
 endured such contention of sinners against himself.²
 Not yet unto blood have ye resisted, struggling 4
 against sin ; and ye have forgotten the exhortation³ 5
 that reasoneth with you as with sons,

‘ My son, regard not lightly chastening from the
 Lord,

Nor faint when thou art reprovèd by him ;
 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, 6

And he scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.’
 Endure unto chastening ; as with sons God dealeth 7
 with you ; for what son is there whom his father
 chasteneth not ? But if ye are without chastening, 8
 whereof all have become partakers, then ye are
 bastards, and not sons. Furthermore, we had the 9
 fathers of our flesh to chasten us, and we gave them
 reverence ; shall we not much rather be in sub-
 jection to the Father of spirits, and live ? For they 10
 verily for a few days chastened us, as seemed good
 to them ; whereas he for our profit chasteneth us,
 that we may be partakers of his holiness. Now all 11
 chastening seemeth for the present to be, not joyous,
 but grievous ; but afterwards it yieldeth peaceable
 fruit, even righteousness, to them that have been
 exercised thereby. Wherefore straighten the hands 12
 that hang down and the paralysed knees ; and make 13
 straight paths with⁴ your feet, that what is lame turn
 not out of the way, but rather may be healed.

¹ Or foreseen. ² Some MSS., ‘ against themselves ’ (Numbers 18 **)
³ Proverbs 3²¹, 12. ⁴ Or for.

HEBREWS 12

- 14 Follow after peace with all men, and the sanctifi-
 15 cation without which no one will see the Lord ; using
 oversight, lest any one falling short of the grace
 of God, lest any root of bitterness springing upwards,
 16 trouble you, and thereby the many be defiled ; lest
 there be any fornicator, or profane person, such as
 17 Esau, who for one meal sold his own birthright. For
 ye know that, even when afterwards he desired to
 obtain the blessing, he was rejected, though he
 sought it diligently with tears ;¹ for he found no
 opportunity for repentance.²
- 18 For ye have not come unto a mountain that
 may³ be felt, and is burning with fire, and to gloom
 19 and blackness and tempest, and sound of trumpet,
 and voice of words ; which voice they that heard
 entreated that no word further should be spoken
 20 to them—for they could not endure the injunction,
 ‘ If even a beast touch the mountain, it shall be
 21 stoned ’ ; and so fearful was the spectacle that
 22 Moses said, ‘ I exceedingly fear and tremble ’—but
 ye have come unto Mount Zion, and to a city of a
 23 living God, heavenly Jerusalem, and to tens of
 thousands of angels, a festal assembly and congrega-
 tion of firstborn⁴ enrolled in heaven, and to a
 judge who is God of all, and to spirits of righteous
 24 men made perfect, and to Jesus, mediator of a new
 covenant, and to blood of sprinkling which speaketh
 in better wise than Abel.⁵
- 25 See that ye excuse not yourselves to⁶ him that
 speaketh. For if those men escaped not when they
 excused themselves to him that gave warning on
 earth, much more we shall not escape if we turn
 26 away from him that warneth from heaven ; whose
 voice then shook the earth, but now he hath
 promised, saying, ‘ Yet once I will make to tremble,
 27 not the earth only, but the heaven also.’ Now this
 expression, ‘ yet once,’ signifieth the taking away of
 the things that are shaken, as of things that have been
 made, that the things that are not shaken may
 28 remain. Wherefore let us, receiving a kingdom that
 cannot be shaken, be thankful, whereby we may

¹ Genesis 27³⁴. ² Or to change his mind. ³ Or unto what may (some MSS. omit ‘mountain’). ⁴ Cf. Job 1⁶; 38⁷. ⁵ See 11⁴. ⁶ Refuse not (A.V.); but see St. Luke 14¹⁰.

offer service unto God acceptably, with devoutness
and awe ; for our God is a consuming fire. 29

Let brotherly kindness continue. Forget not 13,2
hospitality ; for thereby some have entertained
angels unawares. Remember the prisoners, as if 3
ye were fellow-prisoners with them ; them that
are ill-treated, as being yourselves also in the body.
Let marriage be held in honour among all,¹ and let 4
the marriage-bed be undefiled ; for fornicators and
adulterers God judgeth. Let your character be free 5
from love of money ; be contented with what things
ye have, for he himself hath said, ' I will not let thee
go, neither will I forsake thee ' ; so that with good 6
courage we may say,

' The Lord is my helper, I will not fear ;
What shall man do unto me ? '

Remember your rulers,² men who spoke to you 7
the word of God ; and observing the issue of their
manner of life, imitate their faith.

Jesus Christ yesterday and to-day is the same, 8
and for ever.³ Be not carried away by various 9
and strange teachings ; for it is well that the heart
be strengthened by grace, not by foods, wherein they
that concern themselves⁴ found no profit.

We have an altar from which they that serve the 10
tabernacle have no right to eat. For of the animals 11
whose blood, as an offering for sin, is carried into
the holy place by the high priest, the bodies are
burnt outside the camp.⁵ Wherefore Jesus also, 12
that he might sanctify the people through his own
blood, suffered outside the gate. Let us therefore 13
go forth unto him outside the camp, bearing his
reproach.⁶ For here we have no abiding city, but 14
we seek for the city that is to come. Through him 15
therefore let us offer up sacrifice of praise continually
to God, that is, fruit of lips giving thanks to his 16
name. But to do good and to distribute, forget
not ; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

Obey your rulers, and submit to them ; for they 17
keep watch over your souls, as men who shall give
account ; that they may do this with joy, and not

¹ Or in all respects. ² Same word as in Acts 16¹⁹. ³ Lit. unto the
ages. ⁴ Lit. they that walk. ⁵ Leviticus 16²⁷ ; Jerusalem with its temple
took the place of the camp and tabernacle. ⁶ Cf. Romans 15¹.

HEBREWS 13

- with grief ; for that would be unprofitable for you.
- 18 Pray for us ; for we persuade ourselves that we have a good conscience, desiring in all things to
- 19 live honourably. But I the more earnestly exhort you to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.
- 20 Now may the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the shepherd of the sheep, the great shepherd, our Lord Jesus, in blood of an eternal
- 21 covenant, knit you together in all that is good, to do his will, working in us¹ whatever is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be the glory for evermore ;² Amen.
- 22 I exhort you, brethren, bear with the word of exhortation ; for I have written to you briefly.
- 23 Know that our brother Timothy has been released,³ with whom, if he hasten his coming, I will see you.
- 24 Salute all your rulers, and all the saints. Those from Italy⁴ salute you.
- 25 The grace be with you all.⁵

¹ Some MSS., 'you.' ² *Lit.* unto the ages of the ages. ³ Of any imprisonment of Timothy nothing is otherwise known. ⁴ Or they of Italy. ⁵ Some MSS. add, 'Amen.'

THE FIRST LETTER OF PETER

PETER, apostle of Jesus Christ, to the chosen 1
sojourners of The Dispersion¹ in Pontus, Galatia,
Cappadocia, the province of Asia,² and Bithynia,
chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the 2
Father, in sanctification by the Spirit, unto obedience,
and sprinkling with the blood of Jesus Christ ;
Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus 3
Christ, who according to his great mercy hath
begotten us again unto a living hope through the
resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto an 4
inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that
fadeth not away, which hath been reserved in
heaven for you, who in the power of God are 5
guarded, through faith, unto a salvation ready to be
revealed in the last season ; wherein³ ye exult, 6
though now for a little while, if need was, ye have
been put to grief in manifold trials ; that what is 7
approved in your faith, which is more precious than
gold which perisheth, and yet is proved by fire, may
be found unto praise and glory and honour in the
revelation of Jesus Christ ; whom not having seen 8
ye love ; on whom, though now ye see him not, yet
believing, ye exult with joy unutterable and full of
glory, receiving the outcome of our faith, salvation 9
of souls. Concerning which salvation, prophets, 10
who prophesied of the grace that was coming unto
you, diligently sought and searched ; searching to 11
what or what manner of season Christ's Spirit
which was in them was disclosing, in solemn declara-
tion, the sufferings coming to Christ and the glories
that would follow ; to whom it was revealed, that 12
not for themselves, but for you, they were ministering

¹ See note, St. John 7 ²⁶. ² See note, Acts 2 ⁹. ³ Or in whom.

I. PETER 1, 2

these things, which now have been announced to you through them that preached the gospel to you in the Holy Spirit sent from heaven ; into which things angels desire to look.

13 Wherefore, girding up the loins of your minds, being perfectly sober, set your hope upon the grace that is ever being brought to you in the revelation
14 of Jesus Christ ; as children of obedience, not fashioning yourselves according to the lusts of
15 former days when you were ignorant ; but, like as he that called you is holy, show yourselves also holy
16 in all manner of living ; seeing that it is written, ' Ye shall be holy ; because I am holy.'

17 And if ye call on him as Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to the work of each, behave yourselves in fear all the time of your
18 sojourning ;¹ knowing that, not with corruptible things, with silver or gold, were ye redeemed out of your aimless manner of life handed down from
19 your forefathers ; but with precious blood, as of a lamb without blemish² and without spot, even
20 of Christ, foreknown indeed before the foundation of the world, but manifested at the end of the
21 times, for the sake of you, who through him are faithful unto God, who raised him from the dead, and gave him glory ; so that your faith and hope are upon God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in your obedience to the truth, unto unfeigned brotherly kindness, from the heart³ love one another fervently ;
23 having been begotten again, not from corruptible seed, but from incorruptible, through the word of God, which⁴ liveth and abideth ; seeing that

24 ' All flesh is as grass,
And all its glory as the flower of grass ;
The grass withereth,
And the flower falleth away,

25 But the word of the Lord abideth for ever.'

Now this is the word of good tidings which was preached unto you.

2 Therefore laying aside all malice and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envyings, and all evil speakings, long, as new-born babes, for the spiritual,

¹ Pass the time of your sojourning here in fear (A.V.). ² Exodus 12¹.
³ Some MSS., 'from a clean heart.' ⁴ Or of God who.

I. PETER 2

pure¹ milk, that thereby ye may grow unto salvation ;
if ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious ; unto 3
whom drawing near, a living stone, rejected indeed 4
by men, but in God's sight chosen, precious, you
also as living stones are being built up, a spiritual 5
house, to be a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual
sacrifices, acceptable to God through Jesus Christ ;
seeing that it stands written, 6

' Behold, I appoint in Zion a chosen stone, a
corner-stone, precious ;

And he that believeth on him² shall not be put
to shame.'

For you therefore who believe is the preciousness ; 7
but for such as disbelieve, ' A stone which the
builders rejected, the same became the head of the
corner,' and ' a stone of stumbling and a rock of 8
offence ' ; who, being disobedient, stumble at the
word ; whereunto also they were appointed. But 9
you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy
nation, a people for God's own possession, that ye
may tell forth the excellences of him that called you
out of darkness into his marvellous light ; you who 10
in time past were not a people, but are now the
people of God ; who had not obtained mercy, but
now have obtained mercy.

Beloved, I exhort you as sojourners and pilgrims,³ 11
to abstain from the lusts of the flesh, which war
against the soul ; behaving yourselves honourably 12
among the Gentiles ; that in what matter they speak
against you as evil-doers, they may by reason of your
good works, as they behold them, glorify God in the
day of visitation.

Be subject to every institution of men, for the 13
Lord's sake ; whether to the king, as supreme ; or 14
to governors, as sent through him for vengeance on
evil-doers, but for praise of them that do well.
For so is the will of God, that by well-doing ye 15
should put to silence the ignorance of those foolish
men ; as freemen,⁴ and not as men making their 16
freedom a cloak of their malice, but as bondmen of
God. Give honour to all men ; love the brother- 17
hood, fear God, honour the king.

¹ Lit. without guile (unadulterated). ² Or it. ³ Same words as in Greek version of Genesis 23. ⁴ Free to do what you ought rather than what you like.

I. PETER 2, 3

18 Household servants, subject yourselves to your
 19 masters with all fear; not only to the good and kindly,
 20 but also to the perverse. For this is acceptable,
 21 if for consciousness of God¹ any endureth sorrows,
 22 suffering wrongfully. For what credit is there, if,
 23 when ye sin and are buffeted, ye take it patiently?
 24 but if, when ye do well and suffer, ye take it
 25 patiently, this is acceptable before God. For here-
 unto ye were called; because Christ also suffered
 for you, leaving you an example, that ye should
 follow his steps; who did no sin, neither was guile
 found in his mouth; who, when he was reviled,
 never reviled in return; when he suffered, he never
 threatened, but committed it to him that judgeth
 righteously;² who himself carried up our sins in
 his own body on to the tree, that we, being dead
 unto sins, should live unto righteousness; and by
 his stripes ye were healed. For ye were going
 astray, like sheep, but have now returned unto the
 Shepherd and Overseer³ of your souls.

3 In like manner, wives, subject yourselves to your
 husbands; that even if any obey not the word,
 they may without word be won through the
 2 behaviour of their wives, beholding your behaviour
 3 chaste in fear. Your adornment, let it not be the out-
 ward adornment of plating the hair, and of wearing
 4 jewels of gold, or of putting on robes; but let it be
 the hidden person of the heart, in the incorruptness
 of that meek and quiet spirit which in God's sight
 5 is of great price. For after this manner in old time
 the holy women also who hoped in God adorned
 6 themselves, subjecting themselves to their husbands;
 as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord; and
 her children ye have now become, if ye do well
 and are not made afraid by any terror.

7 Ye husbands! dwell with your wives in like
 manner, as knowledge directs, paying honour to the
 woman, as to a weaker vessel, as to joint-heirs also⁴
 of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally, be all of one mind, compassionate, loving
 as brethren,⁵ tender-hearted, humble-minded, not
 9 rendering evil for evil, nor reviling for reviling, but,

¹ For conscience towards God (A.V.). ² "Judicanti injuste" (i.e. Pilate), Vulgate. ³ See note, Acts 20²⁸. ⁴ Some MSS., "as being also (yourselves) joint-heirs." ⁵ *Praternitatis amatores* (Vulgate).

I. PETER 3

contrariwise, giving a blessing ; because ye were called with the intent that ye might obtain a blessing.

For,

' He that would love life, 10
 And see good days,
 Let him restrain his tongue from evil,
 And his lips that they speak no guile ;
 Yea, let him turn away from evil, and do good ; 11
 Let him seek peace, and pursue it ;
 For the eyes of the Lord are upon righteous men, 12
 And his ears are towards their supplication ;
 But the face of the Lord is upon men that do evil.'

And who is he that shall harm you, if ye show 13
 yourselves zealous for that which is good? But 14
 even if ye should suffer for righteousness' sake, happy
 are ye. Yea, be not afraid with fear of them,¹
 neither be troubled, but hallow in your hearts the 15
 Lord, the Christ, ready always with an answer to
 every one who asketh you a reason for the hope
 that is in you, yet with meekness and fear ; keeping
 a good conscience, that, in what matter ye are 16
 spoken against, they that pour abuse upon your good
 behaviour in Christ may be put to shame. For it is 17
 better, if the will of God should so will, to suffer
 in doing good, than to suffer in doing evil ; because 18
 Christ also died² once for all on account of sins, a
 righteous man for unrighteous men, that he might
 give you³ access to God, put to death as he was in
 flesh, but brought to life in spirit ; in which also he 19
 went and preached to the spirits in prison, which 20
 aforetime were disobedient, when the long-suffering
 of God was waiting in the days of Noah, while the
 ark was prepared, wherein few (that is, eight souls)
 were saved through water,⁴ which also in the 21
 counterpart⁵ now saveth you, even baptism (not the
 putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the asking
 for⁶ a good conscience towards God), through the 22
 resurrection of Jesus Christ, who is at the right
 hand of God,⁷ having gone into heaven, angels and
 authorities and powers having been made subject
 unto him.

¹ Or fear not what they fear. ² Some MSS., 'suffered.' ³ Some MSS., 'us.' ⁴ Or into which few . . . were brought safely through water. ⁵ Lit. in the antitype. ⁶ Or appeal . . . towards God (R.V.) ; see 2 Samuel 11' (LXX). ⁷ Vulgate adds, 'deglutiens mortem, ut vitæ æternæ heredes efficeremur.'

I. PETER 4

- 4 Seeing, then, that Christ suffered in the flesh, arm
ye yourselves with the same intent (because he that
2 hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin), that
the rest of your time in the flesh ye may live, no
longer unto the lusts of men, but unto the will of God.
3 Time past is surely enough to have spent in working
out the desire of the Gentiles, walking in wanton
ways, lusts, wine-bibbings, revellings, carousings,
4 and unlawful idolatries ; and in this they think it
strange that ye run not with them into the same
5 excess of riot ; and they revile you ; but they will
give account to him that is ready to judge men living
6 and dead. For to dead men also good tidings were
preached with this intent, that they should be
judged, as men are judged, in flesh, but should live,
as God lives, in spirit.
- 7 But the end of all things is at hand ; therefore be
8 of sound mind, and be sober unto prayers ; above
all else keeping fervent your love among yourselves
9 (for love covereth a multitude of sins) ; showing
hospitality one to another without murmuring ;
10 even as each received a gift, ministering it among
yourselves as good stewards of the manifold grace of
11 God ; if any speaketh, speaking as oracles of God ;
if any ministereth, ministering as from the strength
that God supplies ; that in all things God may be
glorified through Jesus Christ, whose are the glory
and the dominion for evermore ;¹ Amen.
- 12 Beloved, see nothing strange in the fiery trial
among you, that is coming upon you to prove you ;
13 as if some strange thing were happening to you ;
but, in as far as ye are partakers in the sufferings
of the Christ, rejoice ; that in the revelation of his
14 glory ye may also rejoice and exult. If ye suffer
reproach concerning the name of Christ, happy are
ye, in that the Spirit of the Glory, even the Spirit
15 of God, resteth upon you. For let not any one of
you suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evil-doer,
16 or as a meddler in other men's matters ; but if
he suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed,
17 but under this name let him glorify God. For the
time hath come for the judgement to begin with the
household of God ; but if it begin first with us, what

¹ *Lit.* unto the ages of the ages.

I. PETER 4, 5

will be the end of them that obey not the gospel of
 God ! And if the righteous scarcely is saved, where 18
 will the ungodly and sinner appear ! Wherefore let 19
 them also that suffer according to the will of God
 commit their souls in well-doing to a faithful Creator.

Such then as are elders among you, I exhort, I 5
 the fellow-elder and witness of the sufferings of the
 Christ, the partaker also of the glory that will be
 revealed ; be shepherds to God's flock, which is 2
 among you,¹ not by constraint, but willingly, accord-
 ing to the will of God ; nor yet for base gain, but
 with a ready mind ; nor yet as men lording it over 3
 the charges allotted to them, but making yourselves 4
 examples to the flock ; and when the Chief Shepherd
 hath been manifested, ye will receive the crown of
 glory, made of amaranth.²

. Likewise ye that are younger, be subject to older 5
 men. Yea, gird yourselves all with humility one
 towards another ; for God resisteth the proud, but
 giveth grace to the humble.

Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty 6
 hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time ;
 casting all your anxiety upon him, because he careth 7
 for you. Be sober, be watchful ; your adversary, the 8
 devil, as a roaring lion, goeth about seeking some
 one to devour ; whom resist, firm in the faith, 9
 knowing that³ the same kind of sufferings are being
 worked out by your brotherhood throughout the
 world. But the God of all grace, who called you unto 10
 his eternal glory in Christ, will himself, after ye have
 suffered a little while, restore, establish, strengthen,
 settle you. His is the dominion for evermore ; Amen. 11

Through Silvanus, the faithful brother, as I account 12
 him, I am writing to you in few words, exhorting and
 bearing witness that this is the true grace of God ;
 whereunto stand fast. She that⁴ is in Babylon,⁵ 13
 chosen together with you, saluteth you ; and so doth
 Mark my son. Salute one another with a kiss of love. 14
 Peace unto you all that are in Christ.

¹ Some MSS. add, 'acting as overseers.' ² See Milton, *Paradise Lost*, 9th, etc. ³ For construction see St. Luke 4th. Or knowing how to pay the same due of sufferings as your brethren throughout the world. ⁴ A few authorities give, 'The church which.' The text is variously taken to mean a woman or a church ; see 2 John 1. ⁵ It is generally held that the apostle by the word Babylon means Rome, as St. John does in the Revelation (14th, etc.).

THE SECOND LETTER OF PETER

1 SYMBON PETER,¹ bondman and apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that in the justice of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ have been allotted a
2 faith equally privileged with our own; Grace to you and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

3 Seeing that his divine power hath bestowed upon us all things that tend to life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that called us by his own glory
4 and excellence; whereby he hath bestowed upon us his precious and very great promises, that through them ye may become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world
5 through lust; yea, and for this very reason bringing in all diligence, in your faith provide courage, in your courage knowledge, in your knowledge self-control, in your self-control steadfastness, in your steadfastness godliness, in your godliness brotherly
6 kindness, in your brotherly kindness love. For
7 if these things are yours, and are increasing, they cause you to be not idle nor unfruitful as regards
8 the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. For he that lacketh these things is blind, near-sighted, having forgotten the cleansing from his sins of time past.
9 Wherefore, brethren, be diligent the more to make your calling and selection sure; for if ye do these
10 things ye will never stumble; for so will be richly provided for you your entrance into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.
11
12 Wherefore I shall always be careful to remind you²

¹ Some MSS., 'Simon Peter' (but see Acts 15¹⁴). ² A.V. (other MSS.), 'I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance.'

II. PETER 1, 2

of these things, though ye know them and have been
established in the truth that is with you. But I think 13
it right, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to
stir you up by way of remembrance ; knowing 14
that the putting off of my tabernacle cometh
swiftly, even as our Lord Jesus Christ signified
to me. Yea, I will endeavour that on every occasion 15
ye may be able after my departure¹ to remind your-
selves of these things. For no cunningly devised 16
fables were we following, when we made known to
you the power and coming² of our Lord Jesus Christ ;
but we have been spectators of his majesty. For 17
when he received from God the Father honour
and glory, when such a voice was borne to him by
the Majestic Glory, ' This is my Son, my beloved,
in whom I am well pleased ' ; this very voice we 18
ourselves heard when it was borne from heaven,
while we were with him on the holy mount. And 19
we have something surer, the prophetic word ;
whereto ye do well to take heed, as to a lamp
shining in a gloomy place, until the day dawn, and
the morning-star rise in your hearts ; knowing this 20
first, that no prophecy of scripture admits of a
private interpretation ; for not by the will of man 21
was prophecy brought at any time ; but borne along
by the Holy Spirit men spoke from God.

But there rose up false prophets also among the 2
people, even as among you there will be false
teachers, men who will secretly bring in destructive
heresies, even disowning the Master that bought
them, bringing on themselves swift destruction.
And many will follow their wanton doings ; by 2
reason of whom the way of the truth will be blas-
phemed. And in covetousness they will by feigned 3
stories make gain of you ; they for whom the
sentence from of old stands not idle, and their
destruction slumbereth not. For if God spared 4
not angels when they sinned, but casting them
down into hell³ committed them to pits⁴ of blackness,
reserved as they are unto judgement ; and spared 5
not the old world, but kept safe (with seven others)
Noah, a herald of righteousness, when he brought

¹ *Lit.* exodus. ² *Lit.* parousia, the second coming, Advent. St. Matthew 24², 29. ³ *Lit.* into Tartarus. ⁴ Some MSS., ' chains.'

II. PETER 2

6 a flood upon the world of ungodly men ; and
burying under ashes the cities Sodom and Gomorrah
condemned them to be overthrown, having set for
7 ungodly men a warning of things to come¹ ; and
delivered righteous Lot, in sore distress from the
8 wanton behaviour of the lawless (for in seeing and
hearing that righteous man, as he dwelt among them,
from day to day was tormenting his righteous soul
9 with unlawful deeds²) ; the Lord knoweth how to
deliver godly men out of trial, but to reserve un-
righteous men under punishment³ unto the day of
10 judgement ; but especially such as walk, following
the flesh in lust of defilement, and despise authority.
Daring, arrogant, they tremble not as they rail
11 at glorious beings ; whereas angels, though greater
in might and power, bring not a railing charge
12 against them before the Lord. But these, as
animals without reason, born in the way of instinct
to be taken and destroyed, railing about matters
of which they know nothing, will in their corruption
13 surely be destroyed, suffering iniquity as reward⁴
of iniquity ; counting it pleasure to revel in the
daytime ; spots and blemishes, revelling in their
14 deceits,⁵ while they feast with you ; having eyes
full of an adulteress, and that cannot cease from
sin ; enticing unstable souls ; having hearts exer-
15 cised in covetousness ; children of a curse. For-
saking the straight way, they wandered, having
followed the way of Balaam, Bcor's son, who loved
16 the reward of iniquity, but met with rebuke for his
transgression ; a dumb ass⁶ by making utterance with
man's voice restrained the madness of the prophet.
17 These are springs without water, and mists driven
by a storm ; for whom the blackness of darkness
18 hath been reserved. For, uttering insolent words
of vanity, they entice in the lusts of the flesh, by
wanton ways, such as are barely escaping from
19 them that live in error ; promising them freedom,
though they themselves are bondmen of corruption ;
for by what any has been overcome, by the same

¹ Some MSS., 'having set an example of those who should live ungodly lives.' ² *Aspectu enim et auditu justus erat habitans apud eos qui diem de die animam justam iniquis operibus cruciabant (Vulgate).*
³ Or chastisement. ⁴ Or wronged (defrauded) of the wages. ⁵ Some MSS., 'love-feasts.' ⁶ *I. it. yoke-bearer (St. Matthew 21 4).*

II. PETER 2, 3

he has been also brought into bondage. For if, after 20
 escaping the defilements of the world by the knowl-
 edge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are
 again entangled therein and overcome, the last state 21
 has become worse for them than the first. For it
 were better for them not to have known the way of
 righteousness, than, having known it, to turn back
 from the holy commandment delivered to them. It 22
 has happened to them according to the true proverb,
 'A dog turning back to his vomit,' and 'a sow after
 a wash to wallowing in the mire.'¹

This, beloved, is now the second letter I am writing 3
 to you, in both which I stir up your pure minds
 by way of remembrance, that ye may call to 2
 mind the words spoken beforehand by the holy
 prophets, and the commandment of your apostles,
 even of the Lord and Saviour; knowing this first, 3
 that there will come in the last days scoffers with
 scoffing, walking according to their own lusts, and 4
 saying, 'Where is the promise of his coming?' for,
 ever since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue
 as they were from the beginning of creation.' For 5
 this they wilfully forget, that there were heavens
 from of old, and an earth built up out of water and
 amid water, by the word of God; by which means 6
 the world that then was, deluged with water, perished.
 But the heavens that now are, and the earth, by 7
 the same word have been stored up for fire, being
 reserved unto the day of judgement and destruction
 of ungodly men.

But as for you beloved, forget not this one thing, 8
 that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years,
 and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not 9
 slack concerning his promise, as some count slack-
 ness; but is long suffering towards you,² not wishing
 that any should perish, but that all should come to
 repentance. But the day of the Lord will come, as 10
 a thief cometh; in which the heavens will pass away
 with a rushing noise, while the heavenly bodies³
 burning fiercely will be dissolved, and the earth and
 the works that are therein will not be found.⁴ Seeing 11

¹ *Sus lota in voluntate luti (Vulgate).* ² Some MSS., 'for your sakes.'
³ *Or elements.* ⁴ See Appendix II.

II. PETER 3

- that all these things are thus being dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy
- 12 behaviour and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God,¹ by reason of which the heavens being on fire will be dissolved, and
- 13 the heavenly bodies burning fiercely melt away. But, according to his promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.
- 14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for these things, be diligent to be found by him, without spot and blameless, in peace; and account the long-suffering of our Lord to be salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom
- 16 given to him, wrote unto you;² as also he did in all his letters, speaking in them of these things; in which letters are some things hard to understand, which the ignorant and unstable pervert, as they pervert the rest of the scriptures also, to their own
- 17 destruction. You therefore, beloved, knowing it beforehand, be on your guard, lest, carried away by the error of the lawless, ye fall from your proper steadfastness. But grow in grace and in knowledge
- 18 of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be the glory both now and to the day of eternity.

¹ Cf. Acts 3¹⁹, ²⁶. ² See Romans 2⁴.

THE LETTER OF JUDAS

JUDAS,¹ bondman of Jesus Christ, and also brother of James, to the called, who have been loved² in God the Father and kept for Jesus Christ; Mercy unto you and peace and love be multiplied. 1 2

Beloved, while I was using all diligence to write to you about our common salvation, I felt constrained to write at once to you, and exhort you to contend earnestly for the faith³ delivered once for all to the saints. For there have crept in secretly certain men, they that of old have been portrayed unto the sentence here named, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into wantonness, and disowning our only Master and Lord, Jesus Christ. 3 4

But I would remind you, though once for all ye came to all knowledge, that the Lord,⁴ having brought a people safely out of the land of Egypt, at the second time⁵ destroyed them that believed not. And angels, those that kept not their own principality, but forsook their proper habitation, he hath kept in everlasting bonds under blackness unto the judgement of the great day; even as Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbouring cities, having in like manner with these given themselves up to fornication, and gone after forbidden flesh, are set forth as an example, undergoing the penalty of eternal fire. 5 6 7

Yet likewise these men also in their dreamings defile the flesh, disregard authority, rail at glorious beings. But Michael the archangel, when, contending with the devil, he was disputing about 8 9

¹ Or Jude (spelt in Greek as the name of the traitor apostle). ² Some MSS., 'sanctified.' ³ Or to contend (resting) upon the faith. ⁴ Some MSS., 'that Jesus.' ⁵ Of their needing help; see Numbers 14^{28, 29}.

JUDAS

- the body of Moses,¹ durst not bring against him a railing charge, but said, 'The Lord rebuke thee !'
- 10 But these men, whatsoever things they know not, they rail at ; but whatsoever things they, like the animals without reason, understand by instinct,
- 11 in these things they are destroyed. Woe unto them ! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and given themselves up to the transgression of Balaam for reward, and have perished in the contention of Korah.²
- 12 These are the men that feast together without fear, spots on³ your love-feasts ; pasturing themselves ; clouds without water, carried away by winds ; trees in the fall, without fruit, twice dead,⁴ rooted
- 13 out ; wild waves of the sea, foaming up their own shames ;⁵ stars going astray, for whom the blackness of darkness hath been reserved for ever.
- 14 To these men also Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied when he said,⁶ 'Behold ! the Lord hath
- 15 come with tens of thousands of his holy ones, to execute judgement upon all, and to convict all the ungodly of all their deeds of ungodliness, which they in ungodly manner committed, and of all the hard things that ungodly sinners-spoke against him.'
- 16 These are murmurers, grumblers, walking according to their lusts (and their mouths speak insolent words), paying admiration to persons for the sake
- 17 of profit. But as for you, beloved, call to mind the words that have been spoken beforehand by the
- 18 apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ ; that they used to say to you, 'In the last time there will be scoffers, walking according to their lusts in ungodly acts.'
- 19 These are they that make separations, sensual,
- 20 not having the Spirit.'⁷ But as for you, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith,
- 21 praying in the Holy Spirit, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord
- 22 Jesus Christ, unto eternal life. And to some be
- 23 merciful, though they contend ;⁸ save them,⁹ snatch-

¹ Satan claimed the body, as not deserving burial by reason of the murder of the Egyptian, Exodus 2¹² (Apocryphal Assumption of Moses).

² The writer speaks prophetically of the fate coming on the men mentioned in verse 4, as if it had already come. ³ Or hidden rocks in. ⁴ In sin, first by nature, then by apostasy; Hebrews 4¹⁴. ⁵ Isaiah 57²⁰. ⁶ Quotation from apocryphal book of Enoch. ⁷ Or unspiritual. ⁸ The Greek text of verses 22, 23, is uncertain; some MSS. read, 'and some refute while they contend.' ⁹ Some MSS., 'others save' (ye).

JUDAS

ing them out of the fire ; to others be merciful with fear, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

Now to him that is able to guard you from 24
stumbling, and to set you before his glory, without
blemish, in exceeding joy ; to the only God our 25
Saviour, through Jesus Christ our Lord, belong
glory, majesty, dominion, and authority, before all
time, and now, and for evermore ;¹ Amen.

¹ *Lit.* for all the ages.

THE FIRST LETTER OF JOHN

- 1 THAT which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld, and our hands felt,¹ concerning
2 the Word, the Life—and the Life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare to you the Life, the eternal Life, which was with the
3 Father and was manifested unto us—that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us ; yea, and our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus
4 Christ ; and these things we write, that our joy may be made full.
- 5 And the message which we have heard from him and announce unto you is this : that God is light,
6 and in him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with him, yet we walk in the
7 darkness, we lie, and are not doing the truth ; but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus
8 his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth
9 is not in us. If we acknowledge our sins, he may be trusted and is righteous to forgive us our sins, and
10 to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.
- 2 My little children, I write these things to you, that ye may not sin. And if any one sin, we have an Advocate² with the Father, Jesus Christ the
2 righteous ; and he is the propitiation³ for⁴ our sins ; yet not for ours only, but also for the whole
3 world. And herein we perceive that we know him,
4 namely, if we keep his commandments. He that

¹ St. Luke 24³⁹. ² Greek, *paraclete*. ³ See note, Romans 3²⁵. ⁴ Or on account of.

I. JOHN 2

saith, 'I know him,' and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him; but whoso keepeth his word, in him verily the love of God has been perfected. Herein we perceive that we are in him; he that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as Jesus¹ walked.

Beloved, it is no new commandment I am writing to you, but an old commandment² which ye had from the beginning; the old commandment is the word which ye heard. Again a new commandment I am writing to you; and this is true in him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the Light, the true Light, is now shining. He that saith he is in the light, yet he hateth his brother, is in the darkness until now. He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and in him is found no occasion of stumbling.³ But he that hateth his brother is in the darkness, and walketh in the darkness; and he knoweth not whither he goeth, because the darkness hath blinded his eyes.

I am writing to you, my little children,⁴ because your sins have been forgiven you for his name's sake. I am writing to you, fathers, because ye know him that is from the beginning. I am writing to you, young men, because ye have overcome the evil one.

I write to you, little children, because ye know the Father. I write to you, fathers, because ye know him that is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the evil one.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any one loveth the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because all that is in the world, namely, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the vainglory of life, comes not from the Father,⁵ but comes from the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust thereof; but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

Little ones, it is a last hour; and even as ye heard that Antichrist is coming, so now there have arisen

¹ *Lit.* HE (emphatic), that well-known one, 'The Master.' ² Leviticus 19¹⁸. ³ Or in it there is no danger of stumbling. ⁴ Twice he sees them; each time first as one group (little children); then as parted by their ages into two. ⁵ See St. James 3¹⁴.

I. JOHN 2, 3

many Antichrists ; whereby we know that it is a last
19 hour. They went out from us, but they were not of
us ; for had they been of us, they would have con-
tinued with us ; but they went out, that they might
20 be made manifest that they all are not of us.¹ And
you have an anointing from the Holy One, and ye
21 all have knowledge.² My reason for writing to you
is not that ye know not the truth, but that ye know
22 it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is the liar but
he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? This is the
Antichrist, even he that disowneth the Father and
23 the Son. No one who disowneth the Son hath the
Father ; he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the
24 Father also. As for you, that which ye heard from
the beginning, let it abide in you. If that abide in
you which ye heard from the beginning, you also will
25 abide in the Son and in the Father. And this is the
promise that he himself promised us, the life eternal.
26 These things I write to you concerning them that
27 deceive you. And as for you, the anointing that ye
received from him abideth in you, and ye need not
that any one teach you ; but as his anointing
teacheth you concerning all things, and is true, and
is no lie, and even as it taught you, ye abide in him.
28 And now, my little children, abide in him ; that, if
he shall be manifested, we may have confidence,
and not shrink ashamed from him at his coming.
29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye perceive that
every one also who worketh righteousness hath been
begotten of him.

3 See what manner of love the Father hath bestowed
upon us, that we should be called Children of God ;
and such we are. This is why the world knoweth us
2 not ; because it knew him not. Beloved, now we
are children of God, and it never yet was made
manifest what we shall be. We know that, if he³
shall be manifested, we shall be like him ; because
3 we shall see him even as he is. And every one who
sets this hope on him purifieth himself even as Jesus⁴
4 is pure. Every one who commits sin commits law-
5 lessness also ; and sin is lawlessness.⁵ And ye know

¹ Or that not one of them is of us. ² Some MSS., 'and know all things' (St. John 14²⁷). ³ Or it. ⁴ See note to 2⁴. ⁵ The assertion of the selfish will against a paramount authority (Westcott).

I. JOHN 3

that Jesus¹ was manifested that he might take away
sins ; and in him is no sin. Whosoever abideth in 6
him sinneth not ; whosoever sinneth hath never seen
him, neither hath known him.

My little children, let no one deceive you ; he that 7
doeth righteousness is righteous ; even as Jesus¹ is
righteous. He that doeth sin is a child of the devil ; 8
because the devil sinneth from the beginning. To
this end the Son of God was manifested ; that he
might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever has 9
been begotten of God doeth no sin ; because his seed²
abideth in him. And, because he has been begotten
of God, he cannot sin. In this the children of God 10
are manifest, and the children of the devil ; whoso-
ever doeth not righteousness is not a child of God,
neither is he that loveth not his brother. For the 11
message that ye heard from the beginning is this,
that we should love one another ; not as Cain was 12
a child of the evil one and slew his own brother.
And wherefore slew he him? Because his own
works were evil, but his brother's righteous.

Marvel not, brethren, if the world hateth you. 13
We know that we have passed out of death into life ; 14
because we love the brethren. He that loveth not
abideth in death. Every one who hateth his brother 15
is a murderer ; and ye know that no murderer
hath eternal life abiding in him. Herein we know 16
The Love,³ that Jesus¹ laid down his life for us ;
and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.
But whoso hath the world's livelihood, and 17
beholdeth his brother in need, and shutteth up his
heart from him, how abideth the love of God in him?

My little children, let us not love in word, nor 18
with the tongue, but in deed and truth. Herein we 19
shall know that we are of the truth, and shall set our
hearts at rest before him ; because, if our hearts 20
condemn us,⁴ God is greater than our hearts, and
knoweth all things. Beloved, if our hearts condemn 21
us not, we have confidence towards God ; and what- 22
soever we ask, we receive from him, because we keep
his commandments and do the things that are

¹ See note to 2^o. ² What God implanted. (James 1²²; St. Luke 8²¹
³ The Love par excellence. ⁴ There is in the original here a second
'because,' which is omitted above as being redundant in English; see
1 Timothy 6⁷

I. JOHN 3, 4

23 pleasing in his sight. And his commandment is this,
that we should believe in the name of his Son Jesus
Christ, and love one another, even as he gave us
24 commandment. And he that keepeth his command-
ments abideth in God, and God in him. And herein
we know that he abideth in us, from the Spirit
which he gave us.

4 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but test the
spirits, whether they are from God ; because many
2 false prophets have gone out into the world. Herein
ye know the Spirit of God ; every spirit that
acknowledgeth that Jesus Christ has come in flesh
3 is from God. And every spirit that acknowledgeth
not¹ Jesus, is not from God ; and this is the spirit
of the Antichrist, of which ye have heard that it
cometh : and now it is already in the world.
4 You are children of God, little ones, and have
overcome them ; because greater is he that is in you
5 than he that is in the world. They are of the world ;
therefore of the world they speak, and the world
6 hearkeneth to them. We are children of God ; he
that knoweth God hearkeneth to us ; he that is not
a child of God hearkeneth not to us. Hereby we
know the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.
7 Beloved, let us love one another ; because love is
from God, and every one who loveth has been
8 begotten of God and knoweth God. He that loveth
9 not never knew God ; because God is love. Herein
the love of God was manifested in us, that God hath
sent his Son, his only Son, into the world, that we
10 may live through him. Herein is the love, not that we
have loved God, but that he loved us and sent his
11 Son, a propitiation for² our sins. Beloved, if God so
12 loved us, we also ought to love one another. No one
hath ever beheld God ; if we love one another,
God abideth in us, and his love is perfected in us.
13 Herein we know that we abide in him and he in us,
14 that he hath given unto us of his Spirit. And we have
beheld and bear witness that the Father hath sent
15 the Son as Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall
acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God, God
16 abideth in him, and he in God. And we know and
have believed the love that God hath to us. God is

¹ Latin MSS. read, 'doeth: way with' (solvit). ² Or on account of.

I. JOHN 4, 5

love ; and he that abideth in love abideth in God,
 and God abideth in him. Herein the love is made 17
 perfect with us, that in the day of the judgement we
 may have confidence ; because as Jesus¹ is, even so
 are we in this world. There is no fear in love ; nay, 18
 the perfect love casteth out fear, because fear brings
 punishment ;² but he that feareth is not made
 perfect in love. We love, because he first loved us. 19
 If any one says, ' I love God,' yet he hateth his 20
 own brother, he is a liar ; for he that loveth not his
 brother whom he hath seen, cannot³ love God whom
 he hath not seen. And this commandment we have 21
 from him, that he that loveth God love his own
 brother also.

Every one who believeth that Jesus is the Christ has 5
 been begotten of God ; and every one who loveth him
 that begot loveth him that has been begotten of him.
 Herein we know that we love the children of God ; 2
 it is when we love God and do his commandments.
 For the love of God is this, that we keep his com- 3
 mandments ; and his commandments are not
 grievous. For whatsoever has been begotten of God 4
 overcometh the world ; and this is the victory that
 hath overcome the world, even our faith. Who is he 5
 that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that
 Jesus is the Son of God ? This is he that came with 6
 water and blood, Jesus Christ ; not in the water only,
 but in the water and in the blood.⁴ And it is the 7
 Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is⁵
 the truth. For they that bear witness are three, the
 Spirit, and the water,⁶ and the blood ; and the three 8
 agree in one. If we receive the witness of men, the 9
 witness of God is greater ; because the witness of
 God is this, that he hath borne witness concerning
 his Son. He that believeth on the Son of God hath 10
 the witness in himself. He, that believeth not God,
 hath made him a liar ; because he hath not believed
 in the witness that God hath borne concerning his

¹ Note to 2^d. ² Or chastisement. ³ Some MSS., 'how can he?'
⁴ The water of his baptism and the blood of his death. ⁵ Quoniam
 Christus est veritas (Vulgate). ⁶ The A.V. gives verses 7, 8, as follows,
 'For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word,
 and the Holy Ghost ; and these three are one. And there are three
 that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water,' etc. ; but this
 addition is unsupported by any good authority.

I. JOHN 5

11 Son. And this is the witness, that God gave us
12 eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that hath
the Son hath the life; he that hath not the Son
of God hath not the life.

13 These things I write to you, that ye may know
that ye have eternal life, even you who believe on
14 the name of the Son of God. And the confidence
that we have towards him is this, that, if we ask
15 any thing according to his will, he heareth us; and
if we know that he heareth us whatsoever we ask,
we know that we have the things asked for, which
16 we have asked from him. If any see his brother
sinning a sin not unto death, he shall ask and¹ shall
give him life, even to them that sin not unto death.
There is sin unto death; not concerning this do
17 I say he should make request. All unrighteousness
is sin; and there is sin not unto death.

18 We know that every one who has been begotten
of God sinneth not; but he that was begotten of
God² keepeth him,³ and the evil one lays no hold
19 on him. We know that we are children of God,
20 and the whole world lieth in the evil one. But we
know that the Son of God hath come, and hath
given us understanding, that we may know him
that is true; and we are in him that is true, in his
Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God, and eternal
21 life. My little children, guard yourselves from the
idols.

¹ Some renderings insert 'God' here; in the text 'give' = 'gain'; God giving it through him; cf. St. James 5²⁰. ² i. e. Jesus Christ.

³ Some MSS., 'himself'; in which case the nominative will coincide in meaning with the preceding one.

THE SECOND LETTER OF JOHN

THE elder unto a chosen lady¹ and her children, 1
whom I love in truth (and not I only, but even all 2
they that know the truth), for the truth's sake, 2
which abideth in us ; and with us it will be for ever. 3
There will be with us grace, mercy, peace, from God 3
the Father, and from Jesus Christ, the Son of the 3
Father, in truth and love.

I rejoiced greatly that I found some of thy 4
children walking in truth, even as we received 4
commandment from the Father. And now I entreat 5
thee, lady¹ (not as writing to thee a new com- 5
mandment, but that which we had from the 5
beginning), that we love one another. And this is 6
the love, that we should walk according to his 6
commandments. This is the commandment, even 6
as ye heard from the beginning, that ye should walk 7
in it. For many deceivers have gone forth into the 7
world, they that acknowledge not that Jesus Christ 7
cometh in flesh ; this is the deceiver and the Anti- 8
christ. Take heed to yourselves, that ye lose not 8
the things that we² wrought, but may receive a full 8
reward. Every one who advanceth, and abideth 9
not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God ; he that 9
abideth in the teaching, he hath both the Father and 9
the Son. If any one cometh unto you, and bringeth 10
not this teaching, receive him not into your house, 10
and give him no greeting ; for he that giveth him 11
greeting is a partaker in his evil works. 11

Many things as I have to write to you, I would 12
not write them with paper and ink ; but I hope to 12
be with you, and to speak face to face, that our³ joy 12
may be made full. The children of thy chosen 13
sister salute thee. 13

¹ The Greek word is the feminine of that rendered 'sir' or 'lord' ; some, taking it as a proper name, give 'the chosen Kyria' ; some take 'lady' and 'children' here and in 13, to mean a church (congregation) and its members. See 1 Peter § 21. ² Some MSS., 'ye.' ³ Some MSS., 'your.'

THE THIRD LETTER OF JOHN

- 1 THE elder unto Gaius, the beloved, whom I love in truth.
- 2 Beloved, I pray that in all things thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.
- 3 For I rejoiced greatly when brethren came and bore witness to thy truth, even as thou walkest in truth.
- 4 I have no greater joy than these things, that I may hear of my children walking in the truth.
- 5 Beloved, thou doest a deed of faith in whatsoever thou workest for them that are brethren and strangers withal ; who before the church have borne witness to thy love ; whom thou wilt do well to send on their way worthily of God ; for on behalf of the Name they went forth, taking nothing from the heathen. We therefore ought to entertain such, that we may become fellow-workers for the truth.
- 9 I wrote somewhat to the church ; but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the first place among them, welcomes us not. Wherefore, if I come, I will bring to remembrance his works which he doeth, prating against us with evil words ; and not contented therewith, he himself welcomes not The Brethren, and them that would do so he hinders, and expels them from the church.
- 11 Beloved, imitate not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good is a child of God ; he that doeth evil hath never seen God. Demetrius hath had the witness of all men and of the truth itself ; yea, we also bear witness, and thou knowest that our witness is true.
- 13 Many things I had to write to thee, yet I wish not to write to thee with ink and pen ; but I hope to see thee shortly, and we will speak face to face. Peace be to thee. The Friends¹ salute thee. Salute The Friends one by one.

¹ See Acts 27 °.

THE REVELATION¹ TO JOHN

A REVELATION from Jesus Christ, which God gave 1
him, to show to his bondmen the things that must
shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified 2
them through his angel to his bondman, John; who
bore witness to the word of God and to the witness of
Jesus Christ, whatsoever things he saw. Happy are 3
the reader and they that hear the words of the
prophecy, and keep the things that are written
therein; for the time is at hand.

John to the seven churches² in the province of 4
Asia³:—Grace be to you and peace, from 'He that
is, and that was, and that cometh';⁴ and from the
seven spirits that are before his throne; and from 5
Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn of
the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth. To
him that loveth us and loosed⁵ us from our sins by
his blood (and he made of us a kingdom, priests unto 6
his God and Father); to him belong the glory and
the dominion for evermore;⁶ Amen. Behold, he 7
cometh with the clouds; and every eye shall see
him, and whosoever pierced him; and all the tribes
of the earth shall wail over him; even so, Amen.

I am the Alpha and the Omega,⁷ saith the Lord 8
God, he that is, and that was, and that cometh, the
Almighty.⁸

I, John, your brother and partaker with you in the 9
tribulation and kingdom and steadfastness that are
in Jesus, found myself in the island called Patmos,
because of the word of God, and the witness of
Jesus.⁹ I found myself in the Spirit on the Lord's 10
day, and I heard behind me a loud voice, as of a

¹ Or APOCALYPSE (Appendix XI). ² Or congregations (and elsewhere).
³ See note to Acts 2^o. ⁴ This phrase, in Greek and in English, is
grammatically an indeclinable noun. ⁵ Some MSS., 'washed.' ⁶ Lit.
to the ages of the ages (and elsewhere). ⁷ The names of the first and last
letters of the Greek alphabet (symbol of infinitude); see 21^o; 22^o.
⁸ Or Ruler of all (and elsewhere). ⁹ The witness and revelation given
through him.

REVELATION 1, 2

11 trumpet, saying, 'What thou seest, write it in a book, and send it to the seven churches; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamum, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto
12 Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.' And I turned to see what voice was speaking with me. And having
13 turned I saw seven golden lamp-stands; and in the midst of the lamp-stands one like unto a son of man, clothed with a garment down to the feet, and girt
14 about at the breasts with a golden girdle. But his head and his hair were white, as white wool, as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire; and his
15 feet like burnished copper, as if it had been made to glow in a furnace; and his voice was as the
16 voice of many waters. And he had in his right hand seven stars; and out of his mouth proceeded a sword, sharp, two-edged; and his countenance
17 was as the sun shineth in its strength. And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead; and he laid his right hand upon me, saying,

18 Fear not; I am the First and the Last, and the Living One; and I died, and, behold, I am living for evermore, and I hold the keys of death and of
19 Hades.¹ Write therefore the things that thou sawest, and the things that are, and the things that
20 will come to pass after them. As for the secret of the seven stars that thou sawest upon my right hand, and the seven golden lamp-stands; the seven stars are angels² of the seven churches, and the seven lamp-stands are seven churches.

2 To the angel of the church in Ephesus write:—

These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the
2 seven golden lamp-stands; I know thy works and thy labour and steadfastness, and that thou canst not endure evil men, and hast tested them that call themselves apostles (and they are not), and hast
3 found them false; and thou hast steadfastness, and hast endured for my name's sake, and hast not
4 grown weary. Yet I have against thee, that thou
5 hast put away thy love, the first love. Remember therefore whence thou hast fallen, and repent, and do the first works; else I am coming to thee, and will move thy lamp-stand out of its place, unless

¹ The unseen spirit world. ² See Daniel 10¹³,²⁰.

REVELATION 2

thou repent. Yet this thou hast, that thou hatest 6
 the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. (He 7
 that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith
 to the churches.) To him that overcometh I will
 give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the
 paradise¹ of God.

And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write :— 8

These things saith the First and the Last, who 9
 died and came to life ; I know thy tribulation and
 thy poverty (yet thou art rich), and how thou art 9
 slandered by them that say they are Jews (and
 they are not, but are a synagogue² of Satan). Fear 10
 not the things that thou art about to suffer. Behold,
 the devil is about to put some of you into prison,
 that ye may be tested ; and ye will have a ten days'
 tribulation. Show thyself faithful unto death, and
 I will give thee the crown of life.³ (He that hath an 11
 ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the
 churches.) He that overcometh shall not be hurt
 by the second death.

And to the angel of the church in Pergamum 12
 write:—

These things saith he that hath the sword, the 13
 two-edged, the sharp ; I know where thou dwellest,
 even where Satan's throne is ; and thou holdest fast
 my name, and didst not renounce thy faith in me,
 even in the days of Antipas my witness, my faithful
 one, who was killed among you, where Satan
 dwelleth. Yet I have a few things against thee ; 14
 that thou hast there some that hold the teaching of
 Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block
 before the children of Israel, that they might eat
 things sacrificed to idols and commit fornication.
 So thou hast also some that hold the teaching of the 15
 Nicolaitans in like manner. Repent therefore ; 16
 else I am coming to thee quickly, and will make
 war against them with the sword of my mouth.⁴
 (He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit 17
 saith to the churches.) To him that overcometh
 I will give of the hidden⁵ manna, and I will give him
 a white pebble,⁶ and on the pebble a new name

¹ Same word as in Greek of Genesis 2⁸ (rendered there, 'garden').
² Or congregation. ³ Will crown (reward) thee with life (eternal); cf.
 verse 7: ⁴ Isaiah 11⁴; Hebrews 4¹⁴. ⁵ See Exodus 16²⁰; 2 Maccabees
 2¹⁻². ⁶ Stone (A.V.), calculus (Vulgate); see Acts 26¹⁴.

REVELATION 2, 3

written, which no one knoweth except him that receiveth it.

18 And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write :—

These things saith the Son of God, he that hath his eyes like a flame of fire, and his feet are like burnished copper ; I know thy works, and thy love and faith and ministry and steadfastness, and thy last works greater than the first. Yet I have against thee, that thou sufferest the woman¹ Jezebel, who, calling herself a prophetess, both teacheth and seduceth my bondmen to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols. And I gave her time that she might repent, and she willeth not to repent of her fornication. Behold, I lay her prostrate on a bed,² and bring them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, unless they repent of her deeds. And I will kill her children with pestilence ;³ and all the churches shall know that I am he that searcheth desires and hearts ; and I will give unto you, unto each, according to your works. But to you I say, to the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not had this teaching, such as know not ' the deep things of Satan ' (as they call them) ; I put upon you no other burden. Howbeit, that which ye have, hold it till I come. And he that overcometh, and that keepeth my works unto the end, to him I will give authority over the nations (and he shall shepherd them with a rod of iron, as vessels of potter's clay are broken to pieces), as I also have received from my Father ;⁴ and I will give him the morning star.⁵ He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.

3 And to the angel of the church in Sardis write :—

These things saith he that hath the seven spirits of God and the seven stars ; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and thou art dead. Show thyself watchful, and strengthen the things that remain, which were ready to die ; for I have found no works of thine⁶ fulfilled before my God. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard ; and keep it, and repent. There—

¹ Some MSS., ' thy wife.' ² Or couch. ³ Lit. death (as 6⁹). ⁴ Psalm 2⁷, 1⁹. ⁵ Cf. 22¹⁶. ⁶ Some MSS., ' not found thy works.'

REVELATION 3

fore, if thou wilt not watch, I will come as a thief cometh, and thou shalt not know at what hour I will come upon thee. Yet thou hast a few persons¹ in Sardis who have not polluted their garments ; and they shall walk with me in white, because they are worthy. He that overcometh shall be arrayed thus in white garments ; and I will not blot his name out of the book of life ; and I will acknowledge his name before my Father and before his angels. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.

And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write :—

These things saith the holy one, the true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth and no one shall shut, and shutteth and no one openeth ; I know thy works (behold, I have given before thee a door set open, which no one can shut), that thou hast little power, yet hast kept my word, and hast not disowned my name. Behold,—I give some of the synagogue of Satan—of them that say they are Jews, and they are not, but lie—behold, I will make them come and worship before thy feet and know that I loved thee. Because thou hast kept the lesson of my steadfastness, I will keep thee from the hour of trial, the hour that is to come upon the whole world, to test them that dwell upon the earth. I am coming quickly ; hold that which thou hast, that no one receive thy crown. He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the sanctuary of my God, and never more shall he go outside ; and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God, and my own new name. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.

And to the angel of the church in Laodicea write :—

These things saith the Amen, the trustworthy and true witness, the origin of the creation of God ; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot ; would that thou wert cold or hot ! So, because thou art lukewarm, and neither hot nor

¹ *Lk. names.*

REVELATION 3, 4

cold, I am about to vomit thee out of my mouth.
 17 Because thou sayest, 'I am rich, and have gained riches, and have need of nothing'; and knowest not that thou art the wretched and pitiable and
 18 poor and blind and naked one; I counsel thee to buy of me gold refined by fire, that thou mayest become rich; and white garments, that thou mayest array thyself, and that the shame of thy nakedness be not made manifest; and eye-salve to
 19 anoint thine eyes, that thou mayest see. As for me, as many as I love, I reprove and chasten; be
 20 zealous, therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any one hearken to my voice and open the door, I will come in unto him, and will sup with him, and he with me. He that
 21 overcometh, I will grant him to sit down with me in my throne, as I also overcame, and sat down
 22 with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.

4 After these things I looked, and behold! a door standing open in heaven, and the voice (the one I heard before)¹ as of a trumpet speaking with me, some one saying, Come up hither, and I will show thee the things that must come to pass after these.
 2 Straightway I found myself in the Spirit; and, behold, a throne was standing in heaven, and upon
 3 the throne One was sitting; and he that sat was to look upon like a jasper-stone and a sard; and there was a rainbow round about the throne, like
 4 an emerald to look upon. And round about the throne I saw four and twenty thrones, and upon the thrones four and twenty elders,² sitting, arrayed in white garments, and on their heads crowns of
 5 gold. And out of the throne proceed lightnings and voices and thunders. And there are seven torches³ of fire, burning before the throne; which
 6 are the seven spirits of God. And before the throne there is as it were a sea of glass, like crystal; and in the midst of the throne⁴ and round the throne are four living creatures⁵ full of eyes before and behind.
 7 And the first living creature is like a lion, and the second living creature like an ox, and the third living

¹ 1st. ² Probably angels of high order, Isaiah 24¹⁰. ³ Lamps (A.V.).
⁴ Perhaps conceived of as semicircular. ⁵ Ezekiel 1⁴.

REVELATION 4, 5

creature hath a face as of a man, and the fourth
 living creature is like a flying eagle. And the four 8
 living creatures, one by one of them having six wings
 apiece, are full of eyes round about and within ;
 and they rest not, day and night, saying,

Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord God, the Almighty,
 who was, and who is, and who cometh.

And whenever the living creatures shall give glory 9
 and honour and thanks to him that sitteth on the
 throne, to him that liveth for evermore, the four 10
 and twenty elders will fall down before him that
 sitteth upon the throne, and will worship him that
 liveth for evermore, and will cast their crowns
 before the throne, saying,

Thou art worthy, our Lord and our God, to receive 11
 the glory and the honour and the power ; because
 thou didst create all things, and at thy will they
 were, and were created.¹

And I saw upon the right hand of him that sitteth 5
 upon the throne a book written inside and on the
 back, sealed down with SEVEN SEALS. And I saw an 2
 angel, a strong one, proclaiming in a loud voice,
 Who is worthy to open the book, and to break the
 seals thereof? And no one in the heaven, or on the 3
 earth, or under the earth, was able to open the book,
 or to look thereon.

And I was weeping much, because no one was 4
 found worthy to open the book, or to look thereon.
 And one of the elders saith to me, Weep not ; 5
 behold, the Lion, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the
 root of David, hath overcome, to open the book and
 the seven seals thereof. And I saw in the midst 6
 of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in
 the midst of the elders, a Lamb standing, as if it had
 been slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes,
 which are the seven² spirits of God, sent forth into 7
 all the earth. And he came, and he hath taken³ it out
 of the right hand of him that sitteth upon the throne.
 And when he took the book, the four living creatures 8
 and the four and twenty elders fell down before the
 Lamb, having each a harp, and golden bowls full of

¹ The Divine Will had made the universe a fact in the scheme of things before the Divine Power gave material expression to the fact (Swete). ² Some MSS. omit 'seven.' ³ See note on 10².

REVELATION 5, 6

9 incense, which are the prayers of the saints. And they are singing a new song, saying,

Worthy thou art to take the book, and to break open the seals thereof, because thou wast slain, and with thy blood didst purchase for God out of every
10 tribe and language and people and nation; and thou madest them unto our God a kingdom and priests; and they shall reign¹ on the earth.

11 And I looked, and I heard a voice of many angels round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders (and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands),
12 saying with a loud voice,

Worthy is the Lamb that hath been slain, to receive the power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And I heard every creature that is in the heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and on the sea, and all things that are in them, saying,

To him that sitteth upon the throne, and to the Lamb, belong the blessing, and the honour, and the glory, and the dominion, for evermore.

14 And the four living creatures said, Amen; and the elders fell down and worshipped.

6 And when the Lamb broke open one of the seven seals I looked, and I heard one of the four living creatures saying, as with a voice of thunder, Come.

2 And I looked, and behold! a white horse, and he that sitteth thereon, holding a bow; and there was given him a crown; and he went forth conquering and to conquer.

3 And when he broke open the second seal, I heard
4 the second living creature saying, Come. And there went forth another, a red horse; and to him that sitteth thereon it was given to take peace out of the earth, and that they should slay one another; and there was given him a great sword.

5 And when he broke open the third seal, I heard the third living creature saying, Come. And I looked, and behold! a black horse, and he that

6 sitteth thereon, holding a balance in his hand. And I heard as it were a voice, in the midst of the four living creatures, saying, A quart of wheat for a shilling,²

¹ Some MSS., 'they reign.' ² Or a denarius (famine prices); a quart of wheat weighs two pounds.

REVELATION 6, 7

and three quarts of barley for a shilling ; and the oil and the wine hurt thou not.

And when he broke open the fourth seal, I heard a voice (it was of the fourth living creature), saying, Come. And I looked, and behold ! a pale-green horse, and he that sitteth upon it, his name is Death ; and Hades was following with him. And there was given to them authority over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with famine, and with pestilence,¹ and by the wild beasts of the earth.

And when he broke open the fifth seal, I saw beneath the altar the souls of them that had been slain because of the word of God and because of the witness that they bore. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, Master, the holy and true, dost thou refrain from judging and from taking vengeance for our blood from them that dwell on the earth ? And there was given to them, to each a white robe ; and it was told them that they were to rest a little time yet, until the number of their fellow-bondmen also, and of their brethren that would be killed even as they had been, should be fulfilled.²

And when he broke open³ the sixth seal I looked, and there came a great earthquake ; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the whole moon became as blood ; and the stars of the heaven fell unto the earth, as a fig tree sheddeth its unripe figs when it is shaken by a strong wind. And the heaven was parted, as a scroll when it is rolled up ;⁴ and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. And the kings of the earth, and the nobles, and the commandants, and the rich, and the strong, and every one, bond and free, hid themselves in the caverns and in the rocks of the mountains ; and they say to the mountains and to the rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth upon the throne, and from the anger of the Lamb ; for the day, the great day, of their anger is come ; and who is able to stand ?

After this, I saw four angels standing at the four

¹ *Lt.* death (as in 2nd). ² Some MSS., 'until their fellow-bondmen and their . . . should have fulfilled their course.' ³ St. Matthew 24th, 10.
⁴ The expanse of heaven cracked and parted, the divided parts curling up and forming a roll on each side.

REVELATION 7

- corners of the earth, holding fast the four winds of the earth, that no wind should blow over the earth,
2 or over the sea, or upon any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the sunrising, holding the seal of the living God ; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was given to hurt the
3 earth and the sea, saying, Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the bondmen of our God upon their foreheads.
- 4 And I heard the number of them that were sealed, a hundred and forty-four thousand, sealed out of every tribe of the children of Israel ;
- 5 Of the tribe of Judah twelve thousand sealed ;
Of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand ;
- 6 Of the tribe of Asher twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand ;
- 7 Of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand ;
- 8 Of the tribe of Zebulun twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand ;
Of the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand sealed.
- 9 After these things I looked, and behold ! a great multitude, which no one could number, out of every nation and all tribes and peoples and languages, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, arrayed in white robes, and palm branches are
10 in their hands ; and they cry with a loud voice, saying,
Salvation belongeth to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and to the Lamb.
- 11 And all the angels were standing round about the throne and the elders and the four living creatures ; and they fell on their faces before the throne, and
12 worshipped God, saying,
Amen ; All blessing and glory and wisdom and thanksgiving and honour and power and strength belong to our God for evermore ; Amen.
- 13 And one of the elders spoke, saying to me, These that are arrayed in the white robes, who are they,
14 and whence came they ? And I said to him, My lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they that come out of the great tribulation, and

REVELATION 7, 8

they washed their robes and made them white in¹
the blood of the Lamb. Therefore they are before 15
the throne of God, and serve him day and night in
his sanctuary; and he that sitteth upon the throne
will spread his tabernacle over them. They shall 16
hunger no more, nor thirst any more; neither shall
the sun strike them, nor any heat; because the 17
Lamb that is in the midst of the throne will be their
shepherd, and will guide them unto fountains of
waters of life; and God will wipe away every tear
from their eyes.

And when he broke open the seventh seal, there 8
came silence in heaven, as it were for half an hour.

And I saw the seven angels that stand before God, 2
and there were given to them SEVEN TRUMPETS.

And another angel came, and took his stand at the 3
altar, holding a golden censer; and there was given
to him much incense, that he might give it to the
prayers of all the saints, upon the altar, the golden
altar that is before the throne. And with² the 4
prayers of the saints there went up before God out
of the angel's hand the smoke of the incense. And 5
the angel hath taken³ the censer; and he filled it
from the fire of the altar, and cast it upon the
earth; and there came thunders, and voices, and
lightnings, and an earthquake.

And the seven angels who have the seven trumpets 6
prepared themselves to sound.

And the first sounded, and there came hail and 7
fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast upon
the earth; and the third part of the earth was burnt
up, and the third part of the trees was burnt up,
and all green grass was burnt up.

And the second angel sounded, and as it were a 8
great mountain burning with fire was cast into the
sea; and the third part of the sea became blood;
and there died the third part of the creatures that 9
were in the sea, those that had life; and the third
part of the ships was destroyed.

And the third angel sounded, and there fell out 10
of the heaven a great star, burning as a torch, and
it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the

¹ Or by. ² Or for. ³ See note to 19².

REVELATION 8, 9

- 11 fountains of the waters ; and the name given to the star is Wormwood. And the third part of the waters became wormwood ; and many of mankind died of the waters, because they were made bitter.
- 12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars ; that the third part of them might be darkened, and the day for the third part of it might not shine, and the night likewise.
- 13 And I looked, and I heard an eagle,¹ flying in mid heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, for the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the rest of the trumpet-voices of the three angels who are about to sound.
- 9 And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a Star that had fallen² from the heaven unto the earth ; and there was given to him the key of the pit of the 2 abyss. And he opened the pit of the abyss ; and there came up smoke out of the pit, as smoke of a great furnace ; and the sun and the air were 3 darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And out of the smoke there came forth locusts upon the earth ; and there was given to them power, as the 4 scorpions of the earth have power. And it was told them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but men 5 only, such as have not the seal of God upon their foreheads. And it was given to them that they might 6 not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months ; and their torment is as the torment of a scorpion when it hath struck a man. And in those days men will seek death, and will not find it ; and they will long to die, and death fleeth from them.
- 7 And in likeness the locusts were like horses made ready for battle, and there were on their heads crowns as it were like gold, and their faces were 8 like faces of men. And they had hair as hair of women, and their teeth were as teeth of lions.
- 9 And they had breastplates as breastplates of iron ; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of 10 chariots, of many horses running to battle. And they have tails like scorpions, and stings ; and

¹ Some MSS., 'angel', but see 4¹. ² See 8²⁰ ; 12⁹ ; and St. Luke 10¹⁸.

REVELATION 9, 10

in their tails is their power to hurt mankind
for five months. They have over them a king, 11
the angel of the abyss ; his name in Hebrew is
Abaddon,¹ and in the Greek he has for name,
Apollyon.¹

The first woe is past ; behold, after these things 12
there come yet two woes.

And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice 13
from the four horns of the altar, the golden altar
that is before God, some one saying to the sixth 14
angel, to him that hath the trumpet, Loose the
four angels who are bound at the river, the great 15
Euphrates. And the four angels were loosed, they
that had been prepared for the hour and day and 16
month and year, that they might kill the third part
of mankind. And the number of the armies of 17
the horsemen was twice ten thousand times ten
thousand ; I heard the number of them. And this 18
is how I saw the horses in the vision, and them that
sat upon them ; they² had breastplates of fire and
jacinth and brimstone ;³ and the heads of the horses
are as heads of lions, and out of their mouths pro-
ceedeth⁴ fire and smoke and brimstone. By these 19
three plagues were killed the third part of mankind,
by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone that
proceedeth out of their mouths. For the power of 20
the horses is in their mouths and in their tails ; for
their tails are like serpents, and have heads ; and
with them they hurt. And the rest of mankind, 21
they that were not killed by these plagues, did not
even repent of the works of their hands, so as not to
worship the demons and the idols of gold and of
silver and of copper and of stone and of wood, which
cannot see or hear or walk ; and they repented not 22
of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their
fornication, nor of their thefts.

And I saw another angel, a strong one, coming 10
down out of heaven, arrayed with a cloud ; and
the rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as
the sun, and his feet were as pillars of fire ; and 2
he had in his hand a little book opened. And he
set his right foot upon the sea, but the left upon the

¹ *i. e.* Destroyer. ² Probably both horses and men ; see 9^v,². ³ Red, blue, and yellow in colour. ⁴ See note to James 3¹⁰.

REVELATION 10, 11

- 3 earth ; and he cried with a loud voice, even as a lion
 roareth. And when he had cried, the seven thunders
 4 put forth their voices. And when the seven thunders
 had spoken, I was about to write ; and I heard a
 voice from heaven, saying, Seal up the things that
 the seven thunders spoke, and write them not.
- 5 And the angel that I saw standing upon the sea
 and upon the earth lifted up his right hand to the
 6 heaven and swore by him that liveth for evermore,
 who created the heaven and the things that are
 therein, and the earth and the things that are there-
 7 in, that there shall be no further delay ;¹ but that
 in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when
 he is about to sound, then the secret of God is
 at its end, as he declared the good tidings to his
 bondmen the prophets.
- 8 And the voice that I heard from heaven, I
 heard it speaking with me again, and saying, Go,
 take the book that is opened in the hand of the
 angel that standeth upon the sea and upon the
 9 earth. And I went away to the angel, telling him
 to give me the little book. And he saith to me,
 Take it and eat it up, and it will be bitter to thy
 stomach, but in thy mouth it will be sweet as honey.
- 10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand,
 and ate it up ; and it was in my mouth sweet as
 honey ; and when I had eaten it, it became bitter to
 11 my stomach. And they say to me, 'Thou must
 prophesy again concerning many peoples and nations
 and languages and kings.
- 11 And there was given me a reed like unto a rod,
 some one saying, Rise, and measure the sanctuary
 of God, and the altar, and them that worship
 2 therein. And the court that is outside the sanctuary,
 leave it outside, and measure it not ; because it was
 given to the Gentiles,² and they will tread down the
 3 holy city for forty and two months. And I will
 grant unto my two witnesses that they may prophesy
 for one thousand two hundred and sixty days,
 4 arrayed in sackcloth.—These are the two olive trees
 and the two lamp-stands that stand before the
 5 Lord of the earth. And if any one desireth to hurt
 them, fire proceedeth out of their mouths and

¹ Cf. Hebrews 10 ²⁷. ² Or nations (St. Luke 21 ²⁴).

REVELATION 11

devoureth their enemies ; and if any one shall
 desire to hurt them, he must in this manner be
 killed. These have the authority to shut the heaven, 6
 that it rain not in the days of their prophesying ;
 and they have authority over the waters to turn
 them into blood, and to smite the earth with every
 plague, as often as they shall desire. And when 7
 they have finished their witness, the wild beast that
 cometh up out of the abyss will wage war against
 them, and will overcome them, and will kill them.
 And their dead bodies lie on the street of the city, 8
 the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and
 Egypt, where also their Lord was crucified. And 9
 men from among the peoples and tribes and
 languages and nations look upon their dead bodies
 three days and a half, and allow not their dead bodies
 to be put into tombs. And they that dwell on the 10
 earth rejoice over them, and make merry ; and they
 will send gifts one to another ; because these two
 prophets tormented¹ them that dwell on the earth.
 And after the three days and a half, a breath of life 11
 from God entered into them, and they stood up upon
 their feet ; and great fear fell upon those that beheld
 them. And they heard a loud voice from heaven, 12
 saying to them, Come up hither. And they went
 up into heaven in the cloud ; and their enemies
 beheld them. And in that hour there came a great 13
 earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell ; and
 there were killed in the earthquake seven thousand
 persons ; and the rest were affrighted, and gave glory
 to the God of heaven.

The second woe is past ; behold, the third woe 14
 cometh quickly.

And the seventh angel sounded, and there came 15
 loud voices in heaven, some that say,

The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom
 of our Lord and of his Christ ; and he shall reign
 for evermore.

And the four and twenty elders, they that sit 16
 before God on their thrones, fell on their faces, and
 worshipped God, saying, 17

We give thanks to thee, Lord God, the Almighty,

¹ By the reproof of their message and of their godly example. See Wisdom of Solomon 2²⁸⁻³⁰.

REVELATION 11, 12

18 who art, and who wast ; because thou hast taken thy great power, and hast begun thy reign. And the nations were angered, and there came thine anger, and the time for the dead to be judged, and for giving the reward to thy bondmen, the prophets, and to the saints, and to them that fear thy name, the small and the great ; and for destroying them that destroy the earth.

19 And the sanctuary of God, the one that is in heaven, was opened ; and there was seen in his sanctuary the ark of his covenant ; and there came lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and an earthquake, and great hail.

12 And a great sign was seen in the heaven ; a woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon was under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars, and she was with child ; and she crieth out, travailing in birth, and in agony to bring forth.

3 And another sign was seen in the heaven ; and behold ! a dragon, red, great, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his heads seven diadems ;

4 and his tail draggeth the third part of the stars of the heaven, and it cast them to the earth. And the dragon standeth before the woman that is about to bring forth, that, when she hath brought forth,

5 he may devour her child. And she brought forth a son, a man child, who is to shepherd all the nations with a rod of iron ; and her child was caught up unto God, and unto his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared by God, that there they may nourish her a thousand two hundred and sixty days.

7 And there broke out war in heaven, Michael and his angels waging war against the dragon ; and the

8 dragon waged war and his angels ; and they prevailed not, neither was their place found any more

9 in heaven. And the great dragon was cast down, the old serpent, he that is called the devil and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world ; he was cast down to the earth, and with him his angels were cast

10 down. And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying,

Now there has come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ ; because the accuser of our brethren was

REVELATION 12, 13

cast down, he that accuseth them before our God
 day and night. And they overcame him because of 11
 the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word of
 their witness ; and they loved not their lives, even
 unto death. Therefore make merry, O heavens, and 12
 ye that tabernacle in them. Woe for the earth and
 for the sea ! because the devil hath gone down to you,
 in great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

And when the dragon saw that he was cast down 13
 to the earth, he persecuted the woman, her that had
 brought forth the man child. And there were given 14
 to the woman the two wings of the great eagle¹, that
 she might fly from the face of the serpent into the
 wilderness, unto her place, where she is nourished
 for a time and times and half a time.² And out of 15
 his mouth the serpent cast after the woman water
 as a river, that he might cause her to be borne
 away by the river. And the earth helped the 16
 woman, and the earth opened her mouth and drank
 down the river that the dragon cast out of his mouth.
 And the dragon was angered at the woman, and 17
 went away to wage war against the rest of her off-
 spring, who keep the commandments of God and
 hold the witness of Jesus ; and he came to a stand³ 13
 upon the sand of the sea.

And I saw³ a wild beast coming up out of the sea,
 having ten horns and seven heads, and upon its horns
 ten diadems, and upon its heads titles that are
 blasphemy. And the wild beast that I saw was 2
 like a leopard, and its feet were as those of a
 bear, and its mouth was as a lion's mouth. And
 the dragon gave it his power, and his throne, and
 great authority. And I saw one of its heads as if it 3
 had been slain and died ; and its death-wound
 was cured. And the whole earth went wondering
 after the beast ; and they worshipped the dragon, 4
 because he gave his authority to the beast ; and
 they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like the
 beast? and who is able to wage war against it?
 And there was given to it a mouth speaking great 5
 things and blasphemies ; and there was given to it
 authority to continue forty and two months. And it 6

¹ Exodus 19⁴. ² i. e. 3½ years of 360 days each—the 1,260 days of
 verse 6. See 11² ; Daniel 7²² ; 12⁷. ³ Some MSS., 'And I took my
 stand . . . and saw' ; in text dragon halts to summon his ally.

REVELATION 13

opened its mouth unto blasphemies against God, to
blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, even them
7 that tabernacle in heaven. And it was given to it to
wage war against the saints and to overcome them ;
and there was given to it authority over every tribe
8 and people and language and nation. And all that
dwell upon the earth will worship him¹, every one
whose name has not been written, from the founda-
tion of the world,² in the book of life of the Lamb
9 that hath been slain. (If any one hath an ear,
10 let him hear.) If any one is for captivity, into
captivity he goes ; if any one shall kill with the
sword, with the sword he must be killed.³ Here is
the steadfastness, here also the faith of the saints.
11 And I saw another wild beast coming up out of
the earth ; and it had two horns like those of a
12 lamb, and it spoke as a dragon speaks. And it
exerciseth all the authority of the first beast in its
sight. And it causeth the earth and them that dwell
thereon to worship the first beast, whose death-
13 wound was cured. And it worketh great miracles,
so as even to make fire come down out of the heaven
14 upon the earth in the sight of mankind. And them
that dwell upon the earth it deceiveth by reason of
the miracles which it was given to it to work in the
sight of the beast ; telling them that dwell upon the
earth to make an image to the beast that was wounded
15 by the sword and lived. And it was given to it
to give breath to the image of the beast, that the
image of the beast should both speak, and cause
that as many as should not worship the image of
16 the beast should be killed. And for all, the small
and the great, the rich and the poor, the free and the
bond, it causeth a mark to be given them upon their
17 right hands, or on to their foreheads ; and that no
one should be able to buy or to sell, except him that
hath the mark, the name of the beast or the number
18 of its name. Here is wisdom ; he that hath under-
standing, let him calculate the number of the beast ;
for it is the number of a man. And its number
is Six hundred and sixty-six.⁴

¹ Many hold that the beast personified is an Emperor like Nero or Domitian. ² Or put this clause at the end of verse ; but cf. 17³ ; and Ephesians 1⁶. ³ Jeremiah 15³ ; St. Matthew 26⁶⁸. ⁴ Some MSS., '616' ; Many hold that this number veils the name Nero ; see 17¹¹

REVELATION 14

And I looked, and behold ! the Lamb standing 14
 on the mount Zion, and with him a hundred and
 forty-four thousand, having his name, and the name
 of his Father, written on their foreheads. And I 2
 heard a voice from heaven, as a voice of many
 waters, and as a voice of loud thunder ; and the
 voice that I heard was as 'of harpers harping with
 their harps ; and they are singing a new song before 3
 the throne, and before the four living creatures and
 the elders ; and no one could learn the song except
 the hundred and forty-four thousand, them that 4
 have been purchased from the earth. These are
 they that were not defiled with women ; for they
 are virgins. These are they that follow the Lamb
 whithersoever he goeth. These were purchased
 from among men, first-fruits unto God and unto
 the Lamb. And in their mouths was found no false- 5
 hood ; they are without blemish.

And I saw another angel flying in mid heaven, 6
 carrying an eternal gospel, to be its gosseller over
 them that dwell on the earth, even over every nation
 and tribe and language and people ; saying with a 7
 loud voice, Fear God, and give him glory, because
 the hour of his judgement hath come ; and worship
 him that made the heaven and the earth and sea and
 fountains of waters.

And another angel, a second, followed, saying, 8
 She has fallen, she has fallen, Babylon¹ the great !
 she that of the wine of the wrath of her fornication²
 hath given all the nations to drink.

And another angel, a third, followed them, saying 9
 with a loud voice, If any one worshippeth the wild
 beast and its image, and receiveth a mark on his
 forehead or on to his hand, he shall also drink of the 10
 wine of the wrath of God, which is mingled unmixed
 in the cup of his anger, and he shall be tormented in
 fire and brimstone in the presence of holy angels and
 in the presence of the Lamb.—And the smoke of 11
 their torment goeth up for evermore ;³ and they rest
 not day and night, they that worship the beast and its
 image, and any who receiveth the mark of its name.

¹ Generally held to be a symbol for Rome. ² The wine-cup of her fornication is also the wine-cup of the divine displeasure and judgement (Vaughan). ³ *Lit.* to ages of ages.

REVELATION 14, 15

- 12 Here is the steadfastness of the saints, who keep the commandments of God and their faith in Jesus.
- 13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying, Write, Happy the dead that die in the Lord henceforth ! yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours ; for their works follow with them.
- 14 And I looked, and behold ! a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sitting, like unto a son of man, having on his head a crown of gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the sanctuary, crying with a loud voice to him that sitteth upon the cloud, Send out thy sickle and reap ; for the hour to reap has come ; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.—And he that sitteth upon the cloud cast his sickle upon the earth, and the earth was reaped.
- 17 And another angel came forth out of the sanctuary that is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, he that hath authority over the fire ;¹ and he called with a loud voice to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Send out thy sickle, the sharp one, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth ; for her grapes are fully ripe.—And the angel cast his sickle, on to the earth, and gathered the vintage of the earth, and cast it into the winepress of the wrath of God, the great winepress. . . . And the winepress was trodden outside the city ; and there came forth blood out of the winepress even to the horses' bits, as far as a thousand and six hundred furlongs.
- 15 And I saw another sign in the heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels bearing SEVEN PLAGUES, the last ; because in them the wrath of God is at its end.
- 2 And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that overcome, against the beast and against its image and against the number of its name, standing by the sea of glass, having harps of God.
- 3 And they are singing the song of Moses, the bondman of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying,
Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God,

¹ See 8^o

REVELATION 15, 16

the Almighty; righteous and true are thy ways, 4
 thou king of the nations.¹ Who will not fear, O Lord,
 and glorify thy name? for thou only art holy; for
 all the nations will come and worship before thee;
 for thy righteous acts were made manifest.

And after these things I looked, and the sanctuary 5
 of the tabernacle of the testimony² was opened in
 heaven; and there came forth out of the sanctuary 6
 the seven angels that bore the seven plagues; clothed
 in linen pure and shining,³ and girt about their
 breasts with golden girdles. And one of the four 7
 living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden
 bowls full of the wrath of God, who liveth for
 evermore. And the sanctuary was filled with smoke 8
 from the glory of God and from his power; and no
 one could enter the sanctuary, till the seven plagues
 of the seven angels should come to an end.

And I heard a loud voice out of the sanctuary, 16
 saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour
 out into the earth the SEVEN BOWLS of the wrath of
 God.

And the first went, and poured out his bowl into 2
 the earth; and it became a sore, evil and grievous,
 upon the men that had the mark of the wild beast
 and that worshipped its image.⁴

And the second poured out his bowl into the sea; 3
 and it became blood, as of a dead man, and every
 living thing died, those that were in the sea.

And the third poured out his bowl into the rivers 4
 and the fountains of the waters; and it became blood.
 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Righteous 5
 art thou, who art and who wast, thou Holy One,
 because thou hast adjudged these things; because 6
 blood of saints and of prophets they poured out, blood
 thou hast also given them to drink; they are worthy.
 And I heard the altar say, Even so, Lord God, the 7
 Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

And the fourth poured out his bowl upon the sun; 8
 and it was given unto it⁵ to scorch mankind with
 fire. And mankind were scorched with great heat, 9
 and they blasphemed the name of God, who hath the

¹ Some MSS., 'ages.' ² Acts 7⁴⁴. ³ Some MSS. read, 'clothed in stone' (i.e. lithon, instead of linon). The R.V. adopts this, but intrudes the word 'precious,' for which there is no authority. See 19⁹. ⁴ See 14¹². ⁵ Or him.

REVELATION 16, 17

authority over these plagues ; and they repented not to give him glory.

- 10 And the fifth poured out his bowl upon the throne of the wild beast ; and its kingdom became darkened ; and they gnawed their tongues by reason
- 11 of the pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven by reason of their pains and by reason of their sores ; and they repented not of their works.
- 12 And the sixth poured out his bowl upon the river, the great Euphrates ; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings that come from the
- 13 sunrising might be made ready. And I saw coming out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the wild beast, and out of the mouth of the false
- 14 prophet, three unclean spirits, as it were frogs ; for they are spirits of demons, working miracles ; and they go forth unto the kings of the whole world,¹ to gather them together to the war of the Day, the great
- 15 day of God, the Almighty (Behold, I come as a thief cometh ; happy is he that watcheth, and holdeth fast his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame) ; and they gathered them together into the place that is called in Hebrew, Har-Magedon.²
- 17 And the seventh poured out his bowl upon the air ; and there came forth a loud voice out of the sanctuary, from the throne, saying, It hath come to pass.
- 18 And there came lightnings and voices and thunders ; and there came a great earthquake, such that there came not, since mankind came upon the earth, so
- 19 great an earthquake, so mighty. And the great city came into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. And Babylon the great came into remembrance in the sight of God, to give her the cup
- 20 of the wine of the wrath of his anger. And every island fled away, and mountains could not be found.
- 21 And great hail, as of talents in weight, cometh down out of the heaven upon men ; and men blasphemed God by reason of the plague of the hail ; for exceedingly great is the plague thereof.

- 17 And there came one of the seven angels who bore the seven bowls, and he spoke with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the judgement upon

¹ Lit. inhabited (earth). ² *i.e.* Hill of Megiddo (probably); see Judges 5²⁰.

REVELATION 17

the great harlot, who dwelleth upon many waters ;¹
 with whom the kings of the earth committed forni- 2
 cation, and they that inhabit the earth were made
 drunk with the wine of her fornication. And he 3
 carried me away in the Spirit² into a wilderness ; and
 I saw a woman sitting upon a wild beast of scarlet
 colour ; covered he was with titles that are blas- 4
 phemy ; he had seven heads and ten horns. And the
 woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and gilded
 with gold and precious stones and pearls, holding in
 her hand a golden cup full of abominations, and the 5
 unclean things of her fornication, and upon her fore-
 head a name written, a secret, ' Babylon, the
 great, the mother of the harlots and of the abomina- 6
 tions of the earth.' And I saw the woman drunk
 with the blood of the saints and with the blood of
 the witnesses of Jesus. And when I saw her, I
 wondered with a great wonder. And the angel said 7
 to me, Wherefore didst thou wonder ? I will tell
 thee the secret of the woman, and of the wild beast
 that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and
 the ten horns. The wild beast that thou sawest 8
 was, and is not, and is about to come up out of the
 abyss, and is on his way to perdition. And they
 that dwell on the earth, whose names have not been
 written on the book of life from the foundation of
 the world, will wonder when they behold the beast,
 that he was, and is not, and will come. Here, whoso- 9
 ever hath wisdom, is the meaning ; the seven heads
 are seven mountains, whereon the woman sitteth ;
 and they³ are seven kings ; five have fallen, one 10
 is, the other hath not yet come ; and when he
 cometh, he must continue a little while. And the 11
 wild beast that was, and is not, is moreover himself
 eighth, and is one of⁴ the seven, and is on his way to

¹ Cf. Jeremiah 51 ²⁰. ² Or in spirit. ³ Or there. ⁴ Or is out of (comes from and succeeds) ; but see Acts 21 ⁶. It is widely held that contemporary history (especially the persecution of Christians under Nero) is the background of visions of this book ; that the whole work represents allegorically the sufferings and final triumph and glory of Christ's church ; incidentally, that the 'seven kings' mean seven Roman Emperors, and that the 'eighth, one of the seven,' stands for Nero, who in the popular belief of the time had not been killed, but was alive in hiding, would return to the throne, and thus be counted twice. It might not be prudent to write with entire clearness, and interpretations (keys) could be circulated privately among Christians.

REVELATION 17, 18

12 perdition. And the ten horns that thou sawest
 are ten kings,¹ kings who as yet have received no
 kingdom, but they receive authority as kings for one
 13 hour, with the wild beast. These have one mind,
 and they give their power and authority to the beast.
 14 These will wage war against the Lamb; and the
 Lamb will overcome them, because he is Lord of
 lords and King of kings, and they that are with
 15 him, called and chosen and faithful.—And he saith
 to me, The waters that thou sawest, where the harlot
 dwalleth, peoples and multitudes they are, and
 16 nations and languages. And the ten horns that thou
 sawest, and the wild beast, these will hate the harlot,
 and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat
 17 her flesh and will burn her up in fire. For God put
 into their hearts to carry out his purpose, and to
 come to one mind, and to give their kingdom to the
 wild beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.
 18 And the woman whom thou sawest is the city,
 the great city, which hath kingship over the kings
 of the earth.

18 After these things I saw another angel coming
 down out of heaven, having great authority; and the
 2 earth was lit up from his glory. And he cried with a
 strong voice, saying, She has fallen, she has fallen,
 Babylon the great, and has become a habitation of
 demons, and a haunt of every unclean spirit, and a
 3 haunt of every unclean and hateful bird; because
 from the wine of the wrath² of her fornication all
 the nations have drunk;³ and the kings of the earth
 committed fornication with her, and out of the might
 of her wantonness the merchants of the earth grew
 rich.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying,
 Come forth, my people, out of her, that ye may
 have no fellowship with her sins, and that ye receive
 5 not of her plagues; because her sins were heaped to-
 gether, even unto the heaven, and God remembered
 6 her iniquities. Render to her as she also rendered,
 and double the double according to her works; in
 7 the cup that she mingled mingle to her double. As
 much as she glorified herself and lived wantonly, so

¹ See 16¹². ² The intoxicating draught of sin which brings the wrath of God after it. ³ Some MSS., 'by the wine . . . have fallen' (the Greek verbs are very alike).

REVELATION 18

much torment and mourning give to her. Because in
 her heart she saith, ' I sit a queen, and am no widow,
 and shall never know mourning ' ; therefore in one 8
 day her plagues shall come, death and mourning
 and famine, and she shall be burnt up in fire ;
 because strong is the Lord God who judged her.
 And the kings of the earth, who with her committed 9
 fornication and lived wantonly, will weep and wail
 over her, when they see the smoke of her burning ;
 standing afar off for fear of her torment, saying, 10
 Woe ! woe ! the great city, Babylon, the strong
 city ! because in one hour thy judgement has come.
 And the merchants of the earth weep and mourn over 11
 her ; because no one any longer buyeth their cargo,
 cargo of gold and silver and precious stones and 12
 pearls and fine linen and purple and silk and scarlet ;
 and all thyine wood and every vessel of ivory ; and
 every vessel made of most precious wood and of 13
 copper and of iron and of marble ; and cinnamon,
 and spice, and incense, and ointment, and frankin-
 cense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat,
 and cattle, and sheep ; and cargo of horses and of 14
 carriages and slaves ; and lives of men. And the
 fruits that thy soul lusted after went from thee, and
 all things dainty and all things bright perished
 from thee ; and men will find them nevermore.
 The merchants of these things, who grew rich from 15
 her, will stand afar off for fear of her torment,
 weeping and mourning, saying, Woe ! woe ! the 16
 great city, she that was arrayed in fine linen and
 purple and scarlet, and gilded in gold and precious
 stone and pearl ! because in one hour riches so great 17
 was made desolate.—And every steersman, and every
 one that saileth to a place, and mariners, and as
 many as make their living by the sea, stood afar off,
 and cried out as they saw the smoke of her burning, 18
 saying, What city is like the great city ! And they 19
 cast dust on their heads, and cried out, weeping
 and mourning, saying, Woe ! woe ! the great city,
 wherein all that had their ships on the sea grew rich
 out of her great wealth ! because in one hour she
 was made desolate.¹—Make merry² over her, thou 20
 heaven, and ye the saints and the apostles and the

¹ Cf. Ezekiel 27^{12, 24}. ² Same word as in 11¹⁰ ; St. Luke 15²² (related to the word Euphrosyne).

REVELATION 18, 19

prophets ; because God in your case has given judgement against her.

- 21 And an angel, a strong one, took up a stone, as it were a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with a rush will Babylon, the great city, be overthrown, and will not be found any more.
- 22 And sound of harpers and musicians and flute-players and trumpeters will not be heard in thee any more ; and any craftsman, of any craft, will not be found in thee any more ; and sound of mill will not be heard in thee any more ; and light of lamp will not shine in thee any more ; and voice of bridegroom and of bride will not be heard in thee any more ;¹ for thy merchants were the nobles of the earth ; for by thy sorcery all the
- 24 nations were deceived. And in her was found blood of prophets and of saints and of all that have been slain upon the earth.
- 19 After these things I heard as it were a loud voice of a great multitude in heaven, who say,
Hallelujah !² the salvation and the glory and
- 2 the power belong to our God ; for true and righteous are his judgements ; for he hath judged the great harlot, her that corrupted the earth with her fornication, and he hath wrung vengeance out of her hand for the blood of his bondmen.³
- 3 And a second time they have said,⁴ Hallelujah !
- 4 And the smoke of her goeth up for evermore. And the four and twenty elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshipped God who sitteth upon the throne ; and they say, Amen, Hallelujah !
- 5 And a voice came forth from the throne, saying,
Praise our God, all ye his servants, ye that fear him, the small and the great.
- 6 And I heard as it were a voice of a great multitude, and as it were a voice of many waters, and as it were a voice of mighty thunders, saying,
Hallelujah ! because the Lord our God, the
- 7 Almighty, has begun⁵ his reign. Let us rejoice and exult, and we will give the glory to him ; because there came the marriage of the Lamb, and his wife

¹ Jeremiah 25¹⁰. ² *i. e.* Praise the Lord (Jehovah). ³ *Cf.* 2 Kings 9⁷.

⁴ It is as if he listens for the sound, and announces it instantly to those waiting below (Vaughan) ; a similar explanation in some similar places.

⁵ See 11¹⁷.

REVELATION 19

made herself ready. And it was given to her that 8
she should array herself in fine linen, shining, pure ;
for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

And he¹ saith to me, Write, Happy they that 9
have been called to the marriage-supper of the
Lamb. And he saith to me, These are true words
of God. And I fell down before his feet to worship 10
him. And he saith to me, See thou do it not ; I am
a fellow-bondman with thee, and with thy brethren
who hold the witness of Jesus ; worship God ; for
the witness of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

And I saw the heaven standing open ; and behold ! 11
a white horse, and he that sitteth thereon, called²
Trustworthy and True ; and in righteousness he
judgeth, and wageth war. But his eyes are a flame of 12
fire, and on his head are many diadems ; and he hath a
name written, which no one knoweth except himself.
And he is arrayed in a cloak dyed in³ blood ; and the 13
name given to him is The Word of God.⁴ And the 14
armies that are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white
and pure, were following him upon white horses. And 15
out of his mouth proceedeth a sharp sword, that with
it he may smite the nations ; and he will shepherd
them with a rod of iron ; and he treadeth the winepress
of the wine of the wrath of the anger of God, the 16
Almighty. And he hath on his cloak and on his thigh
a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

And I saw an angel standing in the sun ; and he 17
cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that
fly in mid heaven, Come, gather yourselves together
to the supper, the great supper of God ; that ye may 18
eat flesh of kings, and flesh of commandants, and
flesh of strong men, and flesh of horses, and of them
that sit on them, and flesh of all, both free and bond,
and small and great.⁵

And I saw the wild beast, and the kings of the 19
earth, and their armies, gathered together to wage
the war⁶ against him that sitteth upon the horse,
and against his army. And the wild beast was 20
seized, and with it the false prophet who in its
presence wrought the miracles wherewith he deceived
them that had accepted the mark of the beast and

¹ See 17¹. ² Some MSS. omit 'called.' ³ Some MSS., 'sprinkled with.' ⁴ Cf. Wisdom of Solomon 18²². ⁵ Ezekiel 39²⁷⁻³⁰. ⁶ See 17¹⁴.

REVELATION 19, 20

- them that worshipped its image. Alive they were cast, the two, into the lake of fire, the lake that
 21 burneth with brimstone. And the rest were killed with the sword of him that sitteth upon the horse, the sword that went forth out of his mouth; and all the birds were filled with their flesh.
- 20 And I saw an angel coming down from heaven, holding the key of the abyss, and on his hand a great
 2 chain. And he laid hold on the dragon, the old serpent (who is the devil and Satan) and bound him
 3 for a thousand years, and cast him into the abyss,¹ and shut and sealed it above him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be ended; after this he must be let loose a little while.
- 4 And I saw thrones, and they² took their seats upon them, and judgement was given unto them. And I saw the souls of them that had been beheaded because of the witness of Jesus and because of the word of God, and such as worshipped not the wild beast, nor yet its image, and accepted not its mark upon their foreheads and upon their hands; and they came to life and reigned with the Christ a thousand years.
- 5 (The rest of the dead came not to life until the thousand years were ended.) This is the first
 6 resurrection. Happy and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; over these the second death hath no authority; but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with him³ the³ thousand years.
- 7 And when the thousand years are ended, Satan
 8 will be let loose out of his prison, and will go forth to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog,⁴ to gather them together to the war; the number of whom is as the
 9 sand of the sea. And they went up over the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints, and the city, the beloved;⁵ and fire came down out
 10 of the heaven, and devoured them. And the devil, who deceiveth them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where are also the wild beast and

¹ St. Luke 8³⁴. ² Who these are must be gathered from the context; probably Christ and his assessors. ³ Some MSS., 'a.' ⁴ Ezekiel 38¹. ⁵ i.e. Jerusalem (Psalm 87²).

REVELATION 20, 21

the false prophet ; and they will be tormented day and night for evermore.

And I saw a throne, great and white, and him that sitteth thereon, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away ; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne ; and books were opened ; and another book was opened, which is the book of life ; and the dead were judged out of the things written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it ; and death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them ; and they were judged, each, according to their works. And death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. And if any was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth ; for the first heaven and the first earth passed away ; and there is no more sea. And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, made ready as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a loud voice out of the throne, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will tabernacle with them ; and they shall be his peoples, and God himself will be with them,¹ and will wipe away every tear from their eyes ; and there shall be no more death ; neither shall there be any more mourning, nor crying, nor pain ; because² the first things have passed away.—And he that sitteth upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he saith, Write ; because these words are trustworthy and true. And he said to me, They have come to pass ! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. To him that thirsteth I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcometh shall inherit these things ; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. But for the cowardly, and faithless, and polluted, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, their part is in the lake that burneth

¹ Some MSS. add, 'and be their God.' ² Some MSS. omit 'because.'

REVELATION 21

with fire and brimstone ; which is the second death.

- 9 And there came¹ one of the seven angels who bore the seven bowls, who were laden with the seven plagues, the last ; and he spoke with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's
- 10 wife. And he carried me away in the Spirit² on to a mountain, great and high, and showed me the holy city, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from
- 11 God, having the glory of God. Its light-giver is like a stone most precious, as it were a jasper
- 12 stone, shining as crystal. It hath a wall great and high ; it hath twelve gateways, and at the gateways
- 13 twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of
- 14 Israel. On the east are three gateways, and on the north three gateways, and on the south three gate-
- 15 ways, and on the west three gateways. And the wall of the city hath twelve foundation stones, and on them
- 16 twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.
- 17 And he that spoke with me had a measure, a golden reed, that he might measure the city, and the gate-
- 18 ways thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city stands square in shape, and its length is as great as the breadth ; and he measured the city with the
- 19 reed, to twelve thousand furlongs ; the length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. And he measured its wall of a hundred and forty-four cubits,
- 20 man's measure, that is, angel's measure. And the wall had jasper built into it ; and the city was pure gold, gold like pure glass. The foundations of the
- 21 wall of the city were adorned with every precious stone ; the first foundation stone, jasper ; the second, sapphire ; the third, chalcedony ; the fourth, emerald ; the fifth, sardonyx ; the sixth, sard ; the seventh, chrysolite ; the eighth, beryl ; the ninth, topaz ; the tenth, chrysoprase ; the eleventh, jacinth ; the twelfth, amethyst. And the twelve
- 22 gateways were twelve pearls ; each, one by one, of the gateways was of one pearl ; and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.
- 23 And I saw no sanctuary therein ; for the Lord God

¹ As in 17¹. ² Or in spirit.

REVELATION 21, 22

the Almighty, and the Lamb, are the sanctuary thereof. And the city hath no need of the sun, neither of the moon, that they should shine on it; for the glory of God lit it up, and the lamp thereof is the Lamb.¹ And the nations shall walk through² the light thereof; and the kings of the earth bring their glory into it. And its gateways shall not be shut at all by day (for there shall be no night there); and they shall bring the glory and the honour of the nations into it. And there shall in no wise enter it any thing unclean, neither he that worketh an abomination and a lie; but they only that have been written in the Lamb's book of life.

And he showed me a river of water of life, bright as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. Between³ the street of the city and the river, on this side and on that side, is a tree of life, bearing twelve fruits, according to each month yielding its fruit; and the leaves of the tree are for healing of the nations.⁴ And there shall be no more any accursed thing. And the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his bondmen shall serve him.⁵ And they shall see his face; and his name shall be on their foreheads. And there shall be no more night; and they have no need of light of lamp, and light of sun; because the Lord God will shed light upon them. And they shall reign for evermore.

And he said to me, These words are trustworthy and true; and the Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, sent his angel to show to his bondmen the things that must shortly come to pass. (And, behold, I am coming quickly.⁶ Happy is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book.)

And I, John, am he that heard and saw these things. And when I heard and saw, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel that showed me these things. And he saith to me, See thou do it not; I am a fellow-bondman with thee, and with thy brethren the prophets, and with them that keep the words of this book; worship God. And he saith to

¹ Isaiah 60¹⁰. ² Or by (means of). ³ Lit. In the mid-space of. The river, *llanai* with trees, runs in the middle of the street. ⁴ Ezekiel 47¹⁻¹². ⁵ *Cui servire regnare est* (St. Augustine). ⁶ The words in this, and in the next parenthesis, may be taken as words of our Saviour.

REVELATION 22

- me, Seal not up the words of the prophecy of this
 11 book ; for the time is at hand. He that acts un-
 righteously, let him act unrighteously still,¹ and he
 that is filthy, let him be made filthy still,¹ and he that
 is righteous, let him do righteousness still,¹ and he
 12 that is holy, let him be made holy still.¹ (Behold,
 I am coming quickly ; and my reward is with me, to
 13 render to each according as his work is. I am the
 Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the
 14 beginning and the end.) Happy are they that wash
 their robes², that theirs may be the right to the tree
 of life, and that by the gateways they may enter the
 15 city. Outside are the dogs, and the sorcerers, and
 the fornicators, and the murderers, and the idolaters,
 and every one loving and acting a lie.
 16 I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear you witness of
 these things concerning the churches. I am the root
 and the offspring of David, the bright, the morning
 star.
 17 And the Spirit and the bride say, Come ! And he
 that heareth, let him say, Come ! And he that
 thirsteth, let him come ; he that willeth, let him
 take water of life freely.
 18 I bear witness to every one that heareth the words
 of the prophecy of this book, If any one shall add
 unto them, God will add unto him the plagues that
 19 are written in this book ; and if any one shall take
 away from the words of the book of this prophecy,
 God will take away his part from the tree of life,
 and out of the holy city, the things that are written
 in this book.
 20 He that witnesseth to these-things saith, Yea, I
 am coming quickly.—Amen ; Come, Lord Jesus.
 21 The grace of the Lord Jesus be with all.³

¹ Or yet more. ² Some MSS., 'they that do his commandments.'
³ Some MSS., 'with the saints'; and some add, 'Amen.'

SELECTED 'WESTERN' READINGS

THE MS. (Cambridge University Library) referred to in Appendix VII, known as D (or Codex Bezae), though itself probably of the 5th century, represents, in conjunction with Old Latin and Syriac versions, a text, the so-called 'Western,' reaching back at least to the 2nd century. It covers (some portions have been lost) the four gospels (in the order, Matthew, John, Luke, Mark) and the Acts up to 22¹⁰. It is really a double text, Greek and Latin, the latter not invariably coinciding with the Greek. It is beautifully written in capital letters, so formed that at a hasty glance the difference of languages is not apparent. The Latin is remarkable for mistakes in grammar and spelling of words, showing a language in its decline.¹

The Greek is a fascinating document, containing much of interest and importance. A complete list of its variations from the text most generally approved would require a volume to itself; but most of them are of trifling import (differences in order of words: in tense, number; not actually affecting the meaning). The selection here given contains, it is hoped, what will best instruct and interest the reader. The subject of the 'Western' readings may be, for ordinary purposes, studied in a little book by K. Lake, *The Text of the N.T.* (Rivingtons), or in an article (with same title) by Kenyon in Hastings's one volume *Dictionary of the Bible* (T. and T. Clark).

Dr. Scrivener, who brought out the MS. in ordinary type, sums up his careful introduction by saying that we should regard with the deepest interest 'this venerable monument of Christian learning, inasmuch as the modification of the inspired writings which it preserves,

¹The scribe sometimes transliterates Greek words, making us wonder whether he would not or could not translate them; e.g. 'spermologus' (Vulgate 'seminiverbius'), Acts 17¹⁸; 'sporia' (Vulgate, 'confusio'), St. Luke 21²⁶; 'promeletantes,' St. Luke 21¹⁴; he gives genitives absolute 'deficientium hominum,' St. Luke 21²⁶; genitives after comparatives 'majora horum opera,' John 5²⁰ (cf. Vulgate, Acts 17¹¹, 'hi erant nobiliores eorum qui sunt'); and other violations of linguistic propriety.

‘ WESTERN ’ READINGS—MATTHEW

whatever critics may eventually decide respecting its genuineness and purity, was at once widely diffused and largely received by the holiest men in the best ages of the primitive Church.’ If a verse of the N.T. existed in two forms in the second century, neither being absurd or impossible, no one now can give absolute proof as to which is the original ; we have no materials for forming such hard and fast judgements.

Matthew 1, 16 (in Latin only). Joseph, betrothed to whom the virgin Mary gave birth to Jesus Christ.

4, 17. For from that time (closer connection with 16)

5, 41. Go with him yet two more.

6, 8. Knoweth, before ye open your mouths.

10, 23. To the next ; and if they persecute you in that other, flee to the next ; for verily . . .

10, 42. His reward shall not be lost.

14, 2. Can this be John the Baptist whom I beheaded? He is risen.

14, 6 (not the Latin). His daughter Herodias.

16, 13. Who say men that I the Son of man am?

17, 4. If thou wilt, we will set up.

20, 23. To give ; it hath been prepared for them by my Father.

20, 28 (addition).— But ye seek from the little to increase, and [not] from the greater to be less. But when, being bidden to a supper, ye enter in, sit not down in the prominent places, lest one more honoured than thou come up ; and he that gave the invitation come and say to thee, Go down lower, and thou be put to shame. Whereas if thou sit down in the inferior place, and some one inferior to thee come up, he that gave the invitation will say to thee, Draw up higher ; and this will be helpful to thee. (The bracketed ‘ not ’ is in Syriac versions, not in D ; it seems to improve the sense ; cf. Luke 14⁸⁻¹⁰.)

21, 28-31. Connects ‘ I go, sir, and he went not ’ with the second son ; yet strangely answers the question ‘ which of the two . . . ’ with the words ‘ the last.’

24, 30. Sign of the Son of man who is in heaven (*signum filii hominis qui in caelo est*).

24, 41 (addition). Two men in one bed ; one is taken, and one is left. (Luke 17³⁴.)

25, 1. To meet the bridegroom and the bride (in this

' WESTERN ' READINGS—JOHN

case they are waiting at bridegroom's house to meet him as he fetches home the bride).

26, 60. Found none that held together (*non invenerunt sequentia*).

John 1, 4. In him is life.

4, 9 (omit). For Jews . . . Samaritans.

5, 32. And ye know that the witness (*et scitis*, in the Latin).

6, 1. Of Galilee, into the district of Tiberias (*in fines Tiberiadis*).

6, 24. They took boats for themselves, and went.

6, 56 (adds). In him ; even as the Father is in me and I am in the Father. Verily, verily, I say unto you, unless ye receive the body of the Son of man as the bread of life, ye have not life in him.

6, 59. In Capernaum, on a sabbath.

8, 27. Perceived not that he was calling God his father.

9, 41. Your sins remain.

10, 16. They shall become one flock, one shepherd (*unus grex*. Vulgate, *unum ovile*).

11, 2. *Maria quæ unxerat . . . et exterserat* (had anointed . . . and wiped). The Greek does not demand the pluperfect.

11, 33. Was troubled in spirit like one moved with indignation.

11, 41. *Cum ergo tulerunt lapidem et Jesus tulit oculos sursum* (Vulgate, less exactly, *tulerunt . . . elevatis sursum oculis*).

11, 54. Went away into the region of Sepphoris near the wilderness (*Samphourein*, Greek ; *Sappurim*, Latin ; *Sephouris* is given in De Joinville's Chronicle as a village near Acre).

12, 8 (omitted).

12, 17. The multitude therefore who were with him bore witness that he had called Lazarus.

12, 28. Father, glorify thy name with the glory which I had with thee before the world had its being.

12, 41. Isaiah spoke, when he saw the glory of his God and spoke of him.

13, 14. How much more ought you also to wash.

13, 18. He that eateth bread with me.

13, 24. Beckoneth to him that he should ask who this may be of whom he speaks.

‘ WESTERN ’ READINGS—LUKE

14, 23. And I will come unto him and make my abode with him.

17, 2. That whatsoever thou hast given him may have eternal life.

17, 3. Whom thou didst send into this world.

20, 18. The disciples that she had seen the Lord ; and what he had told her she declared to them.

21, 7. It is our Lord.

21, 13. The bread, and having given thanks he gave to them . . .

Luke 1, 49. For God who is mighty hath . . .

3, 22. Thou art my son ; this day I have begotten thee.

5, 5. Nothing ; yet will I take heed to thy word. And immediately letting down the nets they enclosed.

5, 8. Saying, I beseech thee, depart from me.

5, 9. For he was astonished at the catch of fish they had taken. Now James and John, sons of Zebedee, were his partners. And Jesus said to them, Come and be not fishers for fish ; for I will make you fishers for men. And when they heard, they left everything where it was and followed him.

5, 14. — Mark 1, 45, is subjoined here, with the alteration ‘ they kept coming to him ; and he went back to Capernaum.’

5, 17. As he was teaching, the Pharisees and teachers of the law came together out of every village of Galilee and Judæa, that he might heal them.

5, 19. On the roof, and stripping off the tiles where he was they let down the pallet with the paralysed man into the midst.

5, 27. To-day. And going back by the seaside he taught the multitude that followed him. And passing by he saw Levi, the son of Alphæus, sitting at . . .

5, 30. (omits) ‘ and sinners ’ after ‘ tax-gatherers.’

5, 33. But thy disciples do none of these things.

6, 5. (addition): On the same day, beholding some one working on the sabbath, he said to him, Man, if thou knowest what thou art doing, blessed art thou ; but if thou knowest not, thou art accursed, and a transgressor of the law.

6, 10. Looked round on them all with wrath.

6, 12. (omits) ‘ to God ’ after ‘ prayer.’

6, 17. People from all Judæa and other cities, who had come to hear him.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—LUKE

- 6, 21. Omits second part of verse.
- 7, 18. Round about ; and among them, even to John the Baptist, who calling to him two of his disciples saith, Go, and say to him, Art thou.
- 7, 22. Word to John, of what your eyes have seen and your ears have heard.
- 7, 28. No greater prophet than John.
- 7, 33. Has come neither eating nor drinking.
- 7, 47 (condensed). Wherefore I say to thee, Many things are forgiven to her. And he said to her . . .
- 8, 24. Saying, Lord, Lord, we perish.
- 9, 20. And said, The Christ, the son of God.
- 9, 27. Till they see the Son of man coming in his glory.
- 9, 33. Are here. Wilt thou that I set up here three tents.
- 9, 48 (condensed). Receiveth me and him that sent me.
- 9, 62 (reversing order). No one looking back and putting his hand to the plough.
- 10, 12. It will be more tolerable for Sodom in the kingdom of God than for that city.
- 10, 24. Omits ' and kings ' after ' prophets.'
- 11, 2 (when ye pray). Use not vain repetitions as do the rest ; for some think that in their much speaking they will be heard ; but when ye pray . . .
- 11, 6. Has come to me from the field.
- 11, 11 (adds). But if of one of you, as being his father, the son shall ask for a loaf, will he hand him a stone ; or a fish, and he for a fish.
- 11, 13. The heavenly Father give a good gift to them that ask him.
- 11, 14. And when he had said these things, there is brought to him a dumb man, possessed by a demon ; and, when he had cast it out, all marvelled. And some of them said . . .
- 11, 30 (adds). And even as Jona^h was three days and three nights in the sea monster's belly, so will the Son of man be in the earth.
- 11, 32 (omits).
- 11, 38. But the Pharisee began to doubt within himself and to say, Why did he not first wash before breakfast?
- 11, 39. You Pharisees, hypocrites, cleanse . . .
- 11, 40. Did not he that made the inside make the outside also?

' WESTERN ' READINGS—LUKE

11, 48. Ye are witnesses that ye approve not the deeds.

11, 52. For ye have hidden the key of knowledge.

11, 53. Bitterly against him, and to confer with him about further matters, seeking to get some occasion that they may find how to accuse him. But while great multitudes were surrounding him so that they were suffocating one another, he began to say . . .

12, 4. That kill the body, but cannot kill the soul nor have anything more that they can do.

12, 19 (condensing). Soul, thou hast abundance of good things, be merry.

12, 21 (omits).

12, 42. Who then is the faithful steward, the prudent, good one?

13, 7. Bring the axe, cut it down ; why doth it . . .

13, 8. Dig about it, and put a basket of dung.

13, 11. Behold, a woman had an infirmity of spirit eighteen years.

13, 25. When once the master of the house has gone in, and has shut the door.

14, 5. Which of you shall have a sheep or an ox.

16, 19. Now he spoke yet another parable ; there was . . .

16, 23. And Lazarus resting in his bosom.

17, 6. Ye might say to this mountain, Remove hence to that place, and it would remove ; and to the mulberry tree, Be transplanted into the sea.

17, 10. When ye have done whatsoever I say, say, We are unprofitable servants.

17, 14. Said unto them, Ye are cured ; go and show yourselves.

18, 14. Rather than that Pharisee.

19, 25 (omits).

19, 27 (adds). And cast forth the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness ; there there will be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

19, 38. Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord ; blessed is the King ; peace . . .

20, 34. The sons of this world are begotten and beget, marry and are married.

21, 6. Stone upon stone in the wall here.

21, 21. Let not them that are in the midst of her depart out.

‘ WESTERN ’ READINGS—MARK

22, 16. I shall no more eat of it, until it is eaten afresh in the kingdom of God.

22, 19. After ‘ my body ’ omits till ‘ but, behold, the hand.’

22, 51. And stretching forth his hand he touched him, and his ear was restored.

22, 52. Captains of the people.

23, 35. And they (the people) mocked him and said to him, Thou didst save others ; save thyself, if thou art the son of God, if thou art Christ, the chosen.

23, 37. Offered him vinegar, saying, Hail, King of the Jews ; putting on him a crown of thorns [strangely out of place ; see Mark 15¹⁷]. Now the inscription also . . .

23, 42. Amiss. And turning to the Lord, he said to him, Remember me in the day of thy coming. But Jesus answered and said to him that gave the rebuke, Be of good courage, to-day thou shalt be . . .

23, 53. Yet Iain. And having laid him there he placed over the tomb a stone which twenty men would scarcely roll along.

24, 31. And when they had received the bread from him, their eyes were opened.

24, 32. Was not our heart veiled within us (*nonne cor nostrum erat coopertum*).

24, 33. And rising up in sorrow that very hour.

24, 49. And I send upon you what I promised.

Mark 1, 3. Make straight the paths of your God.

1, 6. Clothed in a camel’s skin.

1, 25. And come out of him, thou unclean spirit.

1, 41. And moved with wrath (*iratus*) he stretched out . . .

2, 14. He saw James, the son of Alphæus.

2, 26. Omits ‘ when Abiathar was high priest ’ perhaps to avoid a well-known difficulty.

3, 21. And when the scribes and the rest heard of him, they went out to lay hold of him ; for they said, He drives them mad (*exsential eos*).

5, 23. Come, touch her with thy hands.

5, 33. And trembling, because of what she had done secretly, knowing . . .

5, 41. By the hand, the Rabbi saith to her . . .

7, 13. By your vain tradition.

9, 15. And rejoicing began to greet him.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

10, 34. Omits ' and scourge him and kill him.'

10, 36. And he saith to them, I will do it for you.

10, 40. Is not mine to give ; it is prepared for others (*aliis paratum est*). Here two Greek words (*all'hois*) are run into one (*allois*).

11, 7. They throw over it its clothing.

11, 24. Believe that ye will receive them.

11, 32. If we say, From men ; we fear the people, for all know that John was truly a prophet.

12, 14. Is it lawful to pay poll-tax (*epikephalaion* ; *kenson*, in received text) to Caesar?

12, 40. Who devour widows' and orphans' houses.

13, 2. Thrown down ; and without hands another will rise after three days.

14, 3. Crushing the cruse she poured (using for ' crushing ' a word found elsewhere in N.T. at Luke 4¹⁸ only).

14, 4. But his disciples were sore troubled and said, To what purpose.

14, 37. Could ye not watch one hour?

14, 41. It is enough. The end and the hour ; behold . . . (possibly a liturgical note from margin, ' here endeth the lesson,' has found its way into the text, with ' and ' substituted for ' has come').

14, 65. And some began to spit on his face and to buffet him.

14, 72. And Peter remembered the word that Jesus had said : and he began to weep (omitting an obscure word).

15, 12. What will ye then that I do to the King of the Jews?

15, 25. Now it was the third hour ; and they kept guard over (*custodiebant*) him (as if to minimize the discrepancy between accepted text and John 19¹⁴).

15, 34. My God, my God, why didst thou reproach me (but Vulgate has *dereliquisti*).

16, 1 (condensing). And they went and bought spices, that they might anoint him ; and early on the first day of the week, as the sun was rising, they go to the tomb.

16, 6. But the angel saith to them . . .

Acts 1, 2. Whom he had chosen and bidden to preach the gospel ; to whom.

1, 5. Holy Spirit, whom ye are going to receive not many days hence (waiting), until the Pentecost.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

1, 14. In prayer with the women and children and Mary.

1, 23. And he put forward two, Joseph, called Barnabas (*et statuit duos*; i.e., Peter acted single-handed).

1, 26. He was numbered with the twelve apostles.

2, 14. Peter standing up with the ten apostles was the first to lift up his voice.

2, 19, 20. (omits). And they shall prophesy; blood and fire and vapour of smoke.

2, 24. Relieving the birth pangs (*solutis gemitibus*) of Hades.

2, 30. Of the fruit of his heart, according to the flesh, he would raise up the Christ and set him on his throne.

2, 37. And some of them said unto Peter . . .

2, 42. In the apostles' teaching in Jerusalem.

2, 45. And distributed them day by day.

2, 47. Being in favour with all the world.

3, 1. Now in those days Peter and John used to go up into the temple in the evening for the hour of prayer.

3, 8. And began to walk, rejoicing; (omits) walking and leaping and.

3, 11. Now as Peter and John went out he went out with them, clinging to them; but roused to wonder they (the people) stood, greatly wondering in the cloister called Solomon's.

3, 13. Pilate, who had judged him and wished to release him.

3, 14. But ye oppressed (*gravastis*) the holy and righteous one.

3, 17. We know that in ignorance ye did a wicked thing.

3, 22. Moses indeed said unto our fathers, the Lord your God will raise up to you from among your brethren a prophet; to him as unto myself ye shall hearken.

4, 1. (omits). And the captain of the temple.

4, 2. Proclaiming Jesus in the resurrection of the dead.

4, 8. Rulers of the people, and elders of Israel.

4, 12. And it is in none other (name); for there is none other name.

4, 18. And when they had consented to this opinion, they summoned them and charged them.

4, 24. But they when they heard it, and perceived the working of God, lifted up . . .

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

4, 31. With boldness to every one that wished to believe.

4, 32. And soul, and there was no distinction among them ; and not one of them (or ' contention ' ; Latin is *accusatio*).

5, 8. Peter said unto her, I will further ask thee whether indeed ye sold the land for so much.

5, 15. One of them ; for they were set free from any sickness which each of them had.

5, 18. Custody ; and each went to his own house.

5, 21. And his party came, having risen early, and they called . . .

5, 22. But the officers that went and opened the prison did not find them within.

5, 31. Him God exalted by his glory to be captain.

5, 35. Said unto the rulers and the councillors, Men . . .

5, 36. Giving himself out to be somebody great.

5, 38. And let them alone, not defiling your hands.

5, 39. Ye will not be able to overthrow them ; not you, nor kings, nor despots.

6, 1. The daily distribution, the distribution by the prophets.

6, 6. These were set before the apostles, who, after they had prayed, laid their hands upon them.

6, 8. Among the people, through the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

6, 10, 11. He spoke, because they were confuted by him with all boldness. Therefore being unable to face (27, 15) the truth, then they suborned . . .

6, 15. The face of an angel standing in the midst of them (Latin, of an angel. But the high priest, standing up in the midst of them, saith).

7, 18. Till there arose another king who remembered not Joseph.

7, 21. Cast out by the river side.

7, 24. The Egyptian ; and he hid him in the sand.

7, 31. To observe, the Lord spoke to him, saying.

7, 33. And a voice came to him, Loose . . .

7, 39. Because our forefathers would not be obedient (Latin, *cui noluerunt*).

7, 55. And Jesus the Lord standing.

7, 58. At the feet of a certain young man.

8, 24. Come upon me. And he ceased not to shed many tears.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

(8, 29-10, 14, missing in Greek ; 8, 20-10, 4, in Latin).

10, 17. Now when Peter came to himself, he was much perplexed . . . and, lo, the men.

10, 19. Some men are seeking thee . . .

10, 21. Ye seek ; what do ye wish, or what is the reason.

10, 25. Now as Peter was drawing near to Cæsarea, one of the bondmen ran forward and announced that he had come. But Cornelius hurried out, and when he met him he fell at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter raised him up, saying, What art thou doing? I myself also am a man, even as thou also art.

10, 30. Cornelius said, Three days ago at this present hour I was fasting and making the prayer.

10, 33. Now therefore we all in thy sight are wishing to hear from thee what hath been commanded thee by God.

10, 41. Even by us, men who used to eat and drink with him, and kept company with him for forty days.

11, 2. Peter therefore for some time wanted to proceed to Jerusalem. And he called to him the brethren and established them, making a long discourse, teaching them throughout the country. And also he went to them, and reported to them the grace of God. But the brethren that rested on circumcision contended with him, saying (this leaves uncertain the place of the following discussion).

11, 12 (omits) making no distinction.

11, 17. That I could restrain God from giving them the Holy Spirit when they believed on him.

11, 25. But hearing that Saul was at Tarsus, he went forth, seeking him ; and, when he met him, he exhorted him to go to Antioch.

11, 27. Unto Antioch. Now there was much rejoicing, and, when we had gathered together, one of them, named Agabus, spoke, signifying (implying St. Luke's presence at Antioch).

12, 7. But piercing (same word as in John 19, 34) Peter in the side.

12, 10. And they went forth, and went down the seven steps, and passed on.

12, 15. But they said, Maybe it is his angel.

12, 21. To harangue them, after being reconciled to the Tyrians.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

12, 23. The glory ; and coming down from the judgement seat he was eaten by worms while still alive, and so gave up the ghost.

13, 1. Teachers among whom were Barnabas.

13, 8. From the faith ; since he was hearing them with the greatest pleasure.

13, 18. Forty years as a nurse he nourished them in the wilderness (the Latin only).

13, 19. He gave the land of the aliens for an inheritance (lit. of the *allopoulos*—aliens ; a term used in the Septuagint for ' Philistines,' in the books subsequent to Joshua).

13, 28. Deserving death, after judging him they delivered him to Pilate that he should be slain. And when they had finished all that had been written about him they asked Pilate to crucify him ; and having again obtained their request they took him down from the tree.

13, 31. Who till now are his witnesses.

13, 33. In the first psalm (On the question of the numbering see Kirkpatrick's *The Psalms*, introduction to Psalm 2. The citation is lengthened to include Psalm 2^d).

13, 35. And elsewhere he saith, Thou wilt not.

13, 41. Declare it to you. And they kept silence.

13, 43. Grace of God. And it came to pass that the word of God went throughout the whole city.

13, 44. Gathered together to hear Paul as he made much discourse about the Lord.

13, 48. Were glad, and received the word of God.

14, 2. But the wardens of the Jews' synagogue, and the chief men of the synagogue, brought upon them a persecution against the just, and embittered the souls of the Gentiles against the brethren ; but the Lord speedily gave peace.

14, 4. The apostles, cleaving to them because of the word of God.

14, 7. The gospel ; and the whole multitude was stirred at the teaching. Now Paul and Barnabas spent some time at Lystra ; and there was sitting . . .

14, 9. Heard Paul speaking, being in fear.

14, 10. With a loud voice, I say to thee in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, Stand upright on thy feet, and walk. And straightway he suddenly leapt up.

14, 19. But while they were speaking some time there and teaching, there came after them certain Jews.

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

14, 25. Went down to Attalia, preaching to them the good tidings.

15, 1. Unless ye be circumcised and walk according to the custom of Moses.

15, 2. But when Paul and Barnabas had had no little contention and debate with them (for Paul spoke, stoutly maintaining that they should remain in the state in which they became believers), they that had come from Jerusalem charged them, Paul and Barnabas and some others, to go up to the apostles and elders at Jerusalem, to be judged before them as to this question.

15, 4. They had a great reception from the church.

15, 5. But they that charged them to go up to the elders, namely, some of the Pharisees' sect, who had accepted the faith, rose up, saying . . .

15, 7. Peter stood up in the Spirit, and said unto them . . .

15, 12. Now, the elders having assented to what was said by Peter, the whole multitude kept silence.

15, 20. And from fornication (omit 'from what is strangled') and from blood; and that ye do not to others whatever ye would not should be done to yourselves. For Moses . . . (see Appendix VII).

15, 29. (omit) and from things strangled—(add after 'fornication') and that ye do not to another whatever ye would not have done to yourselves; from which things keeping yourselves carefully, ye will prosper, borne along in the Holy Spirit (2 Peter 1²¹).

15, 34. It seemed good however to Silas to abide there; and Judas went on his way alone.

15, 38. But Paul was unwilling, saying that the man that withdrew from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work to which they were sent, should not accompany them.

15, 41. The churches, delivering the commands of the elders.

16, 1. And having passed through these nations (*gentes istas*) he reached Derbe also.

16, 4. Through the cities, they preached and delivered to the brethren the Lord Jesus Christ with all boldness, delivering also at the same time the commands of the apostles and elders in Jerusalem.

16, 7. They wished to go into Bithynia.

16, 8. But passing through (*cum transissent*) Mysia.

16, 10. And help us; so when he had risen he related

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

to us the vision, and we understood that the Lord had called us to preach the gospel to those in Macedonia. Now on the morrow, putting to sea . . .

16, 12. To Philippi, which is the capital (*caput*, head) of Macedonia, a city, a Roman colony.

16, 13. By the riverside, where it looked as if there might be a place of prayer.

16, 18. But Paul in the Spirit turned, and sore troubled said, I charge thee.

16, 19. But when the owners of the maid saw that they were deprived of the business they had by her means, they laid hold . . .

16, 30. And bringing them out, after securing the rest, he said . . .

16, 35. The magistrates assembled together in the market place, and recollecting the earthquake that had happened they were afraid ; and they sent the sergeants saying, Release those men whom thou receivedst yesterday.

16, 36. (omit) in peace.

16, 37. After beating us publicly, though guiltless, without trial, men that are Romans, they put us into prison.

16, 39. Were Romans ; and they went with many friends into the prison, and entreated them, saying, We knew not about you that ye were righteous men. And taking them out they entreated them, saying, Go forth out of this city ; lest they gather together again before us, crying against you.

17, 1. Now after journeying through Amphipolis, they went down to Apollonia, and thence to Thessalonica.

17, 15. To Athens (now he passed by Thessaly, for he was withheld from proclaiming the word to them) ; and receiving directions from Paul for Silas and Timothy.

17, 18. (omits) because he preached the gospel of Jesus, and the resurrection.

17, 19. And after some days they took him.

17, 27. That they should above all else seek the Deity (same word as in 29).

17, 28. Move, and have our being day by day.

17, 34. Among whom were a certain Dionysius, an Arcopagite, a man of rank, and others with them (without mention of Damaris, perhaps by omission of a line, and making the sense halt).

‘ WESTERN ’ READINGS—ACTS

18, 2. Should leave Rome, and they had settled in Achaia; Paul went to them.

18, 3. (omits) for by their craft they were tent makers.

18, 4. And every sabbath going into the synagogue he discoursed, introducing also the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and sought to persuade not only Jews but also Greeks.

18, 6. But after much discourse, with explanation of the scriptures, when they opposed themselves.

18, 7. And leaving Aquila he went into the house of one named Justus.

18, 8. And were baptized, believing in God through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

18, 11. And he settled in Corinth a year and.

18, 12. The Jews with one accord rose up against Paul, having talked together among themselves; and setting hands upon him they took him.

18, 17. Then all the Greeks laid hold (For the clause about Gallio, mutilated in the Greek, the Latin has, ‘ then Gallio pretended not to see him,’ *Tunc Gallio fingebat eum non videre*).

18, 19. And arriving at Ephesus he left them there on the next sabbath; but he himself . . .

18, 21. And saying, I must by all means keep the coming feast in Jerusalem, but I will come back to you if God will, he set sail.

18, 25. He had been instructed in his own country in the word of the Lord.

18, 26. (omit) ‘ Of God ’ (after ‘ the way ’).

18, 27. More precisely. Now certain Corinthians also, sojourning in Ephesus, having heard him exhorted him to cross with them into their own country; and when he consented, the Ephesians wrote to the disciples in Corinth that they should receive the man. And having gone to sojourn in Achaia he gave great help in the churches, for he . . .

19, 1. And when Paul, according to his own wish, desired to go to Jerusalem, the Spirit told him to return to the province of Asia. And passing through the inland parts he comes to Ephesus (omitting mention of Apollos).

19, 2. So much as hear that any receive the Holy Spirit.

19, 5. Name of the Lord Jesus Christ unto forgiveness of sins.

'WESTERN' READINGS—ACTS

19, 9. In the school of a certain Tyrannus from the fifth to the tenth hour.

19, 10. Heard the words of the Lord.

19, 14. Among whom also some sons of a certain priest, Sceva, desired to do the same thing. They were accustomed to exorcise such persons, and going in to one possessed by a demon they began to call upon the Name, saying, We command thee in Jesus whom Paul preacheth to come out. Then the evil spirit answered . . .

19, 20. Thus mightily the faith of God prevailed and spread and multiplied.

19, 25. Men, fellow craftsmen, ye know.

19, 28. Filled with wrath, and ran into the street, and kept crying out.

19, 35. Knoweth not that our (your, Latin) city is temple-guardian.

19, 38. Therefore if this Demetrius and the craftsmen with him have any complaint against them . . .

19, 39. Determined according to the law of the assembly.

20, 3. And having spent three months there, and a plot having been formed against him by the Jews, he wished to sail for Syria. But the Spirit told him to return through Macedonia.

20, 4. And Timothy; and of Ephesians, Eutychus and Trophimus.

20, 16. That he might not be detained in the province of Asia; (omits) if it were possible for him.

20, 18. You know how for some three years, or even longer, from the first day . . .

20, 24. The ministry of the word, which I received . . . to bear witness to Jews and to Greeks of the gospel.

20, 26. Wherefore I am to this day innocent of the blood.

20, 28. The church of the Lord which he purchased for himself.

21, 1. And thence to Patara and Myra.

21, 13. Weeping and troubling (*conturbantes*) my heart.

21, 14. We stopped speaking, saying one to another, God's will be done.

21, 15. But at the end of these days we got ourselves ready, and went our way up to Jerusalem from Cæsarea;

' WESTERN ' READINGS—ACTS

and with us those who took us on to him whose guests we were to be. And when they came to a certain town, we stayed with Mnason, a certain Cyprian, a disciple of long standing; and going forth thence we came to Jerusalem and the brethren received us gladly (from the Latin, Greek being lost; showing the journey to Jerusalem to be one of two or of three days).

21, 21. Neither to walk after his (Moses') customs (the Greek for 'customs,' *ethe*, is misspelt *ethne* = nations; and the Latin, blindly following, gives the meaningless *neque gentes ejus ambulans*—a like error at 16, 21).

21, 22. How stands it then? The multitude is bound to come together; for they will hear . . .

21, 25. But as for the Gentiles that have become believers, they have nothing to say against thee, for we sent, determining that they should observe nothing of the kind (*nihil tale*), except to keep themselves from what is sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and from fornication.

22, 5. From whom having received letters from the brethren I was on my way to Damascus.

22, 9. Now they that were with me beheld indeed the light, and were frightened; but they heard not.

22, 10. (Latin only) of all things that thou oughtest to do.

22, 11. But when I rose up, for the glory of that light I could not see.

22, 26. But when the centurion heard that he called himself a Roman. . . . Take heed what thou art going to do, for this man . . .

22, 28. Answered and said, I know with how great a sum I purchased.

APPENDIXES

I

THE Epistle to Philemon may be compared with the following letter addressed to a friend by the younger Pliny on a similar occasion (' Ep.' 9th).

Your freedman, with whom you had told me you were vexed, came to me, and throwing himself down before me clung to my feet, as if they had been yours. He was profuse in his tears and his entreaties ; he was profuse also in his silence. In short, he convinced me of his penitence. I believe that he is indeed a reformed character, because he feels that he has done wrong. You are angry, I know ; and you have reason to be angry, this also I know ; but mercy wins the highest praise just when there is the most righteous cause for anger. You loved the man, and, I hope, will continue to love him ; meanwhile it is enough that you should allow yourself to yield to his prayers. You may be angry again, if he deserves it ; and in this you will be the more readily pardoned if you yield now. Concede something to his youth, something to his tears, something to your own indulgent disposition. Do not torture him, lest you torture yourself at the same time. For it is torture to you, when one of your gentle temper is angry. I am afraid lest I should appear not to ask, but to compel, if I should add my prayers to his. Yet I will add them the more fully and unreservedly, because I scolded the man himself with sharpness and severity ; for I threatened him straitly that I would never ask you again. This I said to him, for it was necessary to alarm him ; but I do not use the same language to you. For perchance I shall ask again, and shall be successful again ; only let my request be such as it becomes me to prefer and you to grant. Farewell.
(Translation by Bp. Lightfoot.)

APPENDIXES

II

NOTE ON 2 ST. PETER 3¹⁰.

Books in the time of our Lord, and for some centuries before and after, were written mainly upon papyrus (whence our word 'paper'), a material of about the consistency of strong paper. The pith of the papyrus plant was made up into sheets glued together so as to form rolls, which might run to 30 feet or so. It was therefore not possible to gather all the Christian writings into a single volume.

When all copies of books were produced by hand, the uniformity of text, which is secured by printing, was unattainable. Omissions, mistakes, variations, naturally crept into copies. This accounts for the variations of text which are recorded in our notes.

The autographs of all the New Testament writers perished long ago. Ordinary wear and tear of books much handled, and damp (fatal to papyrus), would limit the life of MSS. to a century or two at the most. In the fourth century vellum superseded papyrus for the best copies of books, and to this century the two earliest extant copies of the New Testament belong.

So jealously and carefully guarded was the text of the New Testament; we have so many copies, besides versions into the languages of the time; that there are very few passages in which we have reason for thinking that the text is corrupt.

One of these passages is 2 St. Peter 3¹⁰. Here the earliest Greek MSS. give a reading which is translated, 'the earth and the works that are therein will be disclosed (found).' This can scarcely be accepted as yielding a right sense. Two rather later MSS. give the verb 'will be burnt up'; another gives 'will vanish away' (equivalent to 'will not be found'). The Vulgate omits the sentence. An Egyptian translation (known as the Sahidic) gives 'will not be found';¹ a phrase common in Apocalyptic writings (e.g., Daniel 11¹⁸; Revelation 16³⁰; 18²¹). The negative particle may have been accidentally omitted by an early copyist; and the Sahidic version may well represent what the

¹The Greek of which is (in English letters) 'ou eurlsthesetai' (another tense of which forms our word Eureka!).

APPENDIXES

author actually wrote ; with it we get the best sense. The 'burnt up,' 'vanish away,' seem to be mere corrections made by copyists. The error (as it almost certainly is) was older than any of the existing Greek MSS. It is more probable that the 'not' was accidentally omitted than that it was inserted without authority in the copy from which the Egyptian version was translated. It may be added that of this epistle, which for some time was not received into the Canon, probably very few copies existed in early days.

III

THE INCARNATION.

No reader will object to have Lord Lytton's splendid passage upon the naturalness of the Christian doctrine of the Incarnation of the Son of God (*Last Days of Pompeii*, book iii, chap. 3).

The doubts which spring up to the mind of later reasoners, in the immensity of the sacrifice of God to man, were not such as to occur to an early heathen. He had been accustomed to believe that the gods had lived upon earth,¹ and taken upon themselves the form of men, had shared in human passions, in human labours, and in human misfortunes. What was the travail of his own Alcmena's son, whose altars now smoked with the incense of countless cities, but a toil for the human race? Had not the great Dorian Apollo expiated a mystic sin by descending to the grave? Those who were the deities of heaven had been lawgivers or benefactors upon earth, and gratitude had led to worship. It seemed, therefore, to the heathen a doctrine neither new nor strange, that Christ had been sent from heaven, that an immortal had indued mortality, and tasted the bitterness of death. And the end for which he thus toiled, and thus suffered—how far more glorious did it seem to Apæcides than that for which the deities of old had visited the nether world, and passed through the gates of death. Was it not worthy of a god, to descend to these dim valleys, in order to clear up the clouds gathered over the dark mount beyond—to satisfy the doubts of sages—to

¹ Acts 14 ¹¹; 28 ⁹.

APPENDIXES

convert speculation into certainty—by example to point out the rules of life—by revelation to solve the enigmā of the grave—and to prove that the soul did not yearn in vain when it dreamed of immortality?

IV

NOTE ON ST. JOHN 5⁴.

The festival of John 5¹ was identified by Westcott as the Feast of Trumpets (Numbers 29¹⁻¹⁶), coming at the beginning of the civil year. In this he is supported by Rendel Harris (Sidelights on N.T. research, Lecture 2), who illustrates verse 4 by a custom he found in an Armenian village of waiting for the descent of the angel Gabriel on the night of the New Year. The belief of Turks and Christians was that the angel's descent upon the village pool gave healing virtues to the water, and enriched the first person drawing water after midnight. He refers also to a water-festival among the Burmese, in which the king of the Nats (angels) was believed to come down at midnight on New Year's Eve, when men and women sally forth from their houses, carrying pots of water which they ceremoniously pour out on the ground in hope of securing fertility of the soil.

No doubt the disputed words form an early gloss, explanatory of verse 7, and depict to us an ancient belief and practice of the Jews, which was widely spread among other nations. Our Lord was not concerned with this belief, perhaps did not know of it. It is easy to understand the insertion of the words; difficult to account for their omission if they were in the original text of the gospel.

APPENDIXES

V

NOTE ON ST. MATTHEW 2¹⁵.

Wesley, 'Notes on the N.T.', comments thus 'That is, whereby was fulfilled. The original word frequently signifies, not the design of an action, but barely (simply) the consequences or event of it.' Romans 11¹¹ he renders 'I say then, Have they stumbled so as to fall?' Dr. Plummer, St. Matthew 23³³ remarks 'The divine will is that all should listen and be saved. But with this desire is combined the just decree that those who refuse to listen shall be condemned; and therefore the condemnation of the rebellious may be said to be, not only the result, but the purpose of the sending of the messengers. In Jewish thought the actual issues of events were often regarded as indistinguishable from Divine purposes, and *in order that* was used where we should rather say *so that*.'

VI

THE GIFT OF TONGUES.

This supernatural gift is mentioned in the following places: St. Mark 16¹⁷; Acts 2⁴⁻¹²; 10⁴⁶; 19⁶; 1 Corinthians 12 and 14.

There is much difficulty in comprehending from the scriptural notices its nature. The 'tongue' does not mean the organ of speech, nor (except perhaps in Acts 2, and 1 Corinthians 13) a language, but an utterance; and 'kinds of tongues' (1 Corinthians 12¹⁰) are kinds of utterance, prompted by different feelings and emotions, echoes of divine communications. To translate 'speak with tongues' (1 Corinthians 14⁵) gives no good sense; we all speak in that way.

The gift was not a knowledge of foreign languages. There is no evidence that the early Christians claimed or needed such a gift. There is no hint of its existence, except in the possible instance mentioned in Acts 2; and on that occasion the foreigners present were Jewish proselytes to whom either Greek or Aramaic (Hebrew) would have been intelligible. There is nothing to show that St. Paul, for example, ever used any other language.

The gift was the result of a sudden influx of supernatural inspiration, which came upon the new believer

APPENDIXES

immediately after his baptism, and recurred at uncertain intervals.

We gather that under its influence the exercise of the understanding was suspended, while the spirit was rapt into a state of ecstasy (*cf.* 2 Corinthians 12¹⁻⁴, 'unspeakable words') by immediate communication of the Spirit of God. In this trance the receiver was constrained by an irresistible power to pour forth his feelings in words which were not his own, and the meaning of which was usually unknown to him. St. Paul desired that those possessing this gift should not exercise it publicly unless some one present possessed another gift ('the interpretation of tongues') by which the ecstatic utterances might be made available for general edification.

The narrative of Acts 2⁶⁻¹³ is obscure to us, because it speaks of phenomena that have long since passed away; the nature and utility of which we are not in a position to estimate. What we are given to understand is that the utterances there recorded ('all' in verse 2 need not be limited to the Apostles, nor even to the 120 brethren) conveyed to the minds of their hearers intelligible ideas of the wonderful works of God, there being in this particular case no need of an 'interpreter.' But how the transfer of thought actually took place is not made clear. Does the narrative necessarily imply that some fifteen languages were actually spoken? or, with greater economy of miraculous element, that the words of the Galileans produced in manner inexplicable to us, intelligible impressions, by a kind of thought-reading, on the minds of the hearers? It seems impossible to give a decided answer; though the former alternative is certainly that which more naturally presents itself to the mind at first sight.

VII

THE COUNCIL OF JERUSALEM.

(Acts 15^{20, 29})

Codex Bezae (page 494) has, as will be seen by reference to the 'Selected Western Readings,' some important differences from the text of other Greek

APPENDIXES

MSS. And these have led to the Decree being interpreted in two different ways:—

(a) Taking the ordinary text we must hold that the prohibitions¹ are of a ritual character; except as to the clause 'from fornication,' this being added, partly because this vice was in some degree mixed up with heathen religious observances, but mainly because it was looked upon as a venial offence, and (1 Corinthians 7²) was sadly prevalent. In this view the Decree was a compromise; Gentile converts were set free from the obligations of the Mosaic legislation, except as to the eternal principles of morality; but, for the sake of Jewish converts, who would for long find it hard to welcome those who did not accept what every sabbath day (verse 21) was repeated in the synagogue, they were for the time to accept certain restrictions for the sake of peace and mutual goodwill.

(b) Codex D may have omitted the clause about 'things strangled' as thinking it to be virtually contained in 'blood' (an article of food). Taking its text as it stands, it has been argued that 'blood' may be used as = bloodshed (murder), for which use see St. Matthew 27³⁴; and that the natural interpretation of this version of the Decree is that it forbids the three sins of idolatry, fornication, and murder (*cf.* Revelation 22¹⁵); is, in fact, a purely moral law. But this interpretation of 'blood' is not quite probable; murder was not lightly regarded; no special need for warning against it.

On the whole, the first of these alternatives is the simpler and the more probable.

VIII.

INSPIRATION.

The word² means 'breathing into'; properly, men (Genesis 2⁷), not books, are inspired; but we speak of an 'inspired,' as of a 'clever,' book.

Some may be puzzled by views now generally held about the original composition of the books of the

¹ Taking the first clause in 20 and 29 to be concerned with the matter treated in 1 Corinthians 10^{22, 29}.

² A word which never has been and never can be accurately defined.
—C. Bigg.

APPENDIXES

Bible ; and it may be helpful to such to set down plainly some considerations on the subject.

Not long ago many held (to quote Dean Burgon's words) that 'every syllable, every letter, of the Bible is the direct utterance of the Most High.'

It seems scarcely possible for any one who has really considered the subject to subscribe unreservedly to this claim. Some reasons are :—

(1) The Bible makes no such claim for itself, and fortunately the Church has never made it. Take a passage sometimes adduced in support, 2 Timothy 3¹⁶ (A.V.), 'All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable; etc.' Even as it stands this is far from supporting the theory of verbal (word for word) inspiration. But it should run, 'Every scripture (writing) inspired by God is also profitable, etc.' Whether this or that writing was especially inspired by God (that is, written by some one inspired by God) must be determined on its own merits. And our reason for regarding the books of the New Testament as written by inspired men is that from early days the Church, the living body of Christians, has marked them out and held them as such.

(2) Can we honestly think that God by direct action gave out four lives of our Lord with their large repetitions and their various inconsistencies—not, indeed, that these latter are of any vital importance? One life, occupying no more space than the four, might have greatly added to our knowledge of what he did and taught.

(3) That there was dictation word by word to the writers¹ is in flat contradiction to what St. Luke tells us in his first chapter, third verse. Others, he says, had drawn up narratives of our Lord's doings ; and he had thought it good, having made all possible enquiries and collected all available information (exactly as a modern historian does), to add to the number of then existing gospels. Most of these have disappeared ; St. Luke's survives. Why? That Christians of early days rated it higher is the probable answer. But many of these gospels may have, as far as we can tell, accidentally perished. Probably but a small part of the letters which St. Paul's care for all the churches drew from his pen have come down to us.

¹ If they wrote as children from dictation, what need of inspiration at all?

APPENDIXES

(4) The Dean's contention does not help us greatly unless we had an assurance that every copyist of any part of the N.T. was miraculously kept from making any wilful or unconscious alteration in doing his work. And, even in that case, as most of us have to depend upon translations, every translator must similarly be secured against mistake or error of judgement. Besides, as the notes subjoined to the preceding version sufficiently show, it is now impossible to form an absolutely certain text of the N.T. Copyists might and did alter, omit, or more frequently add, something. Take St. Matthew 23³⁵, 'Zechariah, son of Barachiah.' It ought to be 'son of Jehoiada' (2 Chronicles 24²⁰). Possibly an early copyist added the three words to the bare name 'Zechariah,' and his memory played him false. But even if the original writer made a mistake in the name of the martyred Zechariah's father, why should this trouble us?¹ It will, if we choose to make the purely gratuitous assumption that an inspired writer could not possibly have been in error in a matter of chronology, geography, science, history, or the like. To make such an assumption is to create needless difficulties for ourselves. The four gospels give four differing wordings of the inscription on the cross; but they are the sort of differences that the best and most truthful witnesses make every day in their accounts of the same transactions. Sensible persons heed them not. There is no foundation for the Dean's contention. If we had St. Luke's gospel only, we should be teaching that Easter Day and Ascension Day were one and the same; not that St. Luke explicitly says so.

(5) But if there was a large human element in the origin of the Bible, what fruit of inspiration is left? This, that the Bible is the best, the most valuable book in the world. More than any other book, or all other books put together, it serves the one purpose for which we must hold that its writers were inbreathed and assisted by God; to teach us about himself, to raise us to higher levels, to bring us to true knowledge of ourselves and of our relations to him, to guide us into that righteousness of conduct which leads us to our highest

¹ It may be asked, Why not quietly correct the error? It would be going outside the province of a translator. To do so would be to make a dangerous precedent, opening a door we know not whither; would, in short, be a 'pious fraud.'

APPENDIXES

well-being here and hereafter. 'What we need (says Newman) and what is given us is not how to educate ourselves for this life ; we have abundant natural gifts for human society, and for the advantages which it secures ; but our great want is how to demean ourselves in thought and deed towards our Maker, and how to gain reliable information on this supreme necessity.' By its fruits, now and in time past, we know the Bible. This, the general test of value, will be more and more applied. Need we fear what answer will be given? Let us bear in mind, for our stay and comfort, noble words of old time, *Magna est veritas et praevalet.*

IX

NOTE ON 1 CORINTHIANS 7²⁶⁻⁸.

These verses have been interpreted in different ways. Some give them the meaning adopted in the text. Others refer them to a so-called spiritual marriage in which a man and a woman have taken a vow of continence. In such a case, should lack of self-control on the man's part make desirable a change in the relation, St. Paul advises that the parties contract an ordinary marriage. In one view the 'virgin' of verse 36 is the man's unmarried daughter (or ward), whom he could legally dispose of in marriage almost as he chose ; in the other she is his spiritual wife (a state of life known in the second century, and giving rise later to frequent scandals). In one case the expression 'let them marry' needs eking out (as in the text) so as to bring in a third person ; in the other, the Greek verb (in 38), which naturally means 'give in marriage, marry off,' must be taken to mean 'marry' simply ; and we should have, in 36, to render 'if *he* is in the flower, etc.' Neither rendering is free from difficulty, but the first seems to be on the whole simpler and more natural.

There is a similar curious uncertainty as to the right meaning of the word 'vessel' in 1 Thessalonians 4⁸.

APPENDIXES

X

NOTE ON ACTS 13⁴⁸.

Some scholars render this passage 'as many as had set themselves unto eternal life believed,' giving the first verb the meaning it has in 1 Corinthians 16¹⁵. Had St. Luke meant this, it was easy for him to have expressed himself as St. Paul does. It is against this rendering that St. Paul would scarcely have thought men capable of turning to the light before believing; would rather have looked upon believing and setting themselves towards life as one and the same act in time and effect. Besides, what is gained by evading the natural sense in this passage (which, however, Bp. Lightfoot held not to refer to final salvation), when we still have to deal with such passages as Romans 9; Ephesians 1⁴, 5, 11; 1 Thessalonians 5⁹; 2 Thessalonians 2¹³.

Meyer remarks that the appointment of God in regard to those who became believers was in accordance with his foreknowledge, by means of which he foreknew them as those who would believe; adding, that the destination of God does not exclude individual freedom, although if the matter is contemplated from one of its sides only, the other point of view, owing to the imperfection of man's mode of looking at it, cannot receive proportionally its due, but appears to be logically nullified. Sanday and Headlam, 'Romans,' remark that 'the solution lies in a complete realisation of what we mean by asserting that God is Almighty. The two ideas of Free-will and the Divine Sovereignty, cannot be reconciled in our own minds, but that does not prevent them from being reconciled in God's mind. We measure him by our own intellectual standard if we think otherwise. And so our solution of the problem of Free-will and of the problems of history and of individual salvation must finally lie in the full acceptance and realisation of what is implied by the infinity and the omniscience of God.'

It may be added that neither the R.V. nor the American Standard Version gives any alternative rendering, and that the Vulgate has the natural *Quotquot erant præordinati.*

APPENDIXES

XI

NOTE ON THE APOCALYPSE.

The Revelation (4-22^b) may be taken as an expansion of St. Matthew 24^a-31. St. John (assuming him to be author) shared the belief of the other apostles that our Lord's second coming might be within a generation or two (1¹, 2; 22²⁰). The visions he saw were to him what might happen in this interval. To remember this will prevent us from seeking fulfilments of them in our own or later times. 'Each of the three groups, the Seals, the Trumpets, the Bowls, starts from the beginning of the Church's fortunes upon earth, and takes us BY ITS OWN PATH to their close' (Milligan). The imagery and numbers, as a Reference Bible shows, are largely drawn from the Old Testament; the 'first beast' (11⁷) may mean Antichrist embodied in the Roman Empire and successive Emperors; the 'second beast' (13¹¹) being the heathen priesthood maintaining the emperor-worship. The locusts of 9^b may be the Parthian armies expected to invade the Empire from districts near the Euphrates.

The simplest explanation of chap. 20¹⁻⁶ (the Millennium) is that, in the author's view, the 1,000 years (no more to be taken literally than the measurements of 21¹⁶, 17) stand for the interval (see above) between our Lord's Resurrection and second Coming. The 'souls' of martyrs and confessors (we must suppose their number to be completed, see 6⁹⁻¹¹) awake to what is truly life and 'reign' with the Christ (apparently where he is—not on earth) under conditions not specified; the rest of the dead not coming to their full bliss until the final consummation. The binding of Satan may refer to the crippling of his power (St. Luke 10¹⁸; Hebrews 2¹⁴; Revelation 12⁷⁻⁹) by our Lord's redemptive work.

XII

CROSS, CRUCIFIXION

The word 'cross' is our translation (derived from the Vulgate 'cruce') of the Greek word 'stauros,' which means a stake, pole, or post. The Romans, and others,

APPENDIXES

'crucified' criminals by nailing them (St. John 20²⁶) to a post or 'cross.'

The Oxford English Dictionary gives as specific meaning 'the particular wooden structure on which Jesus Christ suffered death; believed to have consisted of an upright post, with a horizontal cross-bar.'

St. John 19¹⁷ says that our Lord carried the 'stauros' or post. There may, or may not, have been a second and horizontal piece. To say that our Lord was 'crucified' on a single upright beam, the hands being brought together over the head, would be in perfect harmony with the gospel narrative; and does not affect in the least degree any article of faith.

The Romans, who sometimes crucified hundreds at once, would generally do it in the simplest manner. No proof can be given in the matter; but be that as it may, the use of the words 'cross,' 'crucifixion' is so firmly established, that it would be hopeless, even were it desirable, to think of displacing them.

XIII

NOTE ON THE WORD 'CHURCH.'

The generally accepted derivation of the word is from the Greek 'kuriaké' = 'dominical.' Thus 'church' = the Lord's (house, assembly).

Kirike, cirice, kirk, originally applied to the building, was, with the conversion of the Teutonic nations, assumed as the naturalised equivalent of the Latin 'ecclesia,' and was used for that word in all its senses.

The first of these would naturally be the one great religious organisation, the Catholic ecclesia; thus (Homilies, 1563), 'The Church which is the company of God's people.'

It is also used for a local body of Christians; thus (Philemon 2), 'And to the church that is in their house' (Geneva Version, 1557, Rheims, 1582). Becon (New Catechisme, 1564), 'Father, what meanest thou by this word Church? Son, Nothing else than a company of people gathered together, a congregation.'

The Greek 'ecclesia' (=called out; cf. called, kletoi, to be saints, Romans 1⁷) was the name given to the public assembly of free Greek cities (as in Acts

APPENDIXES

19th). In the Septuagint it is the assembly and congregation of Israel met before God (as in Acts 7th, Hebrews 2nd). In the N.T. it stands for the whole society of Christians, or for a particular local assembly of Christians met for solemn purposes. *Ecclesia* (transliterated by Jerome) passed naturally in its derivatives (as Fr. *église*) into the Romance languages.

In the English Bible 'church' always means congregation, assembly, society; and has for centuries adequately and correctly represented to Englishmen the 'ecclesia' of the original (adapted from Oxford English Dictionary).

'Congregation' might well be used everywhere for 'church,' were it not that the word is not quite applicable to the sum of bodies of Christians (e.g. Galatians 1st), who in early days, and more so now, could not be locally 'gathered together,' but are scattered over the face of the earth; nor does 'congregation' connote the organised life which we have learnt to associate with 'church.'

XIV

NOTE TO ROMANS 5th.

The Apostle connects the ravages of sin and death with what has been called the Fall of Adam. Not long ago it was generally held that the world came into being about 6,000 years ago. But if we find reasons for believing that the world has had a far longer existence, that the origin of man must be placed much further back than was thought; if we are led to take Adam and Eve, not as actual historical persons, but as characters in a parable or drama; if we are to substitute for those names such terms as 'primæval man,' 'our first ancestors'; what happens? The great truths which underlie the Bible story, that a Divine will has been clearly manifested; that man, becoming conscious of that will, disobeyed it; that a tendency to disobedience has been transmitted from one generation to another; would not be affected. Human nature remains what it was. In each of us, we know only too well, has been acted over again the Fall of Adam; each must confess 'the serpent beguiled me and I did eat'; each like Adam has been tempted and given way, each like Eve

APPENDIXES

has tempted others. Our own experiences amply confirm the substantial truth of the Genesis narrative, whether it is called history or is taken as parable.

XV

TITLES OF CHRISTIAN MINISTERS

Omitting the 'Apostles' (not limited to The Twelve; Acts 14¹¹) we find in the N.T. three names of office-bearers, *episcopos*, *presbuteros*, *diaconos*.

These words contract into the English words, bishop, priest,¹ deacon. They are, by translation, respectively, overseer, elder, minister (servant). That the first two terms are practically equivalent is seen from Acts 20^{17, 28}; Titus 1^{6, 7}.

Church history has been said to pass underground for the century after the Apostles' lives (A.D. 80-180). Then there emerges everywhere the system of diocesan (territorial) bishops, priests and deacons.

'Bishop' is a misleading rendering of the N.T. *episcopos*, the modern Bishop having outwardly little in common with him of 1 Timothy 3¹⁻⁷. 'Deacon' is not objectionable in this light and it is not easy to suggest a better term..

XVI

THE HOLY SPIRIT

Some words in the original are used with or without the definite article with slight, if any, difference of meaning. Take the terms Lord, Jesus, Christ, Holy Spirit; 'the Christ' (the anointed) passes into the personal name 'Christ,' (as in English 'the shepherd' into 'Shepherd'). English accepts 'the Christ,' but not 'the Jesus,' and insists upon the article before 'Lord.' To say 'an angel of Lord appears to the Joseph' (St. Matthew 2²⁰), would be intolerable. Some have held that where the article is not expressed (in the Greek) before 'Holy Spirit,' the writers meant

¹ New Presbyter is but old Priest writ large, said Milton.

APPENDIXES

an impersonal effluence, or energy, sent forth from the Father. This work follows the view set forth (e.g.) by T. K. Abbot (Ephesians 2¹⁷) where he says, 'the article is not required (in the Greek), as pneuma is frequently treated as a proper name [as Lord] where no ambiguity is caused thereby.'

That the N.T. writers thought and generally wrote of the Holy Spirit as a Person in the full sense of the word is indisputable. Occasionally (Titus 3⁶, compare Acts 2¹⁷) a writer takes over from the O.T. a primitive form of expression.